

Updated and Expanded with 100 New Recipes

More Than
600,000
Copies Sold

Smoke & Spice

Cooking with
Smoke, the *Real* Way
to *Barbecue*



With America's Outdoor Cooking Experts
CHERYL AND BILL JAMISON

THE JAMES BEARD AWARD-WINNING AUTHORS



Smoke & Spice, the James Beard Book Award winner that has sold more than half a million copies, is now completely revised and updated. Outdoor cooking experts Cheryl and Bill Jamison have added 100 brand-new recipes, the very latest information on tools, fuels, equipment, and technique, and loads more of their signature wit, charm, and reverence for 'Q.'

Barbecue is an American culinary tradition older than the Constitution, but until recently many believed that genuine smoke-cooked barbecue was best left to Southern-barbecue-joint pitmasters. With the Jamisons at your side, whether you're a barbecue rookie or a seasoned pro you can serve up intensely flavorful, real slow-smoked barbecue right in your own backyard, using a basic covered grill, a water smoker, an outdoor oven, or a log-burning pit. And if you're unable to cook outdoors for any reason, you can even use a stovetop smoker.

All the barbecue classics are here in *Smoke & Spice*, like bodacious Texas brisket, superb Carolina pork, amazing western Kentucky mutton, marvelous Memphis dry ribs, and wet and wonderful Kansas City ribs. There's savory smoked whitefish from the Great Lakes, and salmon from the Pacific Northwest, and tasso ham from Cajun country. This new edition of *Smoke & Spice* also features smaller cuts of meat, poultry, and fish for everyday cooking, so you can smoke-cook a whole hog for a hundred friends or a pork chop just for yourself.

You will discover how to use smoked foods in salads and pastas and on pizzas. There are also loads of appetizers, snacks, and beverages to whet your appetite, and a bounty of traditional side dishes and desserts. With chapters on mops, marinades, rubs, and sauces, there's more than enough to keep you smokin' for years to come.

SAUSALITO PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1111 02226 3816

[illegible]



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2017 with funding from
Kahle/Austin Foundation

<https://archive.org/details/smokespice00cher>

Praise for the first edition of *Smoke & Spice*

"My first deep breaths were perfumed with the hickory smoke from our family restaurant's brick pit. As I read Cheryl and Bill Jamison's authoritative explanation of how to make honest-to-goodness barbecue, when I made my way through their delectable collection of rubs and sauces and go-withs, I was ready to take the first plane home. The Jamisons' barbecue is the real thing."

—RICK BAYLESS, CHEF/OWNER OF TOPOLOBAMPO AND FRONTERA GRILL IN CHICAGO AND
AUTHOR OF *MEXICO: ONE PLATE AT A TIME* AND *AUTHENTIC MEXICAN*

"*Smoke & Spice* is creative, informative, and packed with outstanding food."

—CHRIS SCHLESINGER, CO-AUTHOR OF *LET THE FLAMES BEGIN* AND *THE THRILL OF THE GRILL*

"No food is better than barbecue, and the essential ingredient in real barbecue is smoke. Cheryl and Bill Jamison's *Smoke & Spice* makes me want to eat barbecue every day!"

—DEAN FEARING, AUTHOR OF *THE MANSION ON TURTLE CREEK COOKBOOK*

"Look up barbecue in the dictionary, and you're sure to find a picture of the Jamisons. They are the king and queen of grilling and smoking, having written three authoritative books on the topics: *Born to Grill*, *Sublime Smoke*, and *Smoke & Spice*."

—*BON APPÉTIT*

"If the fourth of July was also known as Out-of-Doors Cooks Day, I'd recommend it as this year's number one gift."

—*CHICAGO TRIBUNE*

"Authoritative....And the friendly, engaging style will entice many new believers."

—*THE WASHINGTON POST*

"Detailed in both recipes and barbecue lore, *Smoke & Spice* is a fascinating sourcebook for every imaginable type of authentic regional barbecue style."

—*SMALL PRESS*

"*Smoke & Spice*... is a must for any serious barbecue cook. This hot-selling book, winner of the 1995 James Beard award in the Accent on Flavors category, celebrates the differences between the regional types of barbecue. It shares expert advice on how to get the best results from any kind of barbecue equipment, and includes over 300 mouth-watering recipes."

—TULSA WORLD

"*Smoke & Spice* is the most complete barbecuing and grilling book to come along in a long time... The Jamisons could write a thesis on dry rubs, pastes, marinades, and mops."

—THE DALLAS MORNING NEWS

"*Smoke & Spice*... gives the battle plan guaranteed to turn a grilling grunt into a Major Pitmaster. The Santa Fe, N.M. couple successfully defy those who say you can't produce restaurant quality barbecue on a kettle grill, water smoker, or wood-burning pit."

—THE CLARION-LEDGER (JACKSON, MISSISSIPPI)

"This one is the guide to authentic smoke-cooked barbecue. There are more than 300 recipes for main dishes, rubs and sauces and accompaniments....For readers, there are dozens of sidebars that highlight barbecue history and folklore, along with hundreds of tips on techniques."

—CITIZEN-TIMES (ASHEVILLE, NORTH CAROLINA)

"This is a fun book—good reading, with a world of information on barbecuing for all tastes."

—MESSENGER-INQUIRER (OWENSBORO, KENTUCKY)

"*Smoke & Spice* is the BIBLE for all serious smoker pit chefs and wannabe smoker chefs! An absolute MUST-HAVE! If you have a smoker pit you BETTER have a copy."

—TEJAS SMOKERS, INC.

"If you're looking to obtain 'bragging rights' barbecue skills, *Smoke & Spice* is well worth a look."

—FIELD & STREAM

"We don't want to pick sides, but it's hard to imagine barbecue better than this."

—BON APPÉTIT

Smoke & Spice

Other Cookbooks by Cheryl and Bill Jamison

A Real American Breakfast

American Home Cooking

Born to Grill

Sublime Smoke

The Border Cookbook

Texas Home Cooking

The Rancho de Chimayó Cookbook

Smoke & Spice

Cooking with Smoke,
the *Real Way* to
Barbecue

Revised Edition

Cheryl and Bill Jamison

The Harvard Common Press | Boston, Massachusetts

Sausalito Public Library
Sausalito, California 94965

The Harvard Common Press
535 Albany Street
Boston, Massachusetts 02118
www.harvardcommonpress.com

© 2003 by Cheryl Alters Jamison and Bill Jamison

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or any information storage or retrieval system, without permission in writing from the publisher.

Printed in the United States of America
Printed on acid-free paper

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Jamison, Cheryl Alters.

Smoke & Spice : cooking with smoke, the real way to barbecue / Cheryl and Bill Jamison.— Rev. ed.

p. cm.

ISBN 1-55832-261-2 (hardcover) — ISBN 1-55832-262-0 (paperback)

1. Barbecue cookery. 2. Smoked foods. 3. Spices. I. Title: Smoke and spice. II. Jamison, Bill. III. Title.

TX840.B3.J36 2003

641.5'784—dc21

2003000507

Special bulk-order discounts are available on this and other Harvard Common Press books. Companies and organizations may purchase books for premiums or resale, or may arrange a custom edition, by contacting the Marketing Director at the address above.

10 9 8 7 6 5 4 3 2 1

Cover design by Night & Day Design

Cover photograph © Food Image Source/Peter Harasty

Text design by Richard Oriolo

Text photographs © Food Image Source (pages v, 1, 21, 23, 139, 169, 209, 251, 279, 313, 343, 345, 367, 391, 419, and 449);

© Richard Eskite (pages 1, 21, 51, and 103)

To that merry band of barbecue fanatics who've done so much over the past couple of decades to bring an old American craft back to its homegrown roots—especially to Wayne and PJ Whitworth and the late Jim Quessenberry.

Contents

Preface to the Revised Edition xi

Introduction: A Passion, a Pastime, and a Party xiii

Part One: Honest-to-Goodness Barbecue 1

The Secrets of Success 3

Fuels and Tools 13

Stovetop Smoking 18

Part Two: Smoking Slow and Low 21

Spicing Up Your Life 23

Pork You Can Pull Apart 51

Bodacious Beef 103

Lean and Mean Meats 139

Fowl Play 169

Fishing for Compliments 209

Garden of Eatin' 251

Smoke-Scented Salads, Pastas, and Pizzas 279

While You Wait 313

Part Three: Great Accomplishments from Indoors 343

Barbecue Sauces	345
Traditional Side Dishes and Breads	367
Side-Dish Salads and Relishes	391
Down-Home Desserts	419
Cool and Cheery Drinks	449
Acknowledgments	463
Index	465

Preface to the Revised Edition

FROM THE TIME we first started writing cookbooks, more than a dozen years ago, we've always seen our efforts as paeans to underappreciated foods and the cultures that surround them. Our eight cookbooks so far have dealt with things like Texas home cooking, border traditions that Americans share with northern Mexico, and breakfast outside the box—subjects that don't make much buzz when chefs and other culinary pros gather.

Imagine our shock, then, when the cookbook that seemed to us the most clearly out of the mainstream happened upon a trend. When we decided to write *Smoke & Spice*, even our long-term publisher balked at the idea. Who could possibly be interested in an old-fashioned style of cooking that is slow, smoky, and dominated by good ol' boys and grizzled black pitmasters? We couldn't find one person who thought that real barbecue was cookbook material. We didn't care, though, be-

cause we love barbecue and knew that it would be great fun to cook, eat, and write about.

Smoke & Spice came along at a time when Americans wanted to spend more time outside, when we finally got fed up with burned birds for outdoor dinners, when we went through a nostalgia phase. These and lots of other reasons that we don't know caused a revival of interest in real, smoke-cooked barbecue. The book was there and lots of people bought it, probably at the insistence of wives who thought that dad was going to burn down the neighborhood.

A decade later, barbecue continues to soar in popularity. Even chefs, women, and city folks talk about it now. So we decided to take a fresh look at the book. Our publisher asked whether the original recipes are still on target. Have you been barbecuing anything new in recent years that other people would like? Are you

doing different side dishes now, or desserts, or other special treats? Do you have a stockpile of fresh barbecue stories and tips? Have smokers and other barbecue equipment evolved? Would you like to make an extra nickel by selling more books? We said yes to everything, and went back to playing with barbecue.

We hope you enjoy the additions—over 100 new recipes—and the many changes

in smoker information, BBQ tips, sidebars, and everything else. We hope you also appreciate what wasn't altered, like all the original recipes and any stuff that remains pertinent. Personally, we had a great time writing *Smoke & Spice* again. If you have as much fun cooking and eating from it as we did, you're going to be in hog heaven for years to come.

A Passion, a Pastime, and a Party

IT'S TIME TO GRADUATE from grilling. American cooks have been enrolled in "Introductory Barbecue" for a half century now, since the days when we all liked Ike. We've enjoyed cooking outdoors, but we're weary of wieners and charred chicken, yearning more and more for the full flavor of old-time, real barbecue, the kind popularly known as "Bar-B-Q," food that dances on your senses and gets your lips to rejoicing.

This is a complete guide to the genuine article, where we move beyond searing and sizzling into really smoking. Some of the hundreds of books on barbecue grilling acknowledge and applaud this advanced art, but they usually suggest that a home cook can't hope to match the results of a professional pitmaster in the Carolinas, Kansas City, Memphis, or Texas. At best, they may say, you can add a few wood chips to a conventional grill or slather a smoky sauce over food. Bunk.

In the last two decades there's been a revolution in home smoking equipment and supplies, the subject of the first two chapters. The new developments allow anyone to make great barbecue—real, honest-to-goodness 'Q'—in their backyard, on their balcony, or even inside, often in ways that avoid the potential health hazards of grilling. All you need to succeed are the right resources and a little learning about the barbecue craft and its delightful, part-and-parcel culture. The cooking isn't more complex than grilling—just the taste—and it's actually much more fun.

Let's Join the Party

Today we use the term "barbecue" in a multitude of ways, but in the American past, it mainly meant a big, festive community gathering. An English visitor in

the eighteenth century described the custom to friends back home, saying that Americans were “extremely fond of an entertainment they call a Barbacue,” which was “a large party” that “generally ended in intoxication.” George Washington probably even slept at one. In his diary, the first president noted that he once went to Alexandria, Virginia, for a “barbique” that lasted three days.

When workers laid the cornerstone for the nation’s capitol in 1793, the leaders of the new republic celebrated with a huge barbecue. Right before the outbreak of the Civil War, Scarlett O’Hara met Rhett Butler at a barbecue in *Gone with the Wind*. Throughout American history, when churches wanted to lure the less devoted, when politicians needed to attract a crowd for a campaign speech, when folks had any cause for festivity, they held a barbecue and invited everyone.

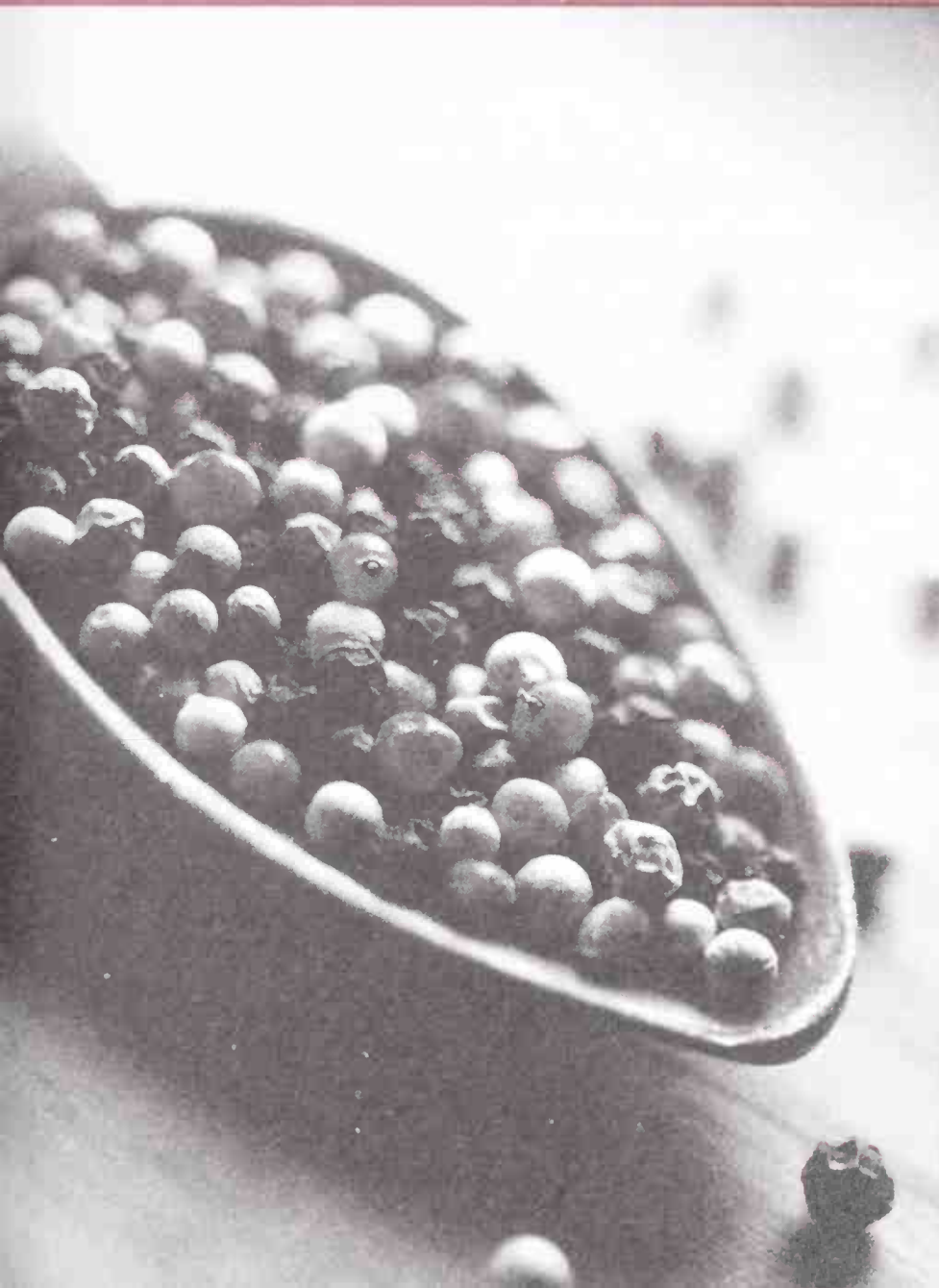
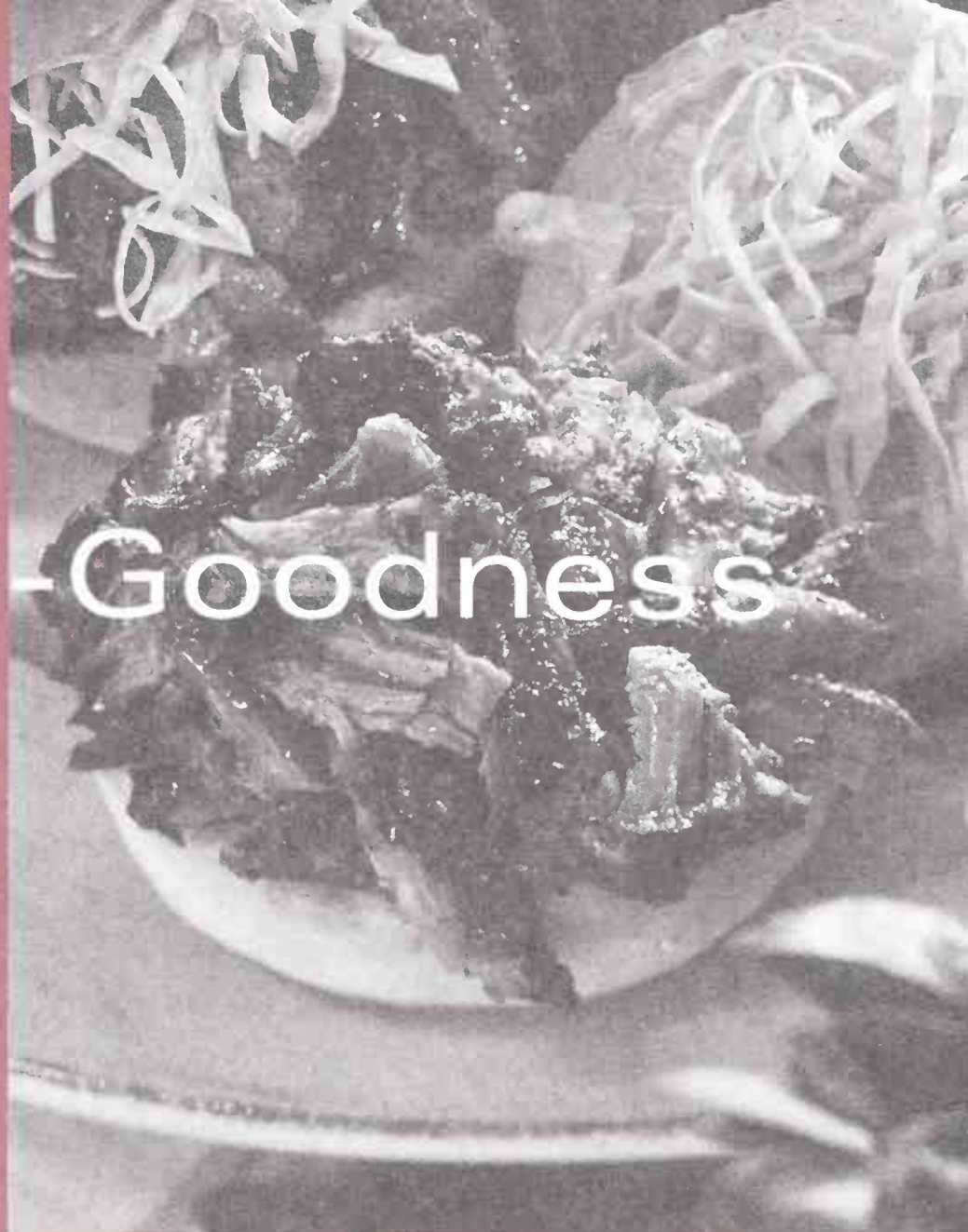
The cooks didn’t grill hamburgers at these affairs. They dug a long, deep pit in the ground, filled this trench with logs, burned the wood down to low-temperature coals, and then slow-roasted whole animals and fish suspended above the smoky fire. That was barbecue then, and it’s still the essence of the art. To get real with barbecue, you have to return to the roots, and that means *celebrating* a meal with friends and family by *smoking food slow and low over smoldering wood*.

That’s been a grand tradition in the United States from the beginning, but many Americans lost touch with the legacy about the time they discovered frozen vegetables and TV dinners. We were moving to cities and suburbs in droves then and couldn’t tear up our streets and backyards to build underground pits. Only the predominantly rural regions of the South, Southwest, and Midwest maintained the memory of real barbecue. The rest of us learned to make do with high-heat charcoal grilling and began calling it barbecue simply because it was done outdoors.

Grilling is a fine method of cooking, but it doesn’t produce food with the hearty, woodsy resonance of slow-smoked fare. Those who have tasted true barbecue know the difference, and they are almost certain to be passionate about the distinction. For them, smoked ribs are as superior to a grilled pork chop as a lottery win is to taxes. In the same vein, anyone who has spent an afternoon barbecuing with children or friends understands why Americans made that their traditional party of preference. It’s a national pastime older than baseball and just as spirited. When you add the fun to the flavor of the food, you don’t need a diploma to tell you that you’ve reached a new level of barbecue bliss.

P a r t O n e

Honest-to-Goodness Barbecue



The Secrets of Success

REAL BARBECUE is bragging food. Maybe it's the great smoky flavor or maybe it's the adulation of the eaters, but somehow all pitmasters develop into natural boasters, cocky enough to milk a bull. They learn to tell tall tales, wear odd clothes, act in wacky ways, and otherwise promote their aura as magicians of meat.

When asked about their secrets, experienced pitmasters prance around the answer like Elvis in concert, hinting of mysterious ingredients in their special dry rub, marinade, or sauce. It's all part of the fun of barbecue, but beginners shouldn't be deceived about the main secret of success. While everything you do makes some difference in your results, the only critical consideration is your smoking equipment and how you use it.

A lot of devices will work, including your old kettle grill, homemade contraptions, inexpensive water smokers, and sure-fire metal pits. We cover the various

options in this chapter, focusing on the strengths and limitations of each. Specific information about using the equipment—and other barbecuing advice—is scattered throughout the recipe chapters in a range of “BBQ Tips.” As long as you know your equipment and understand some barbecue basics, you're just a little practice short of your own bragging rights.

Barbecue Basics

The two essentials of real barbecue are a low cooking temperature and a cloud of wood smoke. You need sufficient heat to cook the food—the main difference from smoke curing—but you want to keep the temperature just above the level that meat will register inside when done. Since pork needs to be cooked to an internal temperature of at least 160°F, you barbecue it at 180°F to 220°F, a good range for other food as well.

In smoke curing, by contrast, a combination of salt and smoke is used to preserve food rather than cook it and temperatures are generally held below 100°F. That's what makes a barbecued pork shoulder an entirely different animal than a cured country ham. Both processes are likely to reduce the moisture content of meat—concentrating flavor—but barbecuing does little or nothing for preservation. If you find yourself with leftovers, they must be refrigerated like anything else you cook.

Grilling goes in the opposite direction with heat. Much of the time you want the highest temperature possible in grilling because the goal is to sear meat on the outside to crisp and brown the surface. The method works best with tender cuts, like a good steak or chop, which are relatively free of connective tissue. Traditional barbecue meat, on the other hand, is as tough as John Wayne's boots. Spareribs, beef brisket, and the like require slow cooking at a low temperature to break down their stubborn tissues, the reason they were ideal for barbecue from the beginning. When you barbecue steaks, fish, or vegetables, as we do in many of our recipes, you do it to add smoky flavor, not because the slow cooking is needed for tenderness.

The rich smokiness you want in all barbecue should come from smoldering wood, not from fat or oil dripping on coals or hot metal. The difference is enormous, both in taste and in health risks. The

smoke produced by burning fat contains benzopyrene, a carcinogen that sticks to food. The effect is almost unavoidable in grilling, but it isn't a problem in barbecuing if you have a water reservoir or pan beneath the meat, an option with much of the equipment.

The use of water or other liquids is a bit controversial in barbecue circles. People in the past didn't add water to their pits in any fashion, and many pitmasters disdain the idea today, contending that barbecuing must be a dry cooking process. In truth, though, most methods of barbecuing have always involved the circulation of moisture-laden air over food, making the process much "wetter" than cooking in a conventional oven. We think water has a proper place in barbecuing, depending on how it's used and what you're cooking. Traditional barbecue meats benefit from losing moisture as they cook, shrinking their size, but many nontraditional foods benefit from bumping up the humidity inside the smoker. As long as you avoid cooking the food with steam instead of smoke, the extra moisture helps to prevent lean meat and fish from getting too dry.

Cooking Times and Temperatures

Though critical in barbecuing, a low cooking temperature isn't always easy to measure or maintain. Even major equip-

ment manufacturers sometimes fail to put useful thermometers on their smokers, telling complainers like us that barbecuing is an “inexact art.” There’s a lot of truth in that statement, but the art isn’t as inexact as their thinking. As with any other cooking process, if you can gauge the cooking temperature and control fluctuations, you can make a reasonably reliable estimate of the time required for barbecuing anything.

That’s exactly what we do in our recipes. We provide an approximate cooking time based on optimum barbecuing temperatures around 200°F. We’ve tested the times on a wide range of equipment, but you may need to make adjustments for your particular smoker and climate. If your thermometer reads a little high, the weather is windy or cool, you lift the lid often to check the food, or your smoker doesn’t retain heat well—all common situations—you may find that you need to cook longer than we suggest. The opposite conditions could push you in the opposite direction. Rely on your personal experience and add or subtract time as needed to our recipes.

Approximations of cooking times—ours or your own—aren’t fully useful unless you have a thermometer and a way to control the heat level of your smoker. The best smokers come with industrial-quality thermometers, but the gauges on less expensive models are seldom so reliable. Any type of instrument that reads something like “warm,” “ideal,” and “hot” isn’t worth

much more than the beer concession at a Baptist picnic. Replace it with a true thermometer fitted in the same opening or get a small oven thermometer that sits on the grate next to the food, basically the same options that are available to people without any form of temperature gauge on their smoker.

The most practical solution, if your equipment has a vent or other opening on the lid, is to use a portable candy thermometer that has a head facing outward. Insert the probe into the opening, placing the tip as close as possible to the cooking area without touching the food, and position the head so that it’s not blocking all air circulation and is clearly visible. You can check the temperature without lifting the lid, a major advantage over an oven thermometer inside the smoker. If you have to remove the cover to see your thermometer, you release substantial heat and slow the cooking process beyond the time projected in a recipe.

A thermometer is most useful when you have the means to fine-tune the cooking temperature—with air vents or the amount of fuel you’re burning—but it’s a valuable tool even when you lack much control. In that situation, common with water smokers, you can at least add or subtract cooking time based on whether the internal temperature is higher or lower than the range suggested in a recipe.

A thermometer is particularly important when you’re first getting the feel of

new equipment or making the transition from grilling to smoking on old equipment. With a season or two of experience, you may be able to gauge the cooking temperature in other ways. You'll learn how much flame you want in your log pit, or how much heat your electric water smoker is generating under normal conditions in your climate with your extension cord. If you're burning charcoal, and tracking the cooking temperature over time, you'll develop a good sense of how many briquettes or hardwood lumps are needed to produce and maintain a 200°F fire in your size and type of smoker.

However you manage it, you need to make sure you're cooking slow and low. The principle is vital in barbecue, and however inexact the art may be, measurements of your success are as useful as in any other form of cooking. If you can confirm that you're smoking steady between 180°F and 220°F, you can count on the approximate cooking times in our recipes. More important, you can count on great 'Q' from a wide range of equipment.

Log-Burning Pits

The best way to barbecue is with a log fire, which is how it all began. In the early years the only equipment Americans needed was an ax and a shovel. They cleared trees along a stretch of open land, cut the branches into logs, and loaded the

wood into a long pit several feet deep. They burned the logs down to smoldering coals and cooked their food over the smoky fire for a full night or longer, adding wood as necessary to maintain a steady, low temperature.

Originally the pits were open on top and the meat was hung above the fire or placed on a ground-level grate. Many people still barbecue in a similar style, but around the turn of the century, the country's first commercial Bar-B-Q joints introduced important changes in the technology.

Much of the credit goes to immigrant German butchers, who knew little at first about American barbecue but a great deal about old-country methods of smoking sausage and pork. In meat markets from the Carolinas to Texas, they introduced southerners to the European art of charcuterie and learned in turn from their customers about American smoked meats. The two traditions merged easily in places such as the Kreuz Market in Lockhart, Texas, where the butchers built a large brick pit in the back of the shop to smoke all kinds of fare. For barbecuing, the pit offered many advantages over an open underground trench. The brick walls elevated the working level enough to keep the cooks out of the chiropractor's office and the newfangled metal lid trapped heat and smoke inside to make the cooking process more efficient and even. The homespun inventors also placed the fire farther from

the food, moving the burning logs from directly underneath the meat to the far end of the long pit opposite an outside vent.

Hundreds of other barbecuers created their own similar closed pits, simple but ingenious contraptions that carried an old legacy into a new age. No one has really improved on the design in the century since, and just recently it has become the model for a big breakthrough in home barbecue equipment.

Starting around 1980, several small but dynamic companies began manufacturing log-burning metal pits with an offset firebox at one end and a chimney at the other, just like that ancient brick pit at Kreuz Market. You can keep the fire well away from the meat, get good smoke circulation, and maintain a constant low temperature for extended periods, regulating the heat with damper controls on the firebox and chimney. You check the temperature every twenty to thirty minutes and add wood as needed, maybe once an hour.

The advantage of burning logs is the density of wood smoke they produce. Like the lava rocks in a gas or electrical grill, most charcoal doesn't generate smoke unless fat or food falls on it. So a major part of the heat source in any kind of charcoal, gas, or electrical device cooks food without smoking it, regardless of how many wood chips or chunks you use. You can barbecue many things well with this kind of equipment, as our recipes show, but you can

never quite match the smokiness of the meat at a great Bar-B-Q joint.

Prime Log Pits

Top-of-the-line log pits do produce that full flavor from traditional barbecue meats, and they do it to perfection. If you are set on making the best pork shoulder or beef brisket in town, this is the way to go. The premier pits, made by custom fabricators, weigh several hundred pounds and cost in the same range as a quality gas grill. The weight and the expense come from the use of thick, heavy-gauge metal that's capable of standing up to serious log fires for a lifetime of use.

When we went shopping for a log pit a dozen years ago, our choice ultimately was a moderate-size model from Pitt's & Spitt's. The Houston company has changed hands since then, but in the past at least, the craftsmanship on all their products was outstanding in looks, durability, and capability. The pits feature an offset firebox with 1/4-inch plate walls, stainless steel parts, an accurate industrial thermometer, a water reservoir with a drain, and superior smoke drafting. Call 800-521-2947 for more information, or visit the virtual showroom at www.pittsandspitts.com.

Other leading manufacturers in the field include Smokemaster (800-362-5432, www.smokemaster.com), JR Enter-

prises (800-432-8187, www.jrenterprises.com), Bar-B-Que Pits by Klose (800-487-7487, www.bbqpits.com), and Texas Pit Masters (877-697-7487, www.texaspitmasters.com). If we were buying a new pit today, we would consider options from all these companies, particularly the combination smoker/infrared grill that's a specialty of Texas Pit Masters.

When you compare the range of choices among companies and among models, be sure to look at all the features, not just the cost. Consider the heft of the firebox and the lightness of the lid. Decide the value of a water reservoir, which helps to keep meat juicy and eliminates the possible carcinogenic effects of fat dripping on hot metal. Examine the quality of the metal fabrication, even the sturdiness of the wheels. All the details matter because a prime log pit should provide a lifetime of barbecue bliss.

Popular Value Pits

One of the few liabilities of the top log pits is their size. The heavy-duty construction is an asset in barbecuing, but it makes the pits fairly expensive and bulky. If your bank account or outdoor space is limited, you might want to look at other ways to cook with wood.

The best alternatives are the moderately priced, lighter-weight pits that are becoming widely available in discount stores,

warehouse clubs, hardware stores, and mail-order catalogs. They look similar to their big brothers and function much the same, but the thinner metal of the firebox is more suitable for wood chunks than large logs. What you sacrifice in capability and features, you make up in savings. Regular retail prices start around three hundred dollars and you can find bargains for less.

The best established manufacturer, the New Braunfels Smoker Company (800-232-3398, www.nbsmoker.com), produces a variety of popular pits under model names such as Longhorn, Bandera, and Black Diamond. The top-of-the-line Longhorn is particularly versatile, capable of burning small logs as well as wood chunks, and it is fitted with a professional-grade thermometer. Similar pits made by other companies are usually comparable in style and value.

Outdoor Ovens

Another good option for barbecuing is a smoker oven. They generally produce less smoky flavor than a log or chunk pit, but they are easy and economical to use. Cookshack (800-423-0698, www.cookshack.com) makes one of our favorites. Primarily a manufacturer of commercial barbecue equipment, the company also offers a model suitable for home use that operates just like the bigger restaurant

ones. Powered by electricity, it burns wood chunks in a tightly sealed oven that you turn on and don't touch again until you're done.

Bradley Smoker (800-665-4188, www.bradleysmoker.com), a Canadian firm, sells an oven that looks similar but operates a little differently. An electrically powered smoke generator burns special "Bradley Flavour Bisquettes," compressed hardwood chips about the size of a hockey puck. An automatic mechanism feeds the fire as needed with new bisquettes, which are produced from a variety of woods such as alder, apple, and hickory.

Traeger Industries in Oregon (800-872-3437, www.traegerindustries.com) makes a line of grills that also cook with wood pellets. You set the oven for the lowest of three temperatures for smoking and load a supply of pellets. Then a patented auger mechanism feeds the wood into a small, efficient firebox under the cooking grate.

All these smoker ovens are distinctive additions to the patio, marking you as a special kind of outdoor cook, but none of them compare in individuality to the Big Green Egg (800-793-2292, www.BigGreenEgg.com). A charcoal smoker and grill, it's modeled on the Japanese kamado, a clay oven that looks like an oversized egg. The thick ceramic walls efficiently retain heat and moisture, keeping food naturally juicy without the use of a water pan. With the possible exception of a

French rotisserie, nothing cooks chicken more perfectly.

The grill-style oven that we use the most, and like the best, is the Hasty-Bake (800-4AN-OVEN, www.hastybake.com). Fired by charcoal, it's equally adept as a grill and a smoker, which isn't always the case with products that claim both capabilities. The flexibility comes from an adjustable firebox and a side door for loading fuel. You can regulate the temperature by raising or lowering the firebox, and you can add charcoal and wood without opening the lid and releasing heat. Several companies make grills with the same features, but the Hasty-Bake is the original, first built in 1948.

Charcoal and Gas Grills

In addition to the oven-style Hasty Bake, you can also barbecue in many conventional grills that lack an adjustable firebox. The challenge is greater because it's more difficult to maintain constant low temperatures for long enough to get the right result. Some grills manage that task better than others. Check out the capabilities of your grill by starting with foods that require relatively short smoking times, such as boneless chicken breasts, fish, and vegetables.

A grill cover is necessary for smoking, along with an ample supply of wood chips and chunks presoaked in water. The rest is

straightforward, if not simple. On the most common grills, you cook with indirect heat by placing the food over a pan of water on the opposite side of the grill from the fire and wood. Consult the owner's manual for specific indirect cooking instructions for your grill.

The key to success is a low cooking temperature. That's easier to attain initially with charcoal grills but easier to maintain during a slow cooking process with gas grills. If your charcoal grill has vents, as many popular models do, close them most of the way to hold down the intensity of the fire, and try not to lift the lid except to add more wood or charcoal. Many gas grills are limited in their range of cooking temperatures, and simply won't go low enough for real barbecuing, but when they do, they hold a steady heat level with less fuss.

Vertical Water Smokers

Water smokers (also called vertical smokers) seem ubiquitous these days, appearing in almost every store and catalog that sells outdoor products. They deserve their popularity in many respects, providing a solid combination of value and versatility, of ease and efficiency. Starting in price as low as \$30, they are relatively simple to use, require minimal attention during operation, and yield fine results with many foods, particularly items that benefit from

a moist cooking process. The most serious shortcoming pertains to traditional barbecue meats such as beef brisket and pork shoulder, which remain excessively fatty because of the added moisture.

All water smokers look much the same and operate on similar principles. Shaped like something a dinosaur dropped on the patio, they have a domed lid (often fitted with an imprecise thermometer), one or two grates for food, a pan for holding water or other liquids, and a charcoal, electric, or gas heat source on the bottom. The water helps keep the temperature low and prevents the undesirable smoke produced by fat falling in the fire. It also adds considerable moistness to food, much more than you get from a water reservoir in a log pit. When you want a crisp, crunchy finish in a dish, you may need to cook without the water pan, or perhaps remove the pan during the last stages of cooking.

Among the various models, the electric versions are the most reliable and convenient, at least if you have a handy power outlet. They cost more initially than their charcoal counterparts, but the fuel is much cheaper over time. Their primary advantage is a steady, dependable cooking temperature. The temperature will vary a little between different smokers and climates, and will drop some in cold weather or when you're using an extension cord, but it does remain fairly constant during the cooking process on any particular day. Gas water smokers share that strength,

but they get pricey and aren't as widely available.

Charcoal models fluctuate in cooking temperature, following a standard bell curve. They fire up gradually, reach a peak temperature that can approach 300°F when the coals are at their hottest, and then drop steadily as the charcoal dies down. You can mitigate the effect by lighting only a small circle of coals in the center, and allowing them to ignite the others over time, but you still get temperature variations. You have to rely on the average heat level, which can be difficult to determine accurately, to estimate the cooking time required for a dish. Compounding this potential problem, weather variables such as cold and wind affect the temperature more in charcoal smokers than in electric ones, and they take longer to regain heat any time you lift the lid. With a little experience, the cooking process becomes easy, but many people find it frustrating at first.

Homemade Smokers

Barbecuing was America's original and most popular form of outdoor cooking until grilling surged into the forefront after the Second World War. Equipment was a major reason for the shift. By the 1950s factories were turning out basic, cheap grills faster than Formica, but those who wanted a barbecue smoker for home use

had to make it for themselves. That's still a good option for some people, even with the solid commercial products available today. A lot of barbecue cook-off champions work on homemade equipment, sometimes expensively fabricated pits in special shapes ranging from armadillos to whiskey bottles.

Most do-it-yourselfers start with 55-gallon metal drums—well-scrubbed ones that never contained anything toxic. They are moderately easy to convert into a smoker and, most important, they project an authentic homespun feel, letting everyone know you're no drugstore dude.

A single drum cut in half horizontally, the most common design, is better for grilling than for smoking, but it can manage either. You split the barrel lengthwise, adding hinges on the back and a handle in front for a lid. Any kind of heavy metal grid can serve as a grate for holding the food. The most difficult part is attaching legs, usually accomplished by welding or bolting angle irons to the drum.

To avoid that job, you can use the barrel vertically, which elevates the working area to a comfortable height and also improves the smoke circulation needed for real barbecue. Among several options for rigging it, you can cut one end from the drum, place the opening over a brick fire pit, and hang meat from hooks secured to the vented top.

A double-barrel configuration is even better for barbecuing, though the con-

struction is more complex. The bottom drum serves as an offset firebox, allowing you to keep the flame at an optimum distance from the food. Some experts recommend using parts from wood stoves for such elements as the firebox door, cast-iron supports, flues, and chimneys with dampers. Wood stove dealers and large hardware stores should have sources.

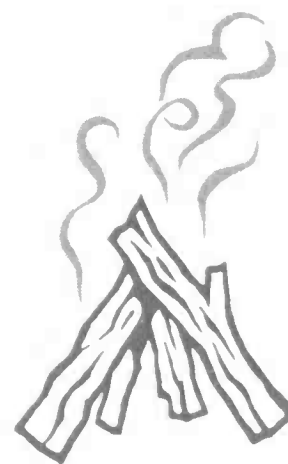
An experienced welder can build any of these barrel smokers, but a few tips may help you to get it right. Remove any existing paint as well as you can and re-finish all surfaces with a high-temperature paint. Install a good thermometer near the cooking area, so you can check the temperature easily. Make sure you have a well-controlled flow of air from the firebox, across the food, and out through a chimney or vent at the opposite end of the smoker. A baffle may help insure proper smoke circulation. If you want to burn logs instead of charcoal, as you should, line the bottom of the barrel with sand and firebrick to keep the wood from burning through and to reinforce the heat-retention properties of the thin metal.

A brick pit is another option for anyone with a lifetime address and basic masonry skills. A simple brick rectangle with a metal grate and lid will work, though it's better to add an attached outside firebox at one end of the pit and a chimney at the other, both fitted with mechanisms for regulating air circulation. Even someone who isn't

handy at all can make a temporary version of a similar pit. Just stack concrete blocks about four feet high in a cleared, level area—perhaps a driveway—borrow a grate from your grill or oven, and use heavy-duty aluminum foil as a lid.

What you can barbecue well depends on what you build. A double-barrel pit or a sophisticated brick pit has the same kind of broad range as a store-bought log-burner, though they are trickier to master. Other homemade options are more limited in capabilities, but any that can handle a true wood fire have more potential than a manufactured charcoal smoker.

Whether you build or buy, your equipment is your key to barbecue success. You may be inclined after a while to give more credit to your skills and secrets, but you won't be bragging about much if you ever forget that the fire comes before the food.



Fuels and Tools

IF SOMEONE EVER discovers a way to fix real barbecue by pushing a button, life will be as dull as a dance at a bankers' convention. Cooks add the soul to barbecue, and they do it through their fuels and tools.

Wood

Cigars produce smoke and so does burning fat, but you don't want to cook with either one. The smoke flavor in real barbecue should come mainly from wood. If you aren't using it in one form or another, you aren't barbecuing.

Only hardwoods work. Soft, resinous woods, such as pine, cedar, and spruce, contain too much sap, which makes their smoke harsh and foul-tasting. Avoid plywood, construction scraps, or anything you cannot positively identify as an appropriate, untreated hardwood.

The most common barbecue woods are listed in the flavoring chart on page 20. Many pitmasters swear by a certain wood, particularly hickory or oak, but the differences are less substantial than the similarities. Usually people prefer what grows in their neck of the woods, and that always seems to suit the food they fix.

If you have a log-burning pit, the optimum kind, your choice of woods will be limited to your region anyway, unless you're willing to pay some heavy freight charges. To find out what's available, check the yellow pages for firewood dealers. You can also call local restaurants that smoke food and ask about their wood sources, but unless they are authentic Bar-B-Q joints, they may not cook with logs.

Most backyard barbecuers get their smoke flavor from wood chips or chunks, both sold in small bags in stores that carry outdoor cooking supplies. Chips should be soaked in water or another liquid—per-

haps beer, wine, or juice—for a minimum of 30 minutes, preferably longer, so they will smoke instead of flame. When they are well saturated, you place them on top of a charcoal fire right before the food goes on the grate. One handful produces a mild smoke flavor in anything that cooks for less than an hour. For a deeper smoke taste, add more chips, and replenish them periodically over an extended cooking time, whenever the vented smoke starts dying out, perhaps as often as every 30 minutes.

Wood chunks work better than chips for most barbecuing and are a little more versatile. You can cook with them straight from the bag, burning them down to embers. Or presoak them and put them on a charcoal fire for a few hours. The dry chunks produce a lot of smoky flavor, but they tend to burn unevenly, making it difficult to maintain a steady temperature unless you have an offset firebox and a good thermometer. Several soaked chunks used in combination with charcoal result in the same flavor as a handful of chips, but they last longer, an asset in slow and low cooking.

BBQr's Delight (877-275-9591, www.bbqrsdelight.com) offers an alternative to chips and chunks that we use often. The Arkansas company makes compressed pellets of wood that are denser than any tree and produce considerable smoke for their compact size. They don't require soaking, and they work well in any grill or

smoker. The pellets come in a range of wood flavors, including such unusual choices as black walnut and sassafras.

Charcoal

Many people who cook with charcoal pick up any old bag that's handy or cheap. This can be a mistake. Charcoal varies as much as Madonna's moods and has almost the same chance of being a real stinker.

The problem is in the contents. Standard charcoal briquettes are made by turning sawdust to carbon in a combustion process that excludes oxygen. This burns away the wood flavor, but even worse things may happen after that point. To bind the carbonized wood into briquettes and promote ignition, many manufacturers add other substances, sometimes including petroleum products, coal, and sodium nitrate. When lit, these briquettes are bound to pollute the air, and they may do a little jig on your taste buds as well.

The advantage of the standard briquettes is that they provide even, constant heat for a considerable period of time. With practice you can control their rate of burning to maintain the low, steady temperatures needed for real barbecue, and you can avoid the need to add more coals to the fire on a frequent basis. By themselves the briquettes won't provide any wood smoke flavor, but you can get that with the addition of wood chips or chunks.

Recently, some manufacturers have started putting in the wood for you, making briquettes studded with noncarbonized pieces of hardwood. It's a convenient way to get the kind of smoke you want, but you may still have the undesirable additives, and you lose control over the amount of wood you're burning in the charcoal fire.

We prefer to add chips or chunks ourselves, and we prefer to use briquettes bound together with vegetable starches only. Likely to be labeled "all-natural" briquettes, they offer the strengths of their conventional cousins without the drawbacks, and they burn for as long or longer than any kind of charcoal on the market. Many standard supermarkets and large stores carry them today, but they are most readily available at grocery chains that specialize in "natural" products.

Lump hardwood charcoal, sometimes called chunk charwood, is another good option when used in combination with wood chips or chunks. It is carbonized, like all charcoal, but it's left in irregular shapes instead of being compressed into briquettes, eliminating the need for fillers and binders. It burns cleanly, ignites easily, and produces a steady fire.

The main problem with lump hardwood charcoal is that it burns hotter than briquettes, so you have to be more careful about controlling the temperature. The solution is to reduce the amount of charcoal used in cooking and to keep the lumps spread slightly apart from each other.

That's merely an extension of what you do with any charcoal fire in barbecuing. Except in a water smoker, you use fewer coals than you would for grilling the same food and you keep them loosely spaced rather than stacked together. The number of coals needed varies with the kind of equipment, but a good starting point for experimentation is twenty to fifty briquettes or ten to twenty-five handfuls of hardwood lumps, depending on the size of the firebox and its distance from the food. If you need to add more charcoal after an hour or two, preheat it in a charcoal chimney or other metal container and use tongs to place the pieces in the fire.

Fire Starters

Starting a log fire in a barbecue pit is similar to doing the same thing in a fireplace or wood stove. You stack a few logs carefully to allow room for air to circulate around them, and ignite the wood with kindling. Just don't use resinous kindling, such as fatwood, in a pit. We put a few chunks of hardwood under the logs and get them burning with one of the many non-petroleum fire starters on the market today.

To begin a charcoal fire, we recommend using the metal chimneys designed for the purpose and sold in almost any store that carries outdoor cooking supplies. You just light crumpled newspaper in the bottom of the sheet metal cylinder, and that ignites

the charcoal you pile in the top portion. If you need to heat additional coals later, the chimneys are ready-made for the purpose. Best of all, they're inexpensive and hassle-free. Electric fire starters are equally easy to use, but the odd blend of technologies seems to us a little like drinking bourbon with root beer.

Charcoal is ready for grilling purposes as soon as it's covered completely with a thin layer of gray ash. For barbecuing, you can let it burn down a few minutes longer, until it's thickly coated with ash and no red glow is visible. You should be able to hold your hand about five inches above the coals for a minimum of five seconds.

Barbecue Tools

HEAT-RESISTANT GLOVES The best way to remove food from a smoker, or to shift it around, is with your hands, securely wrapped in heat-resistant gloves. Never puncture your vittles with a fork. Tongs work with small items, but if you point a pair of the overgrown tweezers at a ten-pound brisket, the poor pincers are going to wilt in your paws. Kitchen or welder's mitts offer good protection for your hands, but we prefer neoprene gloves designed for firemen. They can handle anything and they clean quickly. Besides, the big, black, shiny mitts have a certain pitmaster sex appeal. We ordered ours from Pitt's & Spitt's (800-521-2947, www.pitssandspitts.com).

MOPPING BRUSHES Mopping or basting is a big part of barbecuing, as we explain in the next chapter. Cotton string dish mops work best, but pastry brushes or even nylon paintbrushes do an adequate job. Clean them thoroughly at the end of the day, even dunking cotton mop heads in boiling water.

KITCHEN SYRINGE Some foods, especially poultry, benefit from the injection of spices and liquid into the meat to add flavor and moistness. This is done with an inexpensive kitchen syringe, an oversized needle resembling something a veterinarian might use to inoculate a cow. To use, push the plunger down to expel any air and then dip the needle into your injection liquid. Draw the plunger back slowly until the syringe fills fully and then inject the liquid deep into the food in several spots. Be sure to clean the syringe after each use with hot, soapy water.

INSTANT-READ MEAT THERMOMETER In addition to a cooking thermometer, most barbecuers will want a thermometer that can give an instant reading of the internal temperature of meat. You don't need to check traditional barbecue meats for doneness because they are cooked so long, but you'll want that capability with many other foods. Some of the handiest models are designed to clip in your pocket.

FIREPLACE POKER OR SHOVEL For a pit in particular, and some other smokers as

well, you need a metal poker or hand-held shovel to move around coals, logs, and ashes. You can find them at any store that carries fireplace or wood stove supplies.

WIRE BRUSH It's important to keep your cooking grate clean, so food doesn't stick or taste like what you cooked the last time. Instead of soap or other scouring agents, use a heavy-duty wire brush, available at hardware stores. Some are designed specifically for cleaning grills, but general-purpose versions also work. Scrub the grate when it's hot, preferably right after cooking or, if you forget, the next time you fire up the smoker.

STURDY WORK TABLE An outdoor cook shouldn't be running to the kitchen to work. You want your supplies, sauces, and refreshments handy, and you need an area for prepping, cutting, and serving the day's feast. A card table will work, but the more you barbecue, the more you'll want something larger and heavier.

TIDBIT UTENSILS If you're planning to cook bite-size morsels or fish in your smoker, it's worth investing in a portable grate with a small mesh that prevents food from falling through. A set of metal skewers is also useful.

DRIP PAN To barbecue on a covered charcoal grill, you need a drip pan to place beneath the food alongside the coals. If you

use a regular kitchen pan, instead of a disposable aluminum one, wrap it in foil or spray it with a nonstick cooking spray to make cleaning easier. Fill the pan halfway with water or another liquid.

SMOKEPROOF DISHES Use pans and dishes that won't discolor easily from smoke, such as cast-iron pots or something that can be cleaned with relative ease, such as a Pyrex dish. Disposable foil pans are a good option, too. Heavy-duty foil can be fashioned into trays for lightweight food or used for wrapping various items. Other baking dishes and heat-proof utensils can be used with barbecuing, but they may require a lot of scrubbing to remove the dark smoke color, particularly if you're smoking in a wood-burning pit.

COOKING ACCESSORIES An apron may feel funny at first, but you learn quickly why people have them. The same is true of pot holders, paper towels, a cutting board, plastic trash bags, aluminum foil, and other normal kitchen fixtures.

GIMME CAP Professional chefs wear toques. Barbecue cooks wear caps, usually the "gimme" kind people give away or sell cheaply to promote a business, team, or event. They just look right, and they're certainly handy when you've forgotten the pot holders, paper towels, or fly swatter.

Stovetop Smoking

THE NEWEST RAGE in smoke cooking is doing it indoors. The result is not quite true barbecue, but it's close enough to fool a foreigner and tasty enough to inspire yelps of joy in a Carolina pork lover. If you live in a Manhattan townhouse, or a high-rise apartment anywhere, indoor smoking may be your only option anyway, and during winter it may make more sense in any situation than outdoor barbecuing.

The "barbeque pit" of choice is a crafty, inexpensive device called a stovetop smoker. We use one made by a Colorado Springs company, Camerons (888-563-0227, www.cameronssmoker.com), but the Burton brand sold in some stores and catalogs is similar in most respects, including price. You place wood dust or chips—packaged with the smokers—in the bottom of a rectangular pan. A drip tray and food grate go directly above. You cook over the front and back burner of a stove, using low to moderate heat to gently ignite the wood and generate a puff of

smoke, which is trapped inside the pan by a tight-fitting lid and absorbed by the food during the cooking process.

Stovetop smokers excel with chicken breasts, fish fillets, and other ingredients of a comparable size that respond well to a light smoke flavor. Manufacturers suggest you can also cook larger cuts of meat by removing the lid and wrapping a foil tent around the food, but we find the process cumbersome and unproductive. On most home stoves, the lowest possible cooking temperature falls between 275°F and 300°F, a higher range than you usually get in outdoor smokers. While you need to reduce cooking times in recipes slightly to accommodate the heat difference, the results remain similar for dishes that suit the mode.

All the unsmoked dishes in the book—from rubs to sauces to sides—obviously work well for an inside kitchen. Thirty barbecue recipes that also translate well, and shine in a stovetop smoker, are listed

below along with page numbers. Each will put a spark in a snowy day.

Weeknight Pork Tenderloin	80
Purely Pork Chops	84
Soy-Glazed Flank Steak	121
Minted Chops	148
Lamb Chops à la Greek Town	149
Wine-Sopped Venison Scallops	163
Quick Chick	179
Alabama Smoked Chicken Sandwich	186
Smoked Chicken Sandwich with Summer Confetti	187
Simply Superb Salmon	212
Tom Douglas's Sake-Cured Hot-Smoked Salmon	215
Elemental Trout	218
Mint Trout	221
Peppered Catfish	223

Smoked Snapper Tostadas with Sangrita Sauce	230
Jalapeño-Lime Shrimp	237
Shrimp Rémooulade	238
Smoked Onion Rings	257
Simple 'Shrooms	261
Chicken Salad with Sizzling Salsa Vinaigrette	286
Chicken Salad Supreme	287
Smoked Albacore-Potato Salad	289
Chunky Trout Salad	292
Spicy Asian Flank Steak Salad	294
Curry Pecans	318
Smoked Rosemary Walnuts	319
Little Devils	320
Creamy Catfish Spread	328
Drop-Dead Trout Spread	329
007 Shrimp	339



Wood Flavoring Chart

ALDER The traditional wood for smoking salmon in the Pacific Northwest, alder also works well with other fish. It has a light, delicate flavor.

APPLE AND CHERRY Both woods produce a slightly sweet, fruity smoke that's mild enough for chicken or turkey, but capable of flavoring a ham.

HICKORY Hickory is the king of the woods in the Southern barbecue belt, as basic to the region's cooking as cornbread. The strong, hearty taste is perfect for pork shoulder and ribs, but it also enhances any red meat or poultry.

MAPLE Mildly smoky and sweet, maple mates well with poultry, ham, and vegetables.

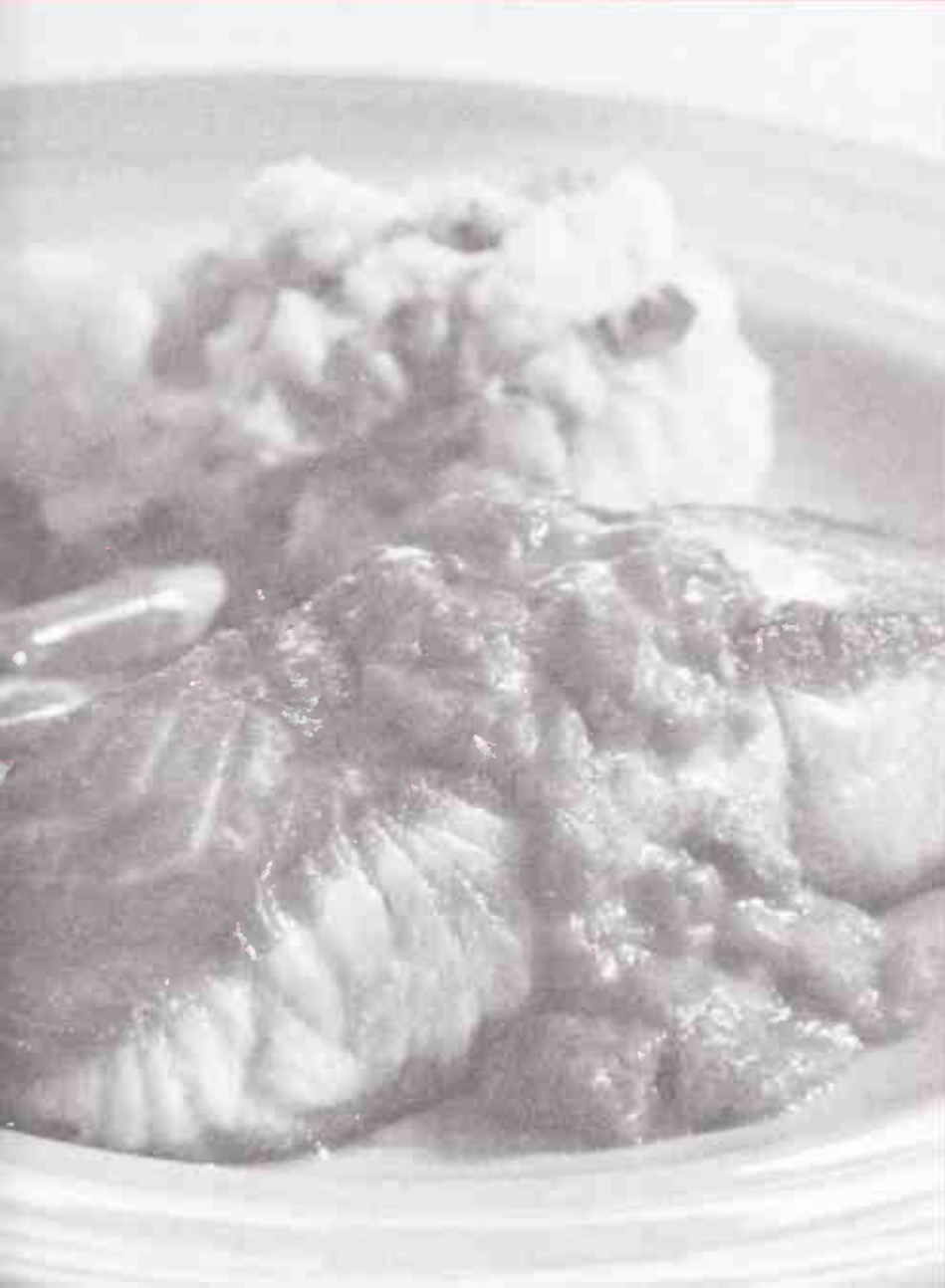
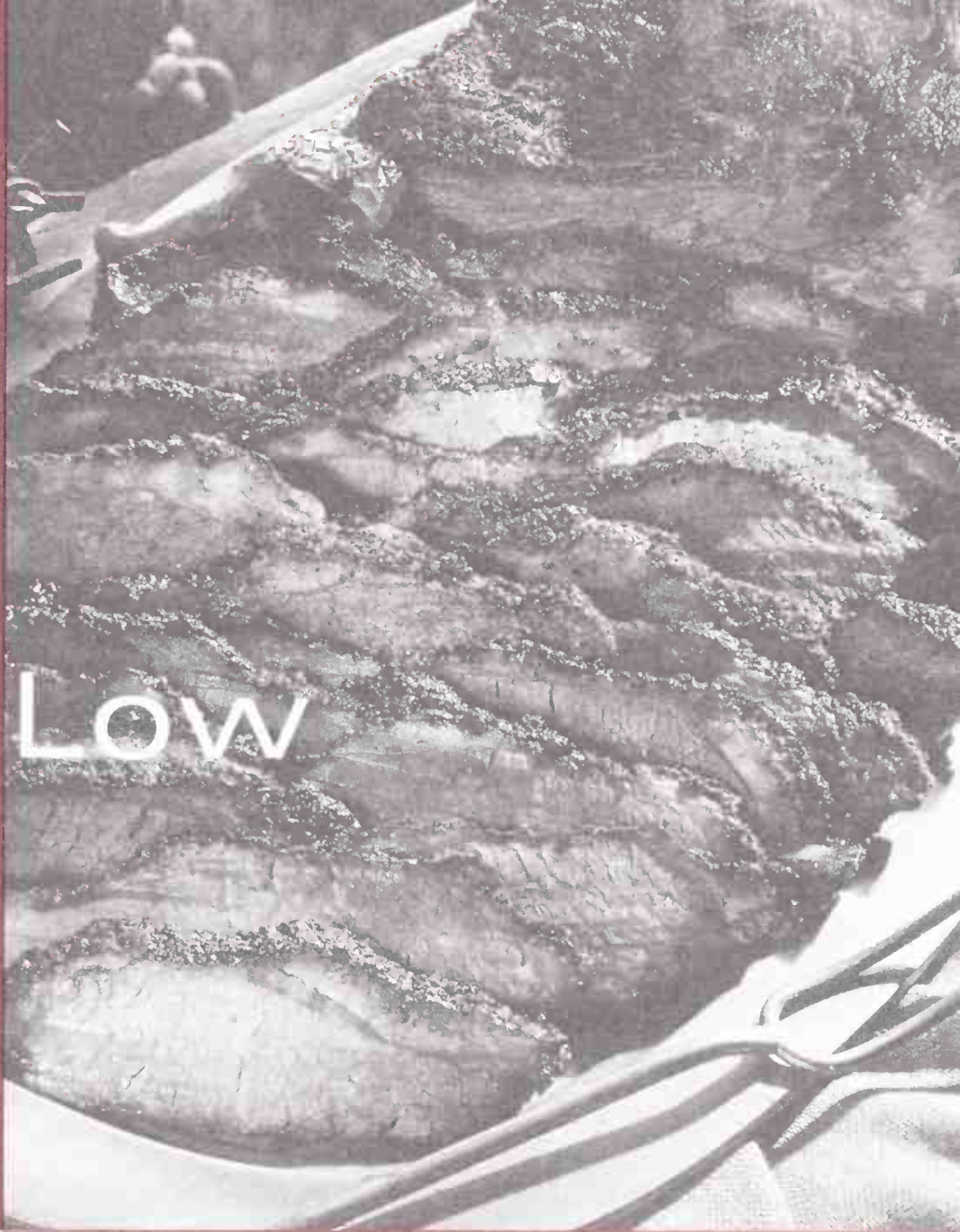
MESQUITE The mystique wood of recent decades, mesquite is also America's most misunderstood wood. It's great for grilling because it burns very hot, but below average for barbecuing for the same reason. Also, the smoke taste turns from tangy to bitter over an extended cooking time. Few serious pitmasters use mesquite, despite a lot of stories about its prevalence in the Southwest.

OAK If hickory is the king of barbecue woods, oak is the queen. Assertive but always pleasant, it's the most versatile of hardwoods, blending well with a wide range of flavors. What it does to beef brisket is probably against the law in some states.


PECAN The choice of many professional chefs, pecan burns cool and offers a subtle richness of character. Some people call it a mellow version of hickory.

P a r t T w o

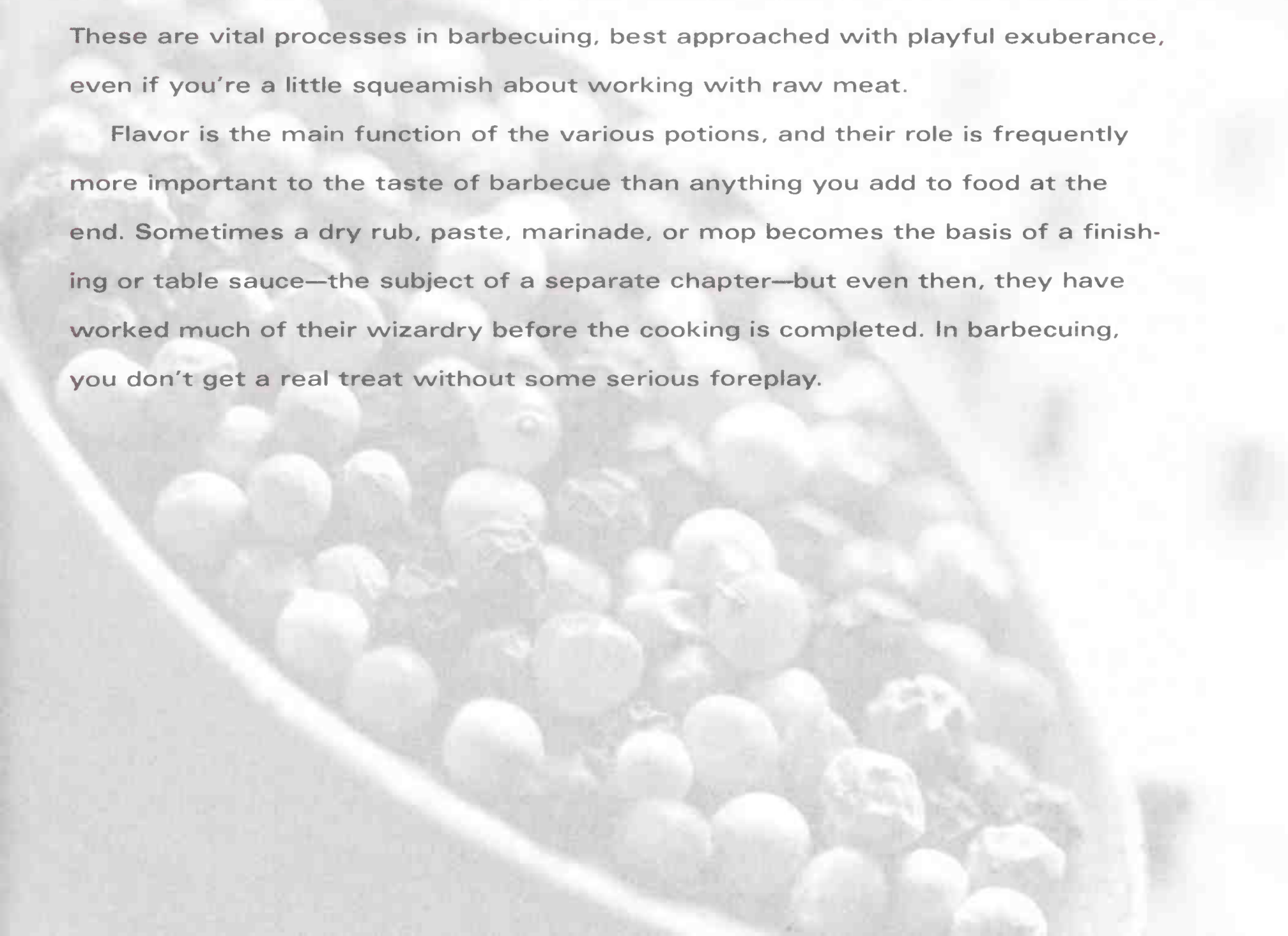
Smoking Slow and Low



Spicing Up Your Life



The first step in barbecuing, most of the time, is the application of a dry rub, paste, or marinade to the food you're fixing. Then, after you start cooking, you often "mop" the food with a liquid containing some of the same ingredients. These are vital processes in barbecuing, best approached with playful exuberance, even if you're a little squeamish about working with raw meat.



Flavor is the main function of the various potions, and their role is frequently more important to the taste of barbecue than anything you add to food at the end. Sometimes a dry rub, paste, marinade, or mop becomes the basis of a finishing or table sauce—the subject of a separate chapter—but even then, they have worked much of their wizardry before the cooking is completed. In barbecuing, you don't get a real treat without some serious foreplay.

Wild Willy's Number		Pan-Asian Pandemonium	37
One-derful Rub	26	Kentucky Pride	38
Southern Succor Rub	27	Thunder Paste	38
Poultry Perfect Rub	28	James Beard's Basic Barbecue	
Seafaring Seafood Rub	28	Marinade	40
Cajun Ragin' Rub	29	James Bond's Basic Barbecue	
Sweet Sensation	30	Marinade	41
Smoky Salt	30	Red Wine Marinade	41
Basic Black Rub	31	Stout Beer Marinade	42
Java-Chile Rub	31	Jalapeño-Lime Marinade	42
Southwest Heat	32	Red-Eye Marinade	43
Jamaican Jerk Rub	33	Cheryl's Cider Soak	44
Simple Chinese Five-Spice		Mojo Marinade	44
Medley	33	Southern Sop	46
Primo Paste	35	Basic Beer Mop	46
Roasted Garlic Mash	36	Lemon Splash	47
Name-Your-Herb Paste	36	Lightning Mop	48
Yucatecan Seasoning Paste	37	Pop Mop	48

Dry Rubs

DRY RUBS ARE COMBINATIONS

of dried spices massaged into food before cooking. Originally developed long ago for preservation, rubs in barbecuing help seal in flavor, add another dimension to the taste, and form a savory crust. While the technique is old, it wasn't widely used in American cooking outside of barbecue circles until recently, when New Orleans chef Paul Prudhomme created blackened redfish and other dishes using his line of seasoning blends.

The appropriate ingredients in dry rubs vary with the kind of food you're cooking, but some items are more common than others. Salt and sugar probably appear more often than anything else, in both commercial and homemade rubs, though they are also the most controversial ingredients. Some pitmasters say that salt draws the moisture out of meat, and everyone agrees that white or brown sugar burns on the surface of food. We follow the course of moderation, using salt and sugar when they round out the taste of a rub, but keeping the quantity in careful balance with other ingredients. From a flavor standpoint, if nothing else, they are normally better in a supporting rather than starring role.

Garlic powder, onion powder, and lemon-pepper seasonings are a close second in popularity, particularly in home-

made rubs. They all work better in a dry spice mix than they do in most kitchen preparations, but by themselves their potential for adding punch is pretty limited. We usually supplement them, or even supplant them, with pepper and dried chiles, plus some combination of secondary seasonings, such as dry mustard, cumin, sage, thyme, allspice, cinnamon, nutmeg, and ginger.

When applying a rub, add it thoroughly and evenly. Generally you don't skimp on the amount, though some dishes benefit from a light touch. If you're cooking chicken or other poultry, spread the seasoning both over and under the skin, being careful to avoid tearing the skin. If you're rubbing vegetables, cover them first with a thin layer of oil. Always wash your hands well with soap and hot water before moving on to other tasks.

After coating the food, let it absorb the spices in the refrigerator, wrapped in plastic. We favor zipper-lock bags or industrial-size food-safe plastic bags, depending on the size of the item. Oven-roasting bags, the type used for Thanksgiving turkeys, work, too. As we indicate in our recipes in later chapters, fish fillets and shrimp need to sit for thirty to forty-five minutes before cooking, big cuts of meat like an overnight sleep, and other kinds of food require some amount of time in between.

The following collection of master rubs illustrates typical spice blends for different

dishes. We repeat all the instructions when we use one of these in a particular recipe—so you don't have to turn back here—but it may help in understanding rubs to see a sample set of them in one place. Also, if you want to make up a batch of your own

custom rubs at the beginning of the barbecue season, as we do each year, you'll find this a useful starting point. Figure that two cups of rub will yield enough to flavor a couple of briskets, a half-dozen slabs of ribs, or eight to ten chickens.



Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub

This is our main all-purpose rub, good on ribs, brisket, chicken, and more.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup paprika
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup freshly ground black pepper
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup sugar
- 2 tablespoons chili powder
- 2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 2 tablespoons onion powder
- 2 teaspoons cayenne

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.



BBQ TIP In the decade since we published the first edition of *Smoke & Spice*, the number of commercially available dry rubs has grown from a handful to enough to sand a new Sahara. It makes sense to keep a few with favorite flavorings on hand to shake effortlessly over food you are smoking for simple weekday meals. Be aware, however, that you may pay a lot for the convenience. Some companies load up rubs with inexpensive spices that have the flavor of sawdust, and others rely heavily on salt or sugar as the primary ingredients (the ones listed first on the label). As always, buyers must beware.

SPICE FIT FOR A QUEEN

Originally developed to make Texas chili con carne, but now used in many other ways as well, chili powders combine dried red chiles (usually anchos) with other spices, such as cumin and garlic. One of the oldest and best brands is Gebhardt's, created by German immigrant William Gebhardt in 1896. A New Braunfels resident, he loved the spicy stews made at that time by the fabled San Antonio "Chili Queens" and developed his powder to emulate their seasonings.

Southern Succor Pork Rub

We use this on many cuts of pork, from shoulder to tenderloin.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

- 1/2 cup freshly ground black pepper
- 1/2 cup paprika
- 1/2 cup turbinado sugar
- 1/4 cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 4 teaspoons dry mustard
- 2 teaspoons cayenne

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.



BBQ TIP The late Jim Quessenberry, one of the planet's all-time premier pitmasters, gave us the idea of using turbinado sugar in rubs. A coarsely granulated raw sugar, turbinado has a light molasses flavor and doesn't break down under barbecuing temperatures to the same extent as other sugars. You can find turbinado sugar at natural food stores and many supermarkets.

IT TOUCHES US ALL

Barbecue is a metaphor for American culture in a broad sense, and . . . is a more appropriate metaphor than any other American food. Barbecue alone encompasses the highbrows and the lowbrows, the sacred and the profane, the urban and the rural, the learned and the unlettered, the blacks, the browns, the yellows, the reds, and the whites." Lolis Eric Elie, *Smokestack Lightning* (1996, Farrar, Straus and Giroux)

Poultry Perfect Rub

Chicken and other poultry can take a variety of rubs well, depending on the flavor you want, but this is often our top choice.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup paprika
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup freshly ground black pepper
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup celery salt
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup sugar
2 tablespoons onion powder
2 tablespoons dry mustard
2 teaspoons cayenne
Zest of 3 to 4 lemons, dried and minced

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.



BBQ TIP Lemon zest can be air-dried overnight. If you're in a hurry to get your poultry in the pit, dry the zest in a 225°F oven or smoker for 8 to 10 minutes.



Seafaring Seafood Rub

Try this complexly flavored blend on swordfish, striped bass, other white fish, and shrimp.

MAKES ABOUT $\frac{3}{4}$ CUP

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
2 tablespoons celery seed
1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon garlic powder
1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon ground ginger
1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
2 teaspoons paprika

2 teaspoons packed brown sugar
1 teaspoon ground mace or nutmeg
1 teaspoon cayenne
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground allspice

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.

Cajun Ragin' Rub

This blend dances on your taste buds. Pair it with pork ribs or shoulder, or use it with shrimp or a meaty fish, such as snapper or redfish.

MAKES ABOUT 1 1/4 CUPS

- 1/4 cup celery salt
- 1/4 cup freshly ground black pepper
- 1/4 cup white pepper
- 1/4 cup packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 1 to 1 1/2 tablespoons cayenne
- 1 tablespoon dried thyme
- 2 teaspoons dried sage

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.



BBQ TIP Many good cooks frown on the use of garlic powder, onion powder, and similar commercial products that appear in rub recipes. Most supermarket versions simply don't offer much flavor or substance. For superior results, mail-order these seasonings and other spices from specialty companies such as Penzeys (800-741-7787, www.penzeys.com) and Vann's (800-583-1693, www.vannsspices.com).

SURF'S UP

Hundreds of Web sites deal with barbecue in one way or another, often promoting cook-offs, sauces and rubs, catering businesses, smoking equipment, and the like. A large number of the sites are linked through www.smoking.net. From there you can surf yourself silly through wave after wave of barbecue boasting.



Sweet Sensation

These spices match the sweetness and succulence of tender cuts of pork, such as tenderloin or rib roast.

MAKES ABOUT 1 CUP

- 1/4 cup ground allspice
- 1/4 cup packed brown sugar
- 1/4 cup onion powder
- 2 tablespoons salt
- 2 teaspoons ground nutmeg
- 2 teaspoons ground cinnamon
- 2 teaspoons dried thyme

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.

Variation: Maple Sweet Sensation Replace the sugar and one-half of the allspice with maple sugar, available widely throughout maple-tree territory. Smoke

the rubbed meat over maple wood, too, if you have the opportunity.



BBQ TIP Avoid contaminating a large batch of rub by pouring or spooning out the amount you expect to use in a small bowl, so that the remaining portion doesn't get touched by your hands while you are rubbing down raw meat. When you have left-over rub, seal it in plastic zipper-lock bags or in jars. Keep the spice blend in a cool pantry or refrigerator until your next round of barbecuing, or try it with other preparations, such as grilling, broiling, or sautéing.

Smoky Salt

Use this robust salt in place of plain salt in or on nearly anything, from rubs to sauces, pea soup to peanuts.

MAKES 1 CUP OR MORE

- 1 cup or more coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

When you are planning to smoke any other dish, pour the salt onto a shallow pan or tray in a thin layer. Place the pan in the smoker so that juices from the other

dish or dishes cannot drip into the pan. Smoke for 20 to 30 minutes. To test whether the flavor is bold enough for you, sprinkle a bit on a cracker and taste. Continue to smoke longer if you wish. When cool, store covered in a cool, dark pantry.

Basic Black Rub

Hardly a recipe, but as essential to an outdoor cook as a little black dress is to a woman. Try it on swordfish, albacore tuna, sea scallops, or a burger.

MAKES APPROXIMATELY 1/2 CUP

6 tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper
3 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.



Java-Chile Rub

We developed this rub for pork chops, but it also works well on many cuts of beef and on quail or other game birds. Ground coffee fades in flavor quickly, so make it in small batches.

MAKES ABOUT 1 CUP

1/2 cup ground coffee
3 tablespoons ground pasilla or ancho chile
3 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.

THE BEST BBQ IN PARIS

Forget France. Tommy's serves the best barbecue in Paris, and it's in Paris, Texas. A frontier-style shack decorated with steer horns, a picture of John Wayne, and a signed photo of Reba McEntire, Tommy's specializes in beef brisket, hot link sausage, and smoked bologna. In the absence of Michelin inspectors, we give it three stars.

Southwest Heat

Hard to beat when you want some heat. Good on beef, from steak to burgers, on pork chops, even on trout. Some people like to add a few tablespoons of onion powder or onion salt to this kind of blend.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

- ½ cup ground New Mexican red chile
- ½ cup ground ancho chile
- 3 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 3 tablespoons ground cumin
- 1 tablespoon dried oregano, preferably Mexican

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.

Variation: South-of-the-Border Heat For a smoky Mexican version of the rub, substitute ground chipotle chile for one-half of the ancho chile.



BBQ TIP Chiles in a rub should leave an afterglow in the throat, not a raging conflagration. Dried ground chiles, such as ancho or New Mexican red, offer earthy savor and sweetness with a moderate level of firepower. Powders made from jalapeños and chipotles (smoked jalapeños) turn up the thermostat a little higher, and cayenne or habanero chiles can shoot the mercury right out the top.



Jamaican Jerk Rub

This rendition of the popular Jamaican spice mix is a slam-dunk with pork but also tasty on chicken and even salmon.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

6 tablespoons onion powder
6 tablespoons onion flakes
2 tablespoons ground allspice
2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
2 tablespoons cayenne
2 tablespoons sugar
4½ teaspoons dried thyme
4½ teaspoons ground cinnamon

1½ teaspoons ground nutmeg
¼ teaspoon ground habanero chile (optional)

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl, being careful to keep the incendiary habanero powder off your bare hands and away from sensitive body parts. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.

Simple Chinese Five-Spice Medley

Used on our West Coast Baby Backs, this fragrant blend adds a lovely anise-like Asian note to any pork or chicken dish.

MAKES 1 CUP

½ cup five-spice powder
½ cup packed brown sugar

Mix the spices thoroughly in a bowl. Store covered in a cool, dark pantry.



BBQ TIP You can usually find five-spice powder in the Chinese section of your supermarket or certainly in Asian markets. To make a fresher version, grind up equal amounts of cinnamon sticks, star anise, cloves, fennel seeds, and Szechwan peppercorns. The mixture will keep for several months in an airtight jar in a cool pantry.

Pastes

A PASTE IS A WET VERSION of a dry rub, a combination of seasonings bound together in a thick emulsion by liquid or fat. Occasionally called “slathers,” they add both flavor and moisture to food. Typical core ingredients range from stock to lemon juice, from oil to fresh herbs. Puréed garlic, onions, anchovies, horseradish, mustard, or even peanut butter might bind the mixture.

Dry rubs are great on traditional barbecue meats, which don’t need extra moisture, but pastes work better on some lean meats. They usually impart a milder taste than rubs, making them suitable for delicate fish or seafood preparations. Pastes are

also a good way to add herb flavors, allowing you to coat a chicken with basil or a lamb chop with mint.

A paste needs to be thick enough to adhere to the food but thin enough to smear easily. As with dry rubs, you massage it into every surface and then put the food in the refrigerator in a plastic bag to soak for an appropriate period. Pastes with fresh herbs lose their potency after a few days, but others keep for several weeks when refrigerated.

The paste preparations that follow show some of the possibilities. If none of these sounds exactly right for your favorite food, they may at least inspire your own creations.



Primo Paste

This is a basic, general-purpose paste, good for a range of lean foods, particularly turkey.

MAKES ABOUT 1 CUP

- 1 whole head of garlic, peeled
- 6 tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper
- 6 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- ¼ teaspoon cayenne or ground chipotle chile
- 6 tablespoons garlic-flavored oil

In a mortar and pestle or with a food processor, combine the paste ingredients, mashing the garlic with the pepper, salt, and cayenne or chipotle. Add the oil to

form a thick paste. Refrigerate the paste, covered, for up to 2 weeks.



BBQ TIP Oil-based pastes work especially well on fish and lean meats, such as venison, cabrito, and chicken. Experiment with oils of varied flavors, infused with garlic, basil, or other herbs. Unrefined or lightly refined oils, such as corn or peanut, add their own pleasing taste.

HEALTH FOOD

Some paste recipes promise more than others. We came across one, based on mustard, that claimed equal effectiveness as a flavoring agent and as a medicinal plaster for combating bronchial infections.



Roasted Garlic Mash

This adds depth to dishes that smoke quickly, such as boneless chicken breasts or other poultry parts, flaky white fish fillets, small whole fish, or beef tenderloin. If you like, add a teaspoon of ground cumin, oregano, or black pepper to the mixture.

MAKES ABOUT 1/2 CUP

- 2 whole heads of garlic
- 2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 2 teaspoons olive oil or vegetable oil

Break the garlic heads apart into individual cloves, but don't peel them. Place them in a cast-iron or other heavy skillet and dry-roast over medium heat until soft and brown, about 6 to 8 minutes, shaking or

stirring as needed to color evenly. Peel the garlic (a quick task once roasted) and transfer to a small bowl. Using the back of a large fork, mash the garlic lightly. Add the salt and oil and continue mashing until you have a rough purée. Cover and refrigerate until ready to use. The mixture will keep for at least a week, though it loses some complexity over time.

Name-Your-Herb Paste

Mix and match your favorite herb flavors and fragrances in this paste. We like mint with trout and lamb, basil on chicken and tuna, parsley for beef, cilantro with shrimp and salmon, and sage on cabrito, duck, and pork. Mint with cilantro is good for sea bass or fresh sardines. Lamb and chicken take to a combination of mint, basil, parsley, and cilantro if you believe, like we generally do, that more is more.

MAKES ABOUT 1 1/2 CUPS

- 1 1/2 cups fresh herbs (mint, basil, Italian flat-leaf parsley, cilantro, or sage)
- 10 to 14 garlic cloves
- 1 teaspoon salt
- 1/4 cup oil, preferably olive or another type of flavorful oil that complements your recipe

In a food processor, combine the herbs, garlic, and salt. Process until the herbs are finely chopped. Add the oil in a slow stream, mixing thoroughly. The paste should be refrigerated and used within a day or two.

Yucatecan Seasoning Paste

Called a *recado*, this mild mixture works magic on pork, whole chickens, and also fish such as snapper or grouper. The red stain comes from annatto seed, an ingredient in the achiote paste, which is available at Hispanic or Latino markets and in the Mexican foods section of many supermarkets.

MAKES ABOUT 1 CUP

3.5-ounce package achiote paste
½ medium onion, chunked
½ cup orange juice
1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

Place the ingredients in a blender or food processor and process until a smooth thick purée is formed. Cover and refrigerate until needed. The mixture keeps at least a week.

Pan-Asian Pandemonium

A little soy, a little fish sauce, and a little ginger equal a lot of pizzazz. Use a light coating of this on fish steaks, shrimp, chicken, beef short ribs, or small cuts of pork.

MAKES ABOUT ¾ CUP

½ cup roughly chopped scallions
2 walnut-size chunks fresh ginger, peeled
½ to 1 tablespoon Asian chile-garlic paste
3 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
2 tablespoons soy sauce
1 tablespoon Asian fish sauce

Place the ingredients in a blender or food processor and process until a smooth thick purée is formed. Cover and refrigerate until needed. The mixture keeps at least a week.

CAROLINA PIONEER

Skilton Dennis may have been the earliest commercial barbecue cooker in North Carolina. He smoked a few hogs in an underground pit to feed a Baptist church convocation in 1830, offering take-out pork from the back of a wagon. His great-great-grandson, Pete Jones, is still in the trade, running the Skylight Inn barbecue stand in Ayden, North Carolina.

Kentucky Pride

This smoky sweet paste can enhance better cuts of pork and beef.

MAKES ABOUT 1 1/4 CUPS

1 medium onion, preferably a sweet variety, chunked

1/4 cup bourbon

2 tablespoons packed brown sugar

2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

Combine the paste ingredients in a food processor or blender and process until the

onion is finely chopped and a thick purée forms. Refrigerate the paste, covered, for up to 2 weeks.

Variation: Texas Pride Substitute beer or tequila for the bourbon and match the paste with chicken or game birds.



Thunder Paste

A more exotic blend that's superb on chicken and shrimp.

MAKES ABOUT 1 CUP

1 small onion, chunked

1/3 cup orange juice

2 tablespoons peanut oil

2 teaspoons ground anise

1 teaspoon turmeric

1 teaspoon curry powder

1 teaspoon salt

1/2 teaspoon ground allspice

1/2 teaspoon ground cinnamon

Combine the paste ingredients in a food processor or blender and process until the onion is finely chopped and a thick purée forms. Refrigerate the paste, covered, for up to 2 weeks.

Marinades

NORMALLY A COMBINATION

of acid, oil, and spices, marinades are liquid flavoring agents used to bathe food before cooking. Like pastes, they aren't as common in barbecuing as dry rubs, but they are gaining favor. Some marinades tame an undesirable taste, as a buttermilk soak does for wild game, but most often they are intended to complement and enrich the food's natural flavor.

The acid might be vinegar, lemon or other fruit juice, milk, yogurt, or wine. The fat in a marinade is normally a vegetable oil, since butter and bacon drippings coagulate when chilled. The proportions depend a lot on the type of food you're cooking, with the amount of oil increasing substantially with fish and lean cuts of meat. Spices and herbs are used in assertive quantities because their pungency is diminished by the soaking process.

Some people think marinades tenderize meat, but that's not quite accurate. Actually the liquid softens tissue, a subtle but important distinction. Food marinated for

too long becomes mushy and flabby. Extra time doesn't help the flavoring process either, because marinades don't penetrate much beyond the surface of the food and don't need to go any deeper.

Prepare marinades right before they are needed and don't reuse them with other raw foods. If you plan to use a marinade for mopping or basting, or as part of a sauce, first boil the mixture vigorously to kill any harmful bacteria.

Marinate food in a glass, stainless steel, or plastic container; aluminum can react with the acid. Choose a shallow dish just larger than the food, a zipper-lock freezer bag, or, for big cuts of meat, an industrial-size food-safe plastic bag or an oven-roasting bag. Bag-wrapped food is easier to stash in the fridge and requires only about half the amount of liquid to cover the food.

Turn food you are marinating once or twice during the process to make sure you're saturating all surfaces. Figure that 2 cups of marinade will flavor about 2 pounds of meat.



James Beard's Basic Barbecue Marinade

The master of American cooking, James Beard, used a marinade similar to this on many outdoor dishes. Its slight Asian accent mates well with salmon, pork, chicken, and duck.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

½ cup soy sauce
½ cup dry sherry
½ cup strong brewed tea
2 tablespoons honey
2 tablespoons peanut oil
1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
½ teaspoon ground anise

½ teaspoon ground cloves
1 garlic clove, minced

Combine the ingredients in a food processor. The marinade can be refrigerated for several days.

AN EARLY INSPIRATION

James Beard helped inspire the suburban resurgence of outdoor cooking after the Second World War. His *Cook It Outdoors* (1941, M. Barrows and Company) and the 1960 *Treasury of Outdoor Cooking* (Golden Press) are gems of their era. *The Complete Book of Outdoor Cookery* (1955, Doubleday & Company), which Beard co-authored with Helen Evans Brown, remains a grilling classic.



James Bond's Basic Barbecue Marinade

If you like vodka martinis as much as James Bond does, you'll relish this marinade on seafood and chicken.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

1½ cups vodka
½ cup dry vermouth
3 tablespoons vegetable oil
3 tablespoons minced onion
Juice of 1 large lemon

Combine the ingredients. Mr. Bond would implore you to shake it rather than stir it. The marinade is best the day it's made.



Red Wine Marinade

A stout, classic combo for beef and venison.

MAKES ABOUT 2¾ CUPS

2 cups dry red wine
½ cup red wine vinegar
¼ cup oil, preferably olive or another type of flavorful oil that complements your recipe
10 to 12 fresh sage leaves or 2 teaspoons dried sage
2 garlic cloves, minced

Combine the ingredients in a food processor or blender. The marinade is best the day it's made.



BBQ TIP Don't waste money on expensive wines for marinades, but do use something that's good enough to drink—you will be eating it in your food, after all.

Stout Beer Marinade

No barbecue is complete without beer so you might as well give your food a swig too. Stout adds a good yeasty, malty character to ribs and other pork, but if you want a less assertive taste, you can substitute a pale ale or other lighter beer. Just avoid “lite” beer, which is simply too lightweight.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

12 ounces stout or other dark beer such as a porter
1 medium onion, sliced thin
3 tablespoons vegetable oil
3 tablespoons white or cider vinegar
2 tablespoons molasses
2 tablespoons mustard, preferably brown, Dijon, or honey-Dijon
2 teaspoons bruised caraway seeds (optional)
1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Whisk together the ingredients in a medium bowl. This is best used the day you assemble it.

Variation: Ginger Beer Marinade Combine the beer, onion, oil, and molasses with a “thumb”-size chunk of ginger, sliced into thin rounds, then bruised with the side of a knife. It’s also a winner with pork.

Jalapeño-Lime Marinade

This feisty mixture adds a kick to shrimp and chicken.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

⅓ cup pickled jalapeño slices
¼ cup pickling liquid from jar or can of pickled jalapeños
Juice of 2 limes
¼ cup corn oil, preferably unrefined
3 tablespoons minced cilantro
4 scallions, sliced
3 garlic cloves, minced

Purée the marinade ingredients in a food processor or blender. The marinade is best the day it’s made.

Variation: Lime-Jalapeño Marinade Turn around the flavors and the name for a marinade that’s better on pork butt or shoulder. Simply replace the lime juice with a 6-ounce can of limeade concentrate.

Red-Eye Marinade

An eye-opener any time of day—try it with pork or beef.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS

2 cups strong brewed coffee

1 medium onion, chunked

½ cup cider vinegar

¼ cup molasses

Blend the ingredients in a blender. The marinade is best the day it's made.



BBQ TIP Since marinades flavor only the surface of food, the larger the surface area relative to weight, the more of the marinade taste you will get. A flank steak, for example, drinks up the juice like a jilted cowboy out on the town.

MACHO MARINADE

Former Houston Oilers star Earl Campbell concocted a marinade for beef brisket that was as powerful as his running game. He based the unusual mixture on brown sugar—as much as two pounds' worth—black pepper, garlic, meat tenderizer, and Lawry's sauce. You wouldn't want to trot out onto the field right after that kind of meal.



Cheryl's Cider Soak

Here's a fruity favorite of ours for pork, duck, and game birds. We skip the oil when we use the soak for ribs or other fatty cuts of pork.

MAKES ABOUT 2³/₄ CUPS

- 1½ cups apple cider
- ¼ cup cider vinegar
- ½ medium onion, minced
- 3 tablespoons vegetable oil (optional)
- 1½ tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 1 teaspoon ground cinnamon
- 1 teaspoon dried thyme

Combine the ingredients in a food processor or blender. The marinade can be refrigerated for several days.



BBQ TIP Cheryl's Cider Soak is a good example of a marinade that can do double-duty as a mop. For basting food, simply heat the ingredients in a saucepan and apply the warm liquid to the vittles while they're cooking. If you marinated meat in the mixture first, bring the marinade to a vigorous boil before using it as a mop.

Mojo Marinade

Among all the great flavors in *nuevo latino*—and *viejo latino*—cooking, mojo may translate best to barbecue. The tangy citrus and herb concoction is excellent for small cuts of pork, chicken breasts, and the occasional smoked onion. Always save some for a table sauce, its original purpose.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

- ¾ cup freshly squeezed orange juice, plus 2 tablespoons orange zest
- ¾ cup freshly squeezed lime juice
- 6 to 8 garlic cloves, minced
- ½ cup chopped cilantro
- ¾ cup olive oil
- 2 teaspoons cumin
- 2 teaspoons dried oregano
- 1 teaspoon salt, or more to taste

Whisk the ingredients together in a bowl. Use within a few hours for best flavor.

Variation: Spiked Mojo Marinade Juice up the marinade with ¼ cup light or dark rum. It adds a little extra caramelization on the surface of the food, not to mention a little extra marination for the cook.

Mops

MOPS, OR BASTES, play an important role in traditional barbecuing. These liquids that you apply to meat during the cooking process are an old and honored way of keeping food moist and adding an extra layer of flavor. Their usefulness today, however, varies considerably, depending on the kind of cooking equipment you have. We include mops in most of our barbecue recipes, but we make them optional because the design of some smokers precludes or discourages basting. See page 49 for guidance on whether “To Mop or Not.”

A mop can be something as simple as beer or meat stock, or a combination of ingredients as complex as an IRS form. Butter or oil are primary elements when cooking fish, chicken, and other food that dries out easily. It's also common to use vinegar or lemon juice, some Worcestershire, and a healthy dose of the same seasonings you used in your rub, paste, or marinade. In some cases, the marinade itself simply becomes the mop after a vigorous boiling.

You usually baste the food with a cotton-string tool that resembles a minia-

ture floor mop, often available at restaurant supply stores or businesses specializing in outdoor cooking supplies. Keep the liquid warm during the cooking process to kill any bacteria the tool might pick up from the surface of the food and to avoid lowering the temperature of the food. When you're working with a pit, the baste can simmer in a heavy pan on top of the firebox; otherwise you may need to keep it hot on the stove inside. Replenish the liquid as needed. The long cooking concentrates the flavor and creates an increasingly robust brew that is sometimes boiled and served as a table sauce with the meat.

Foods with little or no fat may require regular mopping, as our recipes indicate, but don't overdo it. Every time you lift the lid of your smoker, you lower the temperature inside and increase the cooking time. That's desirable only if the fire gets too hot, when it helps to release heat and cool the meat with a little moisture.

We suggest many different bastes in our recipes later in the book, but the ones that follow are representative of the range. They demonstrate the core principles and ingredients, and may give you ideas for developing special mops of your own.

Southern Sop

This is one version, among hundreds, of the traditional pork baste used throughout the South.

MAKES ABOUT 3½ CUPS

2 cups cider vinegar
3 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
2 tablespoons salt
1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
1 tablespoon paprika
1 tablespoon cayenne

Combine the ingredients with 1 cup of water in a saucepan. Heat the mop and use it warm.



Basic Beer Mop

Anything from Texas brisket to Boston butt will happily lap up this brew. If you think more spice is nice, add a few slices of pickled or fresh jalapeño or serrano chile.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS

12 ounces beer
½ cup cider vinegar
¼ cup vegetable oil
½ medium onion, chopped or sliced in thin rings
2 garlic cloves, minced
1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

1 tablespoon Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26) or other dry rub or seasoning that complements the flavor of your dish

Combine the ingredients and ½ cup water in a saucepan. Heat the mop and use it warm.

Lemon Splash

A delicious baste for chicken, fish, and seafood. Use the stock and rub that match your main ingredient.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS

1½ cups chicken stock or fish stock
½ cup freshly squeezed lemon juice
½ medium onion, chopped
½ cup unsalted butter
1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
1 tablespoon yellow mustard
2 teaspoons Poultry Perfect Rub (page 28) or
Seafaring Seafood Rub (page 28)

Combine the ingredients in a saucepan. Heat the mop and use it warm.

Variation: Tarragon Vinegar Splash This makes a good change of pace on the same foods as the lemon version. Substitute tarragon vinegar for the lemon juice and Dijon mustard for the yellow mustard.

PRESIDENTIAL PIG

On Labor Day weekend Colonial Williamsburg stages an authentic version of an eighteenth-century Virginia barbecue, similar to ones attended by George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, and other early American leaders. The pitmasters cook a whole hog the original way, basting with saltwater and butter.



Lightning Mop

We developed this for our Hot Times Jalapeño Turkey Breast, but it's also good with other poultry and shrimp dishes.

MAKES ABOUT 4 CUPS

- 3 cups chicken or turkey stock
- ½ cup vegetable oil
- ¼ cup minced pickled jalapeños
- ¼ cup jalapeño jelly

Combine the ingredients in a saucepan. Heat the mop and use it warm.

Variation: Asian Lightning Mop Drop the jalapeños and the jalapeño jelly. Instead add ¼ cup soy sauce, 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar, 1 tablespoon or more Asian chile-garlic paste or sauce, and 3 tablespoons water. Still good on poultry and shrimp, and also on flank steak.

THE OL' BLASTER

C. Clark "Smoky" Hale won renown in barbecue circles as an "Ol' baster" extraordinaire. In his folksy *Great American Barbecue Instruction Book* (1985, Abacus Publishing), Smoky argues that the basting sauce or mop is the secret of great barbecue, capable of making "a pine knot tender and delicious."



Pop Mop

Unless you brag too much, no one is likely to guess the source of the interesting sweet flavor in your food. The mop is especially good on onions.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS

- 3 cups Dr Pepper, Coca-Cola, or R.C. Cola
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil

Combine the ingredients in a saucepan. Heat the mop and use it warm.

The equipment you use for barbecuing determines whether and how often you baste food while it cooks. We list mops as “optional” in most of our barbecue recipes, but you should use them if they are appropriate to your style of smoker. In a few cases, we suggest basting food before or after cooking, rather than during the process, and in those unusual situations, the mop works well with any kind of equipment.

WOOD-BURNING PITS Mops were made for pits. If you burn logs or wood chunks in a manufactured or homemade pit of traditional design, basting your food will improve its quality. Mop as often as the recipes indicate.

OUTDOOR OVENS Never apply a mop during cooking in an oven that operates on electrical power. It’s not only dangerous, but, in some cases at least, also unnecessary. In ovens that seal as tightly as the Cookshack, for example, food retains its internal moisture and doesn’t require any basting. Follow the manufacturer’s directions with other brands of smoker ovens.

CHARCOAL AND GAS GRILLS You should baste food in a grill, but not as often as you do in a wood-burning pit because grills generally lose more of their heat when you lift the lid. In a conventional charcoal grill, we mop only when we have the top off to add charcoal or pieces of wood. In an oven-style grill, such as the Hasty-Bake, we mop with about half the frequency we would in a wood-burning pit.

VERTICAL WATER SMOKERS Basting isn’t really necessary in a water smoker because the cooking process itself adds moisture to food. We like to mop occasionally for the flavor value, but we limit the frequency for the same reason we do in a charcoal grill—heat loss. We baste every 1 to 2 hours, or when we have the lid off for another purpose.

Pork You Can Pull Apart



When you're talking barbecue in the South, you're talking pork. To express a preference for barbecued beef or smoked fish is akin to announcing that you're the grandchild of General William Tecumseh Sherman. You can even stir up a hell of an argument over the *part* of the pig you like. In some areas of the Carolinas you go whole hog or nothing, barbecuing the entire animal and eating it all in a variety of forms. Just a county away, folks won't touch anything except the shoulder; down the road, the ribs are the only cut that matters.

If you get beyond the feud about parts, you're still confronted with passionate differences about saucing and serving the pork. Some pitmasters base their sauce on ketchup, others won't let a tomato through the door. Some think spice is nice, others are set on sweet, and still others won't abide anything on their meat. The pork may be pulled, chopped, or minced. If you order a dinner plate, the accompaniments could be anything from hush puppies to burgoo. If you opt for a sandwich, you can usually count on a white bun or bread, but you never know whether the coleslaw will be inside or on the side.

In truth, barbecued pork is good any of these ways and many others. Our favorite version is always what's in front of us at the moment, and right now that's a whole heap of deliciously different recipes.

The Renowned Mister Brown	53	Weeknight Pork Tenderloin	80
Red-Eye Butt	54	Sweet and Fruity Pork Tenderloin	81
Citrus-Marinated Pork Butt	56	Pork Loin Mexicana	83
Perfect Picnic	58	Purely Pork Chops	84
Boston Bay Jerked Pork	60	Stuffed Chops	86
Going Whole Hog	61	East L.A. Pork Tacos	87
Miss White's Delights	62	Creole Crown Roast	89
Memphis Mustard Pork Sandwich	64	Ca-Rib-bean Roast	90
Lone Star Spareribs	65	Hill Country Links	92
Kansas City Sloppy Ribs	67	Store-Bought Hot Brats	93
Bourbon-Glazed Ribs	69	Italian Sausage Torpedos	95
Southern Rib Sandwich	71	Cha-Cha Chorizo	96
Apple City Baby Back Ribs	72	Cajun Tasso	97
West Coast Baby Backs	73	B.C. Canadian Bacon	98
Thai-phoon Baby Backs	74	Triple Play Tube Steak	99
Cajun Country Ribs	76	Monday Night Ham Loaf	100
Ginger-Glazed Ham	77	Supper Spread	101
Maple-Bourbon Ham	78	Barbecue Spaghetti	102



The Renowned Mr. Brown

In old Southern slang, “Mr. Brown” is the dark, smoky outside part of barbecued pork, usually the shoulder. This is the traditional cooking style, perfected by generations of pitmasters to give Mr. Brown his deserved renown.

SERVES 8 TO 10

SOUTHERN SUCCOR RUB

¼ cup freshly ground black pepper

¼ cup paprika

¼ cup turbinado sugar

2 tablespoons salt

2 teaspoons dry mustard

1 teaspoon cayenne

6-pound to 8-pound Boston butt

SOUTHERN SOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Southern Succor Rub

2 cups cider vinegar

3 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

2 tablespoons salt

1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

1 tablespoon paprika

1 tablespoon cayenne

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350),
Carolina Red (page 350), or Vaunted
Vinegar Sauce (page 349) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small

bowl. Massage the pork well with about half of the rub. Transfer the pork to a plastic bag, and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the pork from the refrigerator. Pat down the butt with another coating of rub. Let the pork sit at room temperature for about 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.


4. If you plan to baste the pork (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir any remaining rub together with the mop ingredients and 1 cup water in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Transfer the pork to the smoker and cook it for about 1½ hours per pound, or until it’s falling-apart tender. Mop the pork about once an hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

DOWNTOWN MR. BROWN

Leonard Heuberger conceived the most famous barbecue sign in the country, a fixture for many years at Leonard’s in Memphis. A neon pig in top hat and tails, swinging a cane, announces, “Mr. Brown Goes To Town.”

6. Remove the pork from the smoker and let it sit for about 15 minutes, until cool enough to handle. Pull off chunks of the meat, and either shred or chop them as you wish. Make sure each serving has some of the darker, chewier Mr. Brown along with the lighter interior meat. If you wish, serve the pork with Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce, Carolina Red, or, our favorite, Vaunted Vinegar Sauce.



BBQ TIP Butchers normally cut pork shoulder into two big pieces of meat, the Boston butt and the picnic, both likely to weigh 6 to 8 pounds on the average hog. If you want to cook the whole shoulder, an overnight job, you may have to make a special order in advance. Most backyard barbecuers and restaurants these days are satisfied with just the butt, the portion that has the least bone.



Red-Eye Butt

Anything as tasty as a barbecued shoulder warrants a little experimentation. Here we add some extra tang, using an old American pork enhancer—coffee—and we speed up the cooking time by starting with just half of a Boston butt, a common supermarket cut.

SERVES 4 TO 6

RED-EYE MARINADE AND MOP

2 cups strong coffee

2 cups cider vinegar

1 medium onion, chunked

½ pork butt, 3½ to 4 pounds

Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353) (optional)

½ cup molasses

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a blender. Pour the marinade over the pork in a plastic bag. Refrigerate the meat overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, drain the pork, reserving all of the marinade and

adding 1 cup of water to it if you plan to baste the meat. If your smoker isn't appropriate for basting, save only 1 cup of marinade with the onion solids. Let the pork sit at room temperature for 30 to 40 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Bring the reserved marinade to a boil over high heat. Reduce the heat to a simmer and cook for several minutes. Keep the liquid warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the pork to the smoker and cook it for 4 hours. Baste the meat with the warmed marinade at 45-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"). After 4 hours, wrap the pork in heavy-duty foil, pouring about $\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 cup of the warmed marinade and the onion solids over the meat. Discard any remaining marinade. Seal the edges of the foil well. Return the pork to the smoker for about 2 more hours, cooking it to the fall-apart stage.

6. Allow the pork to sit at room temperature for 10 to 15 minutes before pulling the pork apart in shreds. Offer Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce on the side, if you wish.

Variation: Java-Chile Butt For a quicker approach to the coffee accent, skip the marinade and, instead, rub the meat with Java-Chile Rub (page 31), saving at least 1 tablespoon of the mixture. Let the butt sit at room temperature while you fire up your smoker. If you want to use a mop, combine 1 cup of distilled or cider vinegar mixed with an equal amount of water and the reserved tablespoon of dry rub.



BBQ TIP Pork works better than any other meat for barbecuing on a charcoal grill. The Red-Eye Butt is particularly well suited, and so is The Renowned Mr. Brown (page 53), using half of a butt instead of the full cut.

COOKIN' COAST-TO-COAST

In the past two decades, the number of barbecue cook-offs and festivals around the country has grown from a few dozen to many hundred. They are scattered from Florida to Alaska, from California to Massachusetts, and the prizes range from a ribbon up to thousands of dollars in cash in big national competitions.

Citrus-Marinated Pork Butt

We based this idea on *lechón asado*, a celebratory spit- or pit-roasted favorite in Puerto Rico, Mexico, and other Latin American countries. To turn this into a tasty sandwich, pile the pork and fixings onto a crusty roll or section of French bread, or onto warm corn tortillas.

SERVES 6 TO 8

½ pork butt (Boston butt), 3 to 3½ pounds

YUCATECAN SEASONING PASTE

3.5-ounce package achiote paste

½ medium onion, chunked

½ cup orange juice

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

CITRUS MOP (OPTIONAL)

One-half 6-ounce can frozen orange juice concentrate, thawed

½ cup white vinegar

¼ cup freshly squeezed lime juice

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

CITRUS SAUCE

½ cup sugar

½ cup white wine vinegar

½ cup freshly squeezed lime juice

One-half 6-ounce can frozen orange juice concentrate, thawed

2 tablespoons light rum

1 garlic clove, minced

½ teaspoon salt

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

2 to 3 large ripe avocados, peeled, pitted, and sliced shortly before serving

2 medium to large oranges, peeled and cut into segments

Thin-sliced scallion rings

Minced cilantro

Lime wedges, for garnish

1. At least 4 hours and up to the night before you plan to barbecue, cut the butt in half lengthwise, forming two long strips. Place the pork in a plastic bag or shallow, nonreactive dish.

2. Place the seasoning paste ingredients in a blender or food processor and process until a smooth thick purée is formed. If you are planning to baste the meat (See page 49, “To Mop or Not”), set aside 1 tablespoon of the seasoning paste. Rub the rest of the mixture thickly over the pork and refrigerate.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Let the pork sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

5. If you are going to baste the meat, combine the remaining seasoning paste with the mop ingredients and 1 cup water and warm over low heat.

6. Transfer the pork to the smoker and cook until the internal temperature reaches 165°F to 170°F, about 3 hours. Baste the

meat with the warm mop at 45-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. After the pork reaches the desired internal temperature, wrap the two chunks together tightly in heavy-duty foil. Return the pork to the smoker for about 1 more hour, cooking it until very tender and falling apart.

7. While the pork smokes, make the sauce. Warm the sugar over low heat in a heavy saucepan. When the sugar is melted and golden brown, pour in the vinegar, watching out for the steam that immediately forms. Raise the heat to medium and add the lime juice, orange juice concentrate, rum, garlic, and salt, and simmer for 5 minutes. Stir in the butter and warm the sauce over low heat.

8. Remove the pork from the smoker and let it sit for 15 minutes, until cool enough to handle. Neatly shred the pork and arrange it on a platter. Spoon several tablespoons of sauce over the pork, then pour the rest of the sauce into a small bowl to pass separately. Scatter avocado chunks,

orange segments, scallions, and cilantro over the pork, garnish with the lime wedges, and serve.



BBQ TIP You have more control over your cooking temperature in a log-burning pit than in other kinds of smokers, but the mechanisms of control are not always well explained in the owner's manual. First in importance is the size and intensity of the fire. In an efficient, well-constructed pit you seldom need more than three logs burning at once, or more than a small flame going. The air intake control is a close second in significance. You open it to increase the draft—which stirs the flame and raises the heat—or close it to dampen the blaze and reduce the temperature. The outtake adjustment on the smoke stack is most useful in reining back a fire that's gotten too hot. Unless that happens, leave it fully open to keep the smoke circulating freely. If it's shut down for an extended period, food will get sooty.

GIVE A CURTSY, BOYS

The Blue Ridge BBQ Festival in June in Tyron, North Carolina, gives awards to cooks, of course, but also to pigs that are almost too pretty to barbecue. Bring your pit to enter the cook-off, an official state championship event, and dress up a shapely pig to get it crowned Queen of the North Carolina Hogs. If you don't make the cut either way, there's still plenty of great bluegrass music to enjoy. Jim Tabb, the dean of North Carolina barbecue, founded the festival to honor the state's proud pork heritage.

Perfect Picnic

The bony portion of a pork shoulder, the picnic, is as delectable as the butt end, but slightly different in flavor, closer in taste to ham.

SERVES 8 TO 10

PERFECT PICNIC RUB

5 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

¼ cup turbinado sugar

3 tablespoons paprika

2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 tablespoon dry mustard

2 teaspoons onion powder

1 teaspoon cayenne

6-pound to 8-pound pork picnic

PICNIC MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Perfect Picnic Rub

3 cups cider vinegar

1 medium onion, minced

¼ cup freshly ground black pepper

2 tablespoons salt

1 tablespoon dry mustard

4 garlic cloves, minced

1 teaspoon cayenne

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350),
Vaunted Vinegar Sauce (page 349), or Creole
Classic Barbecue Sauce (page 358) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the pork well with about

half of the rub. Transfer the pork to a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the pork from the refrigerator. Pat down the pork with another coating of rub. Let the pork sit at room temperature for about 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.


4. If you plan to baste the pork (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir any remaining rub together with the mop ingredients and 1 cup water in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Transfer the pork to the smoker and cook it for about 1½ hours per pound, or until the internal temperature reaches 170°F to 180°F. Mop the meat every 50 to 60 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. Remove the pork from the smoker and let it sit for about 15 minutes, until cool enough to handle. Pull off chunks of the meat, then either shred or chop them as you like. If you wish, serve the pork with Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce, Vaunted

Vinegar Sauce, or Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce.

Serving Suggestion *A smoked picnic makes for a memorable small-scale “pig-picking.” Add Creamy Coleslaw (page 369), Candied Sweet Potatoes (page 378), Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles (page 411), and maybe a pot of Brunswick Stew (page 370). For a prodigious finish, offer Prodigal Pecan Pie (page 421) for dessert.*



BBQ TIP The time needed to bring a smoker to the proper temperature for barbecuing varies from less than 5 minutes to as much as 1 hour, depending on the style of smoker, your fire-building techniques, the moisture content of the wood or charcoal, and the weather. Our recipe instructions assume an average warm-up time of 30 to 45 minutes. If your smoker requires more or less time, you may need to adjust the sequence of recipe steps accordingly.

BARBECUE BOOKS GALORE

If you want to pig out on barbecue books, follow our footsteps to the country's best dealer in outdoor cookbooks, Pig Out Publications in Kansas City. Owner Karen Adler, who is also a cookbook author and publisher herself, stocks virtually everything on the market, from best-sellers to obscure gems. Call her at 816-531-3119 for a catalog or an appointment to visit her retail outlet, or just stop by her virtual shop at www.pigoutpublications.com.



Boston Bay Jerked Pork

Jamaica's Boston Bay is the spiritual home of jerk pork, where the meat is cooked over smoldering allspice wood at several small enterprising shacks. The first time we visited the country, nearly twenty-five years ago, an escort from the tourism office tried everything to keep us away from the jerk shacks, mistakenly thinking we would prefer fancy Continental-style restaurants. Finally he realized we were serious about sampling the then little-known specialty, a savory, smoky delight. For home barbecuing, we like to match the jerk rub with the robust flavor of the pork picnic, but the lively seasoning also works well with the butt portion of a shoulder as well as ribs.

SERVES 8 TO 10

JAMAICAN JERK RUB

- 6 tablespoons onion powder
- 6 tablespoons dried onion flakes
- 2 tablespoons ground allspice
- 2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
- 2 tablespoons cayenne
- 2 tablespoons sugar
- 4½ teaspoons dried thyme
- 4½ teaspoons ground cinnamon
- 1½ teaspoons ground nutmeg
- ¼ teaspoon ground habanero chile (optional)

6-pound to 8-pound pork picnic

JERK MOP (OPTIONAL)

- Remaining Jamaican Jerk Rub
- 3 cups cider vinegar
- 1 medium onion, sliced thin
- 4 garlic cloves, sliced thin

Mango-Habanero Hellfire (page 365),
Jamaican Barbecue Sauce (page 359),
or South Florida Citrus Sauce (page 363)
(optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the pork well with about half of the rub. Transfer the pork to a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.
2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the pork from the refrigerator. Pat down the pork with another coating of rub. Let the pork sit at room temperature for about 45 minutes.
3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
4. If you plan to baste the pork (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir any remaining rub together with the mop ingredients and 1 cup water in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.
5. Transfer the pork to the smoker and cook it for about 1½ hours per pound, or until falling-apart tender. Mop the meat

every 50 to 60 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. Remove the pork from the smoker and let it sit for about 15 minutes, until cool

enough to handle. Pull off chunks of the meat, then either shred or chop them as you like. If you wish, serve the pork with Mango-Habanero Hellfire, Jamaican Barbecue Sauce, or South Florida Citrus Sauce.

Going Whole Hog

If you have a large barbecue pit, a few assistants, and an urge for the ultimate challenge, you should tackle a whole hog. The quintessential barbecue meat of the South for a couple of centuries, it remains the first choice of many prominent pitmasters. Among all the experts, no one did a better job than the late Jim Quessenberry, founder and leader of the Arkansas Trav'lers barbecue team. We had the honor of cooking with the Trav'lers one year at the Memphis in May World Championship Barbecue Contest, where Jim taught us his techniques.

As Quessenberry said, "The most important factor in whole hog is in fact the hog, himself." Bribe your butcher for the best animal in the area. Jim got his hogs from a Mennonite farmer in Tennessee who custom raised them on corn for a firm white meat that's as mild as turkey. The butcher should gut the hog, skin it, and trim the outside fat to a 1/4-inch thickness.

SERVES HALF OF ARKANSAS

1 full-grown hog, 120 to 150 pounds, skinned and trimmed

10 to 15 cups Southern Succor Rub (page 27)

QUESSENBERRY'S QUINTESSENTIAL HOG MOP

3 quarts cider vinegar

3/4 cup salt

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350), Carolina Red (page 350), or Vaunted Vinegar Sauce (page 349) (optional)

1. Fire up the pit, preferably with a combination of hickory and oak, and bring it to a temperature of 250°F.

2. Rub the hog thoroughly with the dry spices and lift it onto the pit, belly side down. If the pit has an offset firebox, position the head facing away from the fire and cover the hams loosely with aluminum foil.

3. Combine the mop ingredients in a large saucepan with 1½ quarts water and warm over low heat.

4. Every hour or so, sprinkle on more dry spices or mop the meat with the vinegar mixture, alternating between the two applications.

5. Maintain a steady cooking temperature of 200°F to 250°F for 18 to 20 hours, or

until the internal temperature of the meat is 165°F to 170°F.

6. While the fire dies, allow the hog to sit in the pit for several hours before carving. Serve accompanied by Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce, Carolina Red, or Vaunted Vinegar Sauce, if you wish.

DUELING DICTIONARIES

The North Carolina Pork Producers Association improved on Mr. Webster in its definition of barbecue: "1. The premiere ethnic food of North Carolina. 2. Pig pickin'. 3. Catalyst for great debate. 4. A method of cooking. 5. Pig as a culinary art. 6. A cultural rite. 7. All of the above."

Miss White's Delights

Most of the time Southerners serve pork shoulder in a sandwich, a simple concept that's been perfected to a folk art. This traditional sandwich, Carolinas-style, blends a bit of The Renowned Mr. Brown with a pile of stringy "pulled" pieces of "Miss White," the luscious inside meat.

The slaw and sauce can be made a day ahead of serving, if desired.

SERVES 6 TO 8

CAROLINA SANDWICH SLAW

2 cups chopped cabbage

2 tablespoons minced onion

2 tablespoons white vinegar

1½ tablespoons mayonnaise

2 teaspoons sugar

¼ teaspoon salt

Generous grinding of black pepper

VAUNTED VINEGAR SAUCE

1 cup white vinegar

1 tablespoon sugar

1 teaspoon salt

½ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

½ teaspoon cayenne or ground hot red chile flakes

About 3 cups pulled or chopped smoked pork shoulder, such as meat from The Renowned Mr. Brown (page 53), Red-Eye Butt (page 54), Perfect Picnic (page 58), or Going Whole Hog (page 61), warmed

6 to 8 spongy white bread buns

1. To prepare the slaw, mix all the ingredients together in a bowl. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 30 minutes.
2. To prepare the sauce, combine all the ingredients in a bowl and stir until the sugar dissolves. Refrigerate the sauce, too, if you are not planning to use it within the next hour. It can be served cold or reheated.
3. Place the pork on a serving platter along with the buns. Let each person make his or her own sandwich, piling portions of the coleslaw, pork, and sauce on the bun, then squishing the bun together so that

the meat juices and sauce mingle. Devour immediately.

Serving Suggestion Offer Peppery 'Pups (page 385), our Carolinas-style hushpuppies, on the side and maybe Moon Pies (see page 438) for dessert.



BBQ TIP Don't try to slice a barbecued butt with a knife to make sandwiches or anything else. If it's cooked right, the meat is easy to pick or pull apart when it's still warm, and that's the time-honored way to serve it. Allow the pork to cool a little, but not for too long, and use gloves or a fork. The only role for a knife is to chop or mince the pieces of meat after they are pulled off, and that's an optional step.

HOTTER THAN SEX

There may be religious, political, athletic, or sexual images that stir deeper emotions—*may be*—but nothing in the realm of Southern food is regarded with more passionate enthusiasm by the faithful than a perfectly cooked and seasoned pork shoulder or slab of ribs." John Egerton, *Southern Food* (1987, Knopf)



Memphis Mustard Pork Sandwich

This is a tasty variation on the standard pork sandwich, based on a version we had in Memphis at Payne's, a former gas station converted mainly in its menu of fuels. The slaw and sauce can be made a day ahead of serving, if desired.

SERVES 6 TO 8

MEMPHIS MUSTARD SLAW

- 2 cups chopped cabbage
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup minced onion
- $2\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons yellow mustard
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons white vinegar
- $\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon sugar
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

MEMPHIS MAGIC BARBECUE SAUCE

- 3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup minced onion
- 1 cup tomato sauce
- 1 cup white vinegar
- 3 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 teaspoon sugar
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- $\frac{1}{8}$ teaspoon cayenne or ground hot red chile flakes
- Dash of Tabasco or other hot red pepper sauce

About 3 cups pulled or chopped smoked pork shoulder, such as meat from The Renowned Mr. Brown (page 53), Red-Eye Butt (page 54), Perfect Picnic (page 58), or Going Whole Hog (page 61), warmed

6 to 8 spongy white bread buns

1. To make the slaw, mix all the ingredients in a bowl. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 30 minutes.
2. To make the sauce, melt the butter in a heavy saucepan over medium heat. Add the onion and sauté until softened. Mix in the remaining ingredients and simmer until the sauce has thickened and reduced, about 25 minutes. Refrigerate the sauce, too. It can be served cold or reheated.
3. To serve, place the pork on a serving platter along with the buns. Let each person make his or her own sandwich, piling portions of the slaw, pork, and sauce on the bun, then squishing the bun together

WHAT ABOUT SMOKIN' JOE AND THE BAR BE DOLLS?

Say you're going to start a barbecue cook-off team. You need a name obviously, and maybe you're pondering something like "4 Men in Heat" or "Your Butts on Fire." It turns out that both of those names are taken, as you can discover at www.bbqteamnames.com, which lists thousands of monikers on hundreds of Web pages. It's a hoot to read.

so that the meat juices and sauce mingle. Chow down.

Variation: Cracklin' Cornbread Sandwich In some scattered spots, particularly in Kentucky, people like their barbecue sandwiches on cornbread. If you want to try the idea, pile the pork on Cracklin' Cornbread (page 387).



BBQ TIP Resist any upscale urge you may have to improve on the soft, spongy white buns traditionally used for barbecue sandwiches, unless you want to try cornbread. A “whole-grain sesame seed sourdough baguette” won’t soak up enough juice to do the sandwich justice. Besides, it wouldn’t be sloppy enough either.



Lone Star Spareribs

In Kansas City, Memphis, and other rib capitals, most barbecuers cook in a “wet” style, applying a sauce near the end of the cooking and again before serving. In Texas, where people love to be contrary, the ribs are often left “dry,” as they are here.

SERVES 6

BARBECUED RIB RUB

1/3 cup freshly ground black pepper

1/4 cup paprika

2 tablespoons sugar

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 tablespoon chili powder

1 1/2 teaspoons garlic powder

1 1/2 teaspoons onion powder

3 full slabs of pork spareribs, “St. Louis cut” (trimmed of the chine bone and brisket flap), preferably 3 pounds each or less

BASIC BEER MOP (OPTIONAL)

12 ounces beer

1/2 cup cider vinegar

1/4 cup vegetable oil

1/2 medium onion, chopped

2 garlic cloves, minced

1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

1 tablespoon Barbecued Rib Rub

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Apply the rub evenly to the ribs,

reserving about half of the spice mixture. Place the slabs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the ribs from the refrigerator. Pat them down with the remaining rub, reserving 1 tablespoon of it if you plan to use the mop. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 30 to 40 minutes. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. If you are going to baste the ribs (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix together the ingredients with the remaining rub and $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a large saucepan. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.

4. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for 5 to 6 hours, turning and basting them with the mop about once an

hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

5. When ready, the meat should be well-done and falling off the bones. Allow the slabs to sit for 10 minutes before slicing them into individual ribs.



BBQ TIP We suggest different cooking times for our various rib recipes, but you may want to adjust the times for your taste. Spareribs are usually done in 3½ to 4 hours, when you can crack them apart with a gloved hand. At that point the meat is firm, chewy, and juicy. If you prefer the ribs crunchier, leaner, and falling apart, as we do with “dry” styles, cook them longer, about 5 hours for a 3-pound slab or up to 6 hours for a larger slab.

CRACKLIN’ RIBS

Most Memphis barbecue restaurants serve their ribs wet, but the Rendezvous downtown has probably sold more dry ribs than any place in the country. Layered with spices, the ribs come out of the kitchen as crunchy as corn chips, a perfect accompaniment to the barrels of beer served nightly in the raucous rathskeller.



Kansas City Sloppy Ribs

Kansas City folks love to make a mess with ribs, layering them with so much sweet, hot sauce that you're licking your fingers as often as you're licking your chops. Oh, mercy!

SERVES 6

KC RIB RUB

1 cup packed brown sugar

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup paprika

2 $\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

2 $\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons chili powder

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons garlic powder

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons onion powder

1 to 2 teaspoons cayenne

3 full slabs of pork spareribs, "St. Louis cut" (trimmed of the chine bone and brisket flap), preferably 3 pounds each or less

Struttin' Sauce (page 347), Boydesque Brew (page 348), Smoked Onion Sauce (page 360), or other sweet, tomato-based barbecue sauce

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a bowl.

Apply about one-third of the rub evenly to the ribs, reserving the rest of the spice mixture. Place the slabs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the ribs from the refrigerator. Sprinkle the ribs lightly but thoroughly with rub, reserving the rest of the mixture. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 30 to 40 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for about 4 hours, turning and sprinkling them with more dry rub about halfway through the time. In the last 45 minutes of cooking, slather the ribs once or twice with Struttin' Sauce, Boydesque

THE BARBECUE BARON OF NEW YORK

Danny Meyer, the most acclaimed restaurateur in New York—founder of beloved establishments such as Union Square Café and Gramercy Tavern—is now getting Manhattan to queue up for barbecue. It took him several years and multiple millions to open Blue Smoke, but the restaurant cum jazz club became an instant success. Best of all, the ribs taste just like those that Meyer grew up with in St. Louis.

Brew, Smoked Onion Sauce, or other sweet tomato-based barbecue sauce.

5. When ready, the meat will bend easily between the ribs, and the sauce will be gooey and sticky. Allow the slabs to sit for 10 minutes before slicing them into individual ribs. Serve with more sauce on top or on the side and plenty of napkins.

Serving Suggestion *For a stick-to-your-ribs rib feast, add Tangy Buttermilk Potato Salad (page 400), Kansas City Baked Beans (page 373), garlic bread, and Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble (page 424). Don't forget the napkins.*



BBQ TIP Rib cuts can get confusing. Pork spareribs come from the belly of the hog, next to the bacon, and are great for barbecuing because of their combination of meat, fat, and pork flavor. Butchers used to discard the tough cut until they discovered it could be tenderized through slow smoking.

Loin ribs, baby back ribs, and country ribs are all “better,” more expensive cuts. They taste good barbecued, too, but they don’t depend as much on the process for their flavor.



BBQ TIP Barbecue sauces and other glazes added to meat in the last hour of cooking are often important to the flavor of a dish, particularly ribs, but you need to adjust their use to your style of smoker. Like mops, they work best in a wood-burning pit, where they should be applied the maximum number of times suggested in a recipe. With a charcoal grill, water smoker, or other kind of equipment that loses a lot of heat when the lid is raised, we normally use glazes only once during the cooking. With some electric-powered smokers, such as a Cookshack, you should wait to apply the sauce when you remove the food from the oven.



Bourbon-Glazed Ribs

This Kentucky-inspired recipe is our personal favorite for “wet” spareribs. They’re finished at the end with a mellow glaze that also serves as a table sauce.

SERVES 6

BARBECUED RIB RUB

- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup freshly ground black pepper
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup paprika
- 2 tablespoons sugar
- 1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 tablespoon chili powder
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons garlic powder
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons onion powder
- 3 full slabs of pork spareribs, “St. Louis cut” (trimmed of the chine bone and brisket flap), preferably 3 pounds each or less

BOURBON MOP (OPTIONAL)

- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup bourbon
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup cider vinegar

BOUR-BQ SAUCE

- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup butter, preferably unsalted
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil
- 2 medium onions, minced
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup bourbon
- $\frac{2}{3}$ cup ketchup
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup cider vinegar
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup freshly squeezed orange juice
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup pure maple syrup
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup molasses
- 2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a bowl. Apply the rub evenly to the ribs, reserving about half of the spice mixture. Place the slabs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the ribs from the refrigerator. Pat them down with the remaining rub. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 30 to 40 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix together the bourbon and vinegar with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.

5. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for about 4 hours, turning and mopping them after $1\frac{1}{2}$ and 3 hours in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

6. While the slabs are smoking, prepare the Bour-BQ Sauce so that it is ready to apply to the ribs approximately 45 minutes before the meat is done. In a large saucepan, melt the butter with the oil over medium heat. Add the onions and sauté for about 5 minutes, or until they begin to turn

golden. Add the remaining sauce ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and cook until the mixture thickens, approximately 40 minutes, stirring it frequently.

7. Brush the ribs with sauce once or twice in the last 45 minutes of cooking. Return the remaining sauce to the stove and simmer for 15 to 20 minutes, or until reduced by one-third.

8. When the slabs are ready, the meat will bend easily between the ribs, and the sauce will be gooey and sticky. Allow the slabs to sit for 10 minutes before slicing them into individual ribs. Serve with the reduced sauce on the side.

Serving Suggestion *We like the ribs best with a simple salad like Killed Salad (page 394), which means there's still room for Run for the Roses Pie (page 423) afterward.*



BBQ TIP The preferred size of spareribs for barbecuing is “3 and down,” meaning 3 pounds or smaller, a variable that depends on the weight of the pig when butchered. Don’t fret if all you can find are larger slabs, but do smoke them a little longer.

PARTY TIME

Like to throw barbecue parties? You aren’t alone according to *Food & Wine* and *Bon Appétit*. In recent surveys, both magazines discovered that their readers—who presumably care about these things—ranked casual outdoor dinner parties as their favorite form of entertaining.

Southern Rib Sandwich

The idea will sound weird to the uninitiated, but a rib sandwich is viewed as a little hunk of heaven to aficionados. Expand “the recipe” by as many intrepid eaters as you’ve rounded up, using the end ribs from the smaller, tapered end of a rack of ribs smoked your favorite way.

SERVES 1

1 or more slices spongy white bread

3 to 4 smoked spare ribs, cut into individual bones

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350), Memphis Magic (page 353), Bour-BQ Sauce (page 357), or other favorite barbecue sauce

Place the bread on a plate. Top it with the individual ribs, piled in a criss-cross kind

of stack. Drizzle—or ladle—your choice of Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce, Memphis Magic, Bour-BQ Sauce, or other favorite barbecue sauce over the ribs, and serve immediately. Alternatively, pile the bread over the ribs. Eat in any way you can manage, preferably with a pile of wet napkins.



Apple City Baby Back Ribs

This recipe is inspired by the award-winning ribs made by the Apple City BBQers from Murphysboro, Illinois, one of the most successful barbecue contest teams in the country in recent decades.

SERVES 3 TO 4

CHERYL'S CIDER SOAK

- 1½ cups apple cider or juice
 - ¼ cup cider vinegar
 - ½ medium onion, minced
 - 1½ tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
 - 1 tablespoon vegetable oil
 - 1 teaspoon ground cinnamon
 - 1 teaspoon dried thyme
- 2 slabs of baby back ribs, preferably 1¼ to 1½ pounds each

APPLE RIB RUB

- ¼ cup packed brown sugar
- 4 teaspoons onion powder
- 1 teaspoon ground cinnamon
- 1 teaspoon dry mustard
- 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- ½ teaspoon dried thyme

APPLE RIB MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 1½ cups apple cider or juice
- ½ cup cider vinegar
- 4 teaspoons Worcestershire sauce

Apple City Apple Sauce (page 361) preferably, or Boydesque Brew (page 348)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the soak ingredients in a large

lidded jar. Place the slabs of ribs in a plastic bag or shallow dish and pour the marinade over the ribs. Refrigerate them overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator and drain them, discarding the marinade. In a bowl, mix together the dry rub ingredients and pat the ribs with about half the mixture. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 25 to 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix together the cider, vinegar, and Worcestershire sauce in a saucepan. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.

5. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for approximately 3 hours, turning and basting them with the mop every hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. About 45 minutes before the ribs are done, brush them with Apple City Apple Sauce or Boydesque Brew, and repeat the step shortly before you remove the meat from the smoker.

6. When the slabs are ready, the meat will bend easily between the ribs, and the sauce will be gooey and sticky and caramelized in spots. Allow the slabs to sit for 5 to 10 minutes before slicing them into individual ribs. Serve with more sauce on the side.



BBQ TIP The Apple City BBQers took their name from the apples that grow in their neighborhood and they took their wood from the same trees. The sweet wood works well with many pork dishes, though we usually like to mix it with hickory.

INSPIRATIONAL 'Q'

Martin Luther King, Jr., loved barbecue, particularly the pork ribs and sandwiches at Aleck's Barbecue Heaven in central Atlanta. Opened by Ernest Alexander in 1942, Aleck's was an important hangout for the early leaders of the civil rights movement. Part of the draw undoubtedly was the signature "Come Back" barbecue sauce, which is still bringing people in the door.

West Coast Baby Backs

At the time we wrote the original edition of this book, much of the country's Asian-inspired cooking was still centered on the West Coast, hence the name for these soy- and star anise-scented little babies. Today, they are as at-home in St. Louis as in San Francisco or Seattle.

SERVES 3 TO 4

FIVE-SPICE RUB

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup five-spice powder, store-bought or homemade

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup packed brown sugar

2 slabs of baby back ribs, preferably $1\frac{1}{4}$ to $1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds each

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup soy sauce

West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce (page 355) or Plum Good Slopping Sauce (page 364) (optional)

1. At least 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, and preferably the evening before, mix together the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the ribs with the soy

sauce followed by a liberal coating of the spice mixture. Reserve the remaining rub. Place the ribs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight, or for at least 2 hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator. Pat them down with the remaining rub. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 25 to 30 minutes.

4. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for approximately 3 hours, turning and sprinkling them with the remaining dry rub about halfway through the cooking time.

5. When done, the ribs will have a thin coating of crispy spices on the surface and

will pull apart easily. Allow the slabs to sit for 5 to 10 minutes before slicing them into individual ribs. Serve warm, with West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce or Plum Good Slopping Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Add some sliced water chestnuts and minced red bell pepper to cooked white rice, and serve it along with steamed broccoli spears drizzled with a little soy sauce. Finish with creamy 'Nana Pudding (page 441) or Key Lime Pie (page 425).*



BBQ TIP Perfectionists strip the membrane from the bone side of ribs, but this step isn't really necessary, particularly if you cook the meat longer than it needs for doneness.

Thai-phoon Baby Backs

The layered Thai flavors in these ribs will wash over you like a South Seas storm. As is common on the home turf of the seasonings, we serve the pork as finger food with a dipping sauce that's both sweet and fiery.

SERVES 3 TO 4

THAI-PHOON MARINADE

- 1½ cups crushed pineapple from a 20-ounce can
- 2 tablespoons Asian fish sauce, preferably, or soy sauce
- ¼ cup freshly squeezed lime juice
- 3 garlic cloves
- 1½ stalks lemongrass, chopped

- 2 slabs of baby back ribs, preferably 1¼ to 1½ pounds each

THAI-PHOON DIPPING SAUCE

- 2 tablespoons peanut oil
- ½ stalk lemongrass, chopped
- 2 garlic cloves, sliced thin
- Remaining canned crushed pineapple

¾ cup white or cider vinegar

¼ cup sugar

2 tablespoons Asian fish sauce

1 to 2 teaspoons crushed red chile flakes

1 to 2 tablespoons minced cilantro (optional)

1. At least 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, and preferably the evening before, purée together the marinade ingredients in a food processor. Place the ribs in a plastic bag or nonreactive dish, pour the marinade over them, and refrigerate for at least 2 hours, or up to overnight. Turn the meat occasionally if needed to saturate the surface with the marinade.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator, drain them, and if you wish to mop the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), reserve the marinade in a saucepan. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 25 to 30 minutes. If reserving the marinade, bring it to a boil over high heat with ½ cup water and boil for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

4. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for approximately 3 hours, turning and mopping twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your smoker.

5. When done, the ribs will have a thin lacquered coating on the surface and will pull apart easily. Allow the slabs to sit for 5 to 10 minutes before slicing them into individual ribs.

6. While the ribs cook, prepare the dipping sauce. Warm the oil in a small saucepan over medium heat. Add the lemongrass and garlic, and sauté briefly, until the garlic is lightly colored. Add the pineapple, vinegar, sugar, fish sauce, and chile, raise the heat to high, and cook until reduced by one-third and rather syrupy, about 2 minutes. Stir in the cilantro and remove from the heat. Serve the ribs warm, with the dipping sauce. If the sauce gets too thick for easy dunking, simply add a bit more water.

Serving Suggestion Start a meal with *Curry Pecans* (page 318) and serve the ribs with refreshing *Mango and Avocado Salad* (page 406). Quench your thirst with *Berry Lemonade* (page 461) or *Maui Mai Tais* (page 457).

RIBBING WITH THE RIBMAN

Are you keeping up with the exploits of barbecue's own superhero, Captain RibMan? He's a bit of a bonehead, even for Meatropolis, but swimsuit-clad supermodels flock to him at www.supercomics.com. John Sprengelmeyer and Rich Davis developed the witty and slightly devilish Web site, which Yahoo! recently honored as the best online comic strip of the year.

Cajun Country Ribs

Country-style ribs come from the blade ends of pork loin. Meaty and full of flavor, they pair well with hearty Louisiana spices.

SERVES 4

CAJUN RAGIN' RUB

- 2 tablespoons celery salt
- 2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
- 2 tablespoons white pepper
- 2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 1 tablespoon garlic powder
- 1½ teaspoons cayenne
- 1½ teaspoons dried thyme
- 1 teaspoon dried sage

Four to six 10-ounce to 14-ounce country-style rib sections

QUICK SOUTHERN SOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Cajun Ragin' Rub

- 1½ cups cider vinegar
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce (page 358), Memphis Magic (page 353), or other spicy tomato-based barbecue sauce

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Apply the rub evenly to the ribs, reserving about half of the spice mixture. Place the ribs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator. Pat them down with a liberal sprinkling of the remaining rub, reserving at least 1 tablespoon if you plan to use the mop. Let the ribs stand at room temperature for 25 to 30 minutes.

4. If you are going to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the vinegar, Worcestershire sauce, remaining rub, and ¾ cup water in a saucepan. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.

5. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook the ribs for 2½ to 3 hours, basting them with the mop at 45-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

6. When ready, the meat will be well-done and quite tender, with a coating of crispy spices on the surface. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion Mix cultures tastefully, serving the ribs with Kraut Salad (page 403), Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389), and Santa Fe Capirotada (page 442) for the finale.

Ginger-Glazed Ham

In Virginia, Kentucky, and other nearby states, traditional country hams are cured in a bed of dry salt for some 5 weeks, smoked in an old-fashioned smokehouse for up to 2 months, and hung to age for almost a year. Barbecuing a ham is much simpler, and many people find the result even more tasty.

SERVES 10 TO 12

SOUTHERN SUCCOR RUB

2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

2 tablespoons paprika

2 tablespoons turbinado sugar

1 tablespoon salt

1 teaspoon dry mustard

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon cayenne

12-pound to 14-pound cooked ready-to-eat ham

PINEAPPLE MOP (OPTIONAL)

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups chicken stock

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups pineapple juice

3 tablespoons vegetable oil

2 teaspoons dry mustard

1 teaspoon ground cloves

GINGER GLAZE

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup ginger preserves or jelly

2 to 3 tablespoons pineapple juice

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon dry mustard

Pinch of ground cloves

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Apply the rub evenly to the ham. Place the ham in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the ham from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 45 to 60 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients in a saucepan. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.

FRESH AIR HAMS

G.W. "Toots" Caston founded Fresh Air Bar-B-Que, deep in the Georgia woods, near Jackson, back in 1929. His family added concrete floors and pine paneling in the 1950s, but not much else has changed. Despite the opening of new branches in bigger towns, the original Fresh Air is still a shack, and the fall-apart hams are still pit smoked for a full day.

5. Transfer the ham to the smoker. Cook for 5½ to 6 hours, basting the meat with the mop about once an hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Brush the ham with the glaze twice during the last hour of cooking. The ham is ready when thoroughly heated through and infused with smoke flavor.

6. Let the ham sit for 15 minutes before carving. Save some of the leftovers for Monday Night Ham Loaf.

Serving Suggestion *Ham has always made a Sunday dinner special. Prepare a Crock of Supper Spread (page 101) and serve it with crackers as a taste teaser. Accompany the ham with Country Collard Greens (page 378), Mayme's Macaroni and Cheese (page 384), Corn and Watermelon Pickle-lilli (page 416), and Buttermilk Biscuits (page 388) with peach butter or jam. Sweet Potato Pudding (page 440) slides down easily for dessert.*

Maple-Bourbon Ham

This is a substantially different but equally luscious approach to barbecued ham.

SERVES 10 TO 12

MAPLE-BOURBON PASTE

- 2 tablespoons pure maple syrup
 - 2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
 - 2 tablespoons Dijon or honey-Dijon mustard
 - 1 tablespoon bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
 - 1 tablespoon vegetable oil
 - 1 tablespoon paprika
 - 1 tablespoon onion powder
 - 2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 12-pound to 14-pound bone-in cooked ready-to-eat ham

MAPLE-BOURBON MOP (OPTIONAL)

- ¼ cup pure maple syrup
- ¼ cup bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
- ¼ cup cider vinegar
- 3 tablespoons vegetable oil
- 2 teaspoons Dijon or honey-Dijon mustard

MAPLE-BOURBON GLAZE

- ¾ cup pure maple syrup
- ¼ cup plus 2 tablespoons bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
- 3 tablespoons Dijon or honey-Dijon mustard
- 2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

- 2 tablespoons minced onion
- 1 tablespoon cider vinegar
- 2 teaspoons yellow mustard seeds, cracked
- 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

1. The night before you plan to smoke the ham, score the top, fatty side of the ham in wide crisscross cuts through the fat layer, about $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ inch deep. Combine the paste ingredients in a small bowl. Apply the gooey, sticky paste evenly to the ham, pretending you're a kid playing in something that will appall your mother. We find it easiest to manage the task if we arrange a large plastic bag on the counter, set the ham in the bag, rub the meat with the paste, and then pull the bag up snug and close it. Refrigerate the ham overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the ham from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 45 to 60 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients in a saucepan. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.

5. Transfer the ham to the smoker. Cook for 5½ to 6 hours, basting the meat with the mop about once an hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Brush the ham with the glaze twice during the last hour of cooking. The ham is ready when thoroughly heated through and infused with smoke flavor.



BBQ TIP Ham leftovers are a little gift for the cook. Cut them into tiny cubes and mix them into biscuit dough before baking. If your biscuits are already baked, slice the ham thin and arrange between two warm halves, with a dollop of mustard or chutney. Add little shreds to a pot of greens or make the best ham and Cheddar sandwich that ever met your mouth.

JAMMING IN NASHVILLE

If you like smokehouse-style country hams, you'll love the Loveless Motel and Café, just outside Nashville, Tennessee. The small roadhouse eatery specializes in hams and jams, and the kitchen does a magnificent job with both. You can even order by phone (615-646-0067) or on the Web (www.lovelesscafe.com).

Weeknight Pork Tenderloin

One of the dishes that participants in our cooking classes love the most is smoked pork tenderloin. Because of its long thin shape, it's among the quickest and easiest meats to transform with smoke. Enjoy it as an entrée or add it to salads, pastas, or other dishes.

SERVES 4

1¼-pound to 1½-pound pork tenderloin

1 to 2 tablespoons vegetable oil

2 to 3 tablespoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26), Southwest Heat (page 32), or your favorite commercial dry rub

South Florida Citrus Sauce (page 363), Smoked Onion Sauce (page 360), or other favorite barbecue sauce (optional)

1. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Remove the tenderloin from the refrigerator. Cut the tenderloin down one of its long sides, cutting to within about ½ inch of the other side. Fold the tenderloin open like a book, and press down along the seam so that it will stay open. Lightly pound the tenderloin as needed to even its thickness to about ½ inch. Rub with 1 to 2 teaspoons of oil, and then with dry rub. Let it sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.
3. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat, and add the remaining oil. Sear the tenderloin well, about a minute per side. Transfer the tenderloin to the smoker. Cook for about 1¼ hours, until the internal tem-

perature reaches 160°F. Brush the tenderloins lightly, if you wish, once during the last 30 minutes of cooking with South Florida Citrus Sauce, Smoked Onion Sauce, or another favorite barbecue sauce. Let the meat sit for 10 minutes before carving. Serve with additional sauce on the side.

Variation: Yucatecan Pork Tenderloin

Use Yucatecan Seasoning Paste (page 37) in place of the dry rub for seasoning. Serve with Sauce Olé (page 354), Mango-Habanero Hellfire (page 365), or Fiesta Salsa (page 324), and black beans and white rice.



BBQ TIP We think North of the Border, a small company down the road from our home, makes some of the best commercial dry rubs and other barbecue condiments available today. Proprietors Gayther and Susie Gonzales consistently get the balance of seasonings just right. For this simple pork tenderloin, we often use their green-chile rub known as P.C. Willy's or

their smoky Montezuma Chipotle Seasoning. For a spicy finishing sauce for either preparation, consider the company's Chip-

otle Catch Up or Chipotle Barbeque Sauce. Contact North of the Border at 800-860-0681 or www.northoftheborder.net.

Sweet and Fruity Pork Tenderloin

When you have more time to plan ahead, here's a great tenderloin for a fancier occasion, coated with honey and spice and everything nice.

SERVES 4

SWEET SENSATION RUB

- 1 tablespoon ground allspice
- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- 1 tablespoon onion powder
- 1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- ½ teaspoon ground nutmeg
- ½ teaspoon ground cinnamon
- ½ teaspoon dried thyme

Two 12-ounce to 14-ounce tenderloins

Vegetable oil

TENDERLOIN MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Sweet Sensation Rub

- 1½ cups chicken stock
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil
- 1 tablespoon cider vinegar
- 1 tablespoon honey

Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce (page 360) or
Jamaican Barbecue Sauce (page 359)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small

bowl. Massage the tenderloins with a thin film of the oil followed by a couple of tablespoons of the rub. Wrap them in plastic and refrigerate overnight.

2. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the tenderloins from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir together the remaining rub with the other mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat. Quickly sear the tenderloins on all sides. Transfer the tenderloins to the smoker. Cook for 2 to 2¼ hours, turning the meat and basting it with the mop about once every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

Brush the tenderloins lightly with Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce or Jamaican Barbecue Sauce during the last 30 minutes of cooking.

6. The tenderloins are ready when the internal temperature reaches 160°F. Let the meat sit for 10 minutes before carving. Serve with additional sauce on the side.

Serving Suggestion Provide a decorative bowl of Curry Pecans (page 318) and a pitcher of Cham-gria (page 459) for openers. With the pork, serve roasted potatoes and carrots, Blue Corn Muffins (page 390), and later a Key Lime Pie (page 425).

DOESN'T LOOK LIKE A DAME TO ME

When the first permanent British colonists landed at Jamestown, Virginia, in May 1607, their limited cargo included domesticated pigs. The settlers let their hogs forage freely at the end of a peninsula that jutted into the James River, a practice that established the name for the nearby Hog Island. The pork in your pit today may have as good an ancestry as any Colonial Dame.



Pork Loin Mexicana

In this succulent loin, tropical fruits combine with spice for a south-of-the-border flavor reminiscent of Veracruz. The preparation is a bit involved, but you'll know it was worth it with every bite.

SERVES 4

SWEET SENSATION RUB

- 1 tablespoon ground allspice
 - 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
 - 1 tablespoon onion powder
 - 1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
 - ½ teaspoon ground nutmeg
 - ½ teaspoon ground cinnamon
 - ½ teaspoon dried thyme
- 3½-pound to 4-pound boneless center-cut pork loin, with a pocket sliced lengthwise through the center

FRUIT SALSA

- 1 cup freshly squeezed orange juice
- 2 small ripe tomatoes, preferably Roma or Italian plum
- 1 small ripe banana, chopped
- ½ medium onion, minced
- 1 fresh jalapeño, minced
- 2 teaspoons extra-virgin olive oil
- 1 teaspoon ground red chile, preferably ancho or New Mexican, or chili powder
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- Dash of cider vinegar

FILLING

- 6 to 8 ounces uncooked Cha-Cha Chorizo (page 96) or other chorizo or spicy sausage
- 1 egg

½ medium onion, minced

3 scallions, sliced

MEXICANA MOP

- Juice of 2 oranges
- ½ cup cider vinegar
- 1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil
- 2 garlic cloves, minced

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the pork with the rub inside and out. Wrap the meat in a small plastic bag, and refrigerate overnight.
2. Before you begin to barbecue, prepare the salsa by combining all the ingredients in a small bowl. Refrigerate it until needed.
3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
4. Remove the pork from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.
5. In a small bowl, mix together the filling ingredients. Stuff the loin with the chorizo mixture and tie it with kitchen twine in several places.

6. Mix together the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a small saucepan and keep the liquid warm over low heat.

7. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat. Add the loin and sear it quickly on all sides. Transfer the pork to the smoker. Cook for $2\frac{1}{2}$ to $2\frac{3}{4}$ hours, basting the loin at 30-minute to 40-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

8. After the initial cooking period, remove the pork from the smoker and wrap it in heavy-duty foil, pouring about 2 tablespoons of the mop and $\frac{1}{4}$ cup of the salsa over the meat. Discard any remaining mop. Seal the edges of the foil well. Return the pork to the smoker for another 1 to $1\frac{1}{4}$ hours, cooking to an internal temperature of 160°F .

9. Allow the pork to sit at room temperature for about 10 minutes before slicing.

Serve slices topped with spoonfuls of the salsa. Offer the remaining salsa on the side.

Variation: Cubano-Mexicano Sandwich

Use the pork (or just some leftovers) to make a barbecue-style Cuban sandwich. Use Cuban bread or a crusty roll, then pile on pork slices, thinly sliced ham and Swiss cheese, a spoonful of black beans, and a few avocado or dill pickle slices. Toast in a sandwich press, in a skillet, or on a griddle.



BBQ TIP If you run short of mop in any recipe, extend it with additional splashes of the main liquid or even a little water. While we call for specific proportions, always feel free to take liberties—that's part of the fun of barbecuing.

Purely Pork Chops

Like the Weeknight Pork Tenderloin, these chops are a simple smoke job but succulently luscious.

SERVES 6

SOUTHERN SUCCOR RUB

1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper

1 tablespoon paprika

1 tablespoon turbinado sugar

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons salt

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dry mustard

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon cayenne

6 bone-in center-cut pork chops, $\frac{1}{2}$ to $\frac{3}{4}$ inch thick

CHOP MOP (OPTIONAL)

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup cider or white vinegar

Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce (page 351), Apple City Apple Sauce (page 361), Smoked Onion Sauce (page 360), or other barbecue sauce (optional)

1. At least 2 hours, and preferably 4 hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the chops with several tablespoons of the rub. Place the chops in a plastic bag and refrigerate for 1½ to 3½ hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chops from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the chops (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), warm the vinegar in a small saucepan over low heat.

5. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat. Quickly sear the chops on both sides and transfer them to the smoker. Cook the meat for 55 to 65 minutes, turning and basting it with the mop once or twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

6. The chops are ready when the internal temperature reaches 160°F. Serve hot, with Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce, Apple City Apple Sauce, Smoked Onion Sauce, or other barbecue sauce on the side, if you wish.

Variation: Pop Chops Marinate and/or mop the chops with Pop Mop (page 48), using Dr Pepper, Coca-Cola, or R.C. Cola.



PICK THOSE CHORDS, PICK THOSE PIGS

How did two New York bikers of Italian descent get around to opening a genuine honky-tonk blues barbecue joint in Syracuse? In *Dinosaur Bar-B-Que* (2001, Ten Speed Press), John Stage explains the story of the namesake restaurant. The Dinosaur kitchen knows its meat, boasting that the barbecue “is from pigs that made perfect hogs of themselves.”

Stuffed Chops

These tender chops are stuffed with a moist cornbread dressing.

SERVES 6

KENTUCKY PRIDE PASTE

- 1/2 medium onion, preferably a sweet variety, chunked
- 2 tablespoons bourbon
- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- 1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1 1/2 tablespoons vegetable oil
- 6 bone-in double-thick center-cut pork chops, about 1 1/2 inches thick, cut with a pocket for stuffing

STUFFING

- 1/4 cup butter, preferably unsalted
- 1/2 medium green bell pepper, chopped fine
- 1/3 medium onion, chopped fine
- 1 celery rib, chopped fine
- 1 cup dry cornbread crumbs
- 1 dozen pitted prunes, chopped
- 2 tablespoons chopped fresh parsley
- 1 tablespoon minced fresh sage or 1 1/2 teaspoons dried sage
- 1/4 teaspoon dry mustard
- Salt to taste
- 1 to 3 tablespoons chicken stock or water

DRUNK CHOP MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 1 cup cider or white vinegar
- 2 tablespoons bourbon

1. At least 2 hours, and preferably 4 hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the paste ingredients in a food processor or

blender. Massage the chops inside and out with the paste. Place the chops in a plastic bag and refrigerate for 1 1/2 to 3 1/2 hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chops from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

4. To make the stuffing, melt the butter in a small skillet. Add the bell pepper, onion, and celery, sautéing until soft. Spoon the mixture into a bowl and stir in the remaining ingredients, adding only enough water or stock to bind the stuffing loosely. Stuff the chops with equal portions of the mixture.

5. If you plan to baste the chops (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), warm the vinegar, bourbon, and 2 tablespoons water in a small saucepan over low heat. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

6. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat. Quickly sear the chops on both sides and transfer them to the smoker. Cook for 1 3/4 to 2 hours, turning and basting the meat with the mop about every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

7. The chops are ready when the internal temperature reaches 160°F. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion For a casual supper, pair the chops with Sweet Sally's Sweet Potato Salad (page 402). Poach apple slices in apple juice and cinnamon and top with crystallized ginger for dessert.

East L.A. Pork Tacos

Shoulder chops start out a little tougher and fattier than their center-cut cousins, but many pork fans prefer their richer flavor and cheaper cost.

Cooked in this style, they'll be plenty tender and taste great, too. Many well-stocked supermarkets carry achiote, as do Mexican, Latin American, and East Indian markets.

SERVES 4 TO 6

BORRACHO MARINADE AND OPTIONAL MOP

2 cups orange juice

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup tequila

Juice of 2 limes

Juice of 1 lemon

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, minced

1 tablespoon olive oil

3 garlic cloves, minced

2 teaspoons dried oregano, preferably Mexican

1 teaspoon achiote paste

1 teaspoon cumin

Several dashes of Melinda's Original Habanero Hot Sauce or other fiery habanero hot sauce

6 shoulder pork chops, 12 to 14 ounces each

Warm corn tortillas

Chopped onion and cilantro, and lime and orange wedges, for garnish

Sauce Olé (page 354) or additional habanero hot sauce

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a blender or food processor. Pour the marinade over the pork in a plastic bag. Refrigerate the chops overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Drain the pork, reserving all of the marinade if you plan to baste the meat during cooking. Let the chops sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. To make the optional mop (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), bring the marinade to a

boil over high heat and boil for several minutes. Keep warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the chops to the smoker. Cook for 2½ to 2¾ hours, basting at 45-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. When done, the pork will pull easily away from the fat and bone. Allow the chops to sit at room temperature for 10 to 15 minutes and pull the pork into shreds. Arrange the pork on a platter with the warm tortillas and garnishes. Serve with

Sauce Olé or additional habanero hot sauce.



BBQ TIP Most authorities today agree that pork is done enough to eat when the internal temperature reaches 160°F or even a little less. Most barbecuers cook the meat to a temperature of at least 170°F, when it begins to fall apart, and some go as high as 190°F.

OUT-OF-LUCK LUAU

Stan Gambrell, who coordinated the first Big Pig Jig in Vienna, Georgia, in 1982, got a kick out of the cooking style of one of the competing barbecue teams that year. He wrote that they “insisted on burying their pig in the ground Hawaiian style, and kept insisting that the hole be dug wider. And wider. And WIDER. We dug the way they said they wanted it, but when judging time came and they tried to dig up their pig, they never could find it.”



Creole Crown Roast

A crown pork roast, elegantly presented and carved at the table, symbolizes a special occasion. Call your butcher ahead for the roast, formed by tying the rib section of the loin into a circle.

SERVES 8 TO 10

CREOLE RUB

- 2 tablespoons celery salt
- 1 tablespoon paprika
- 1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1 tablespoon white pepper
- 1½ teaspoons dried thyme
- ½ teaspoon cayenne
- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- 1½ teaspoons garlic powder

5-pound crown pork roast (10 to 12 chops)

1 to 2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

CREOLE MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Creole Rub

2 cups chicken or beef stock

¼ cup Worcestershire sauce

¼ cup butter, preferably unsalted

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the roast well with the Worcestershire sauce and then with about half of the rub. Transfer the roast to a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the roast from the refrigerator. Pat down the roast lightly with another coating of rub. Let the roast sit at room temperature for 40 to 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you plan to baste the roast (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir any remaining rub together with the other mop ingredi-

SHOULD BE PROUD

Roger and Dawn Hubmer, with their children Paul and Laura, raise hogs and then barbecue some of them for the family's catering business. Their Prairie Pride Farm near St. Clair, Minnesota, prides itself on tasty, naturally raised pork that is perfect for the pit. It's great to see the current revival of farms like this, practicing sustainable agriculture and placing priority on flavor. For more information, call the Hubmers at 866-245-PORK (7675) or visit them on the Web at www.prairiepridemn.com.

ents and 2 cups water in a saucepan, and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Transfer the roast to the smoker and cook for 4¾ to 5 hours, or until the internal temperature reaches 160°F. Mop the pork every 40 to 45 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. Remove the pork from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 10 to 15 minutes. Carve the roast, slicing downward between each bone to cut into individual chops.

Serving Suggestion Serve the crown roast as the centerpiece for a Mardi Gras meal. Sip Firewater (page 454) first, then sit down to an initial course of Shrimp Rémoulade (page 238). Present the roast with twice-baked potatoes, Maque Choux Peppers (page 268), and sautéed chayote squash. Offer pralines and coffee laced with bourbon for dessert.



BBQ TIP When mops include butter or oil, much of the fat drips away from the food it's protecting, leaving behind moist meat and a hint of flavor.



Ca-Rib-bean Roast

Caribbean flavors, including a little rum, provide a lively accent for a pork roast.

SERVES 4 TO 5

CA-RIB-BEAN RUB

- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- 2 teaspoons ground allspice
- 2 teaspoons onion powder
- ½ teaspoon dried thyme
- 1 teaspoon salt
- ½ teaspoon ground nutmeg
- 2½-pound to 2¾-pound pork rib roast
- 1 tablespoon rum, preferably dark

CA-RIB-BEAN MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 1 cup chicken or beef stock
- ½ cup cider vinegar
- ¼ cup rum, preferably dark
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil

MANGO SAUCE

- 1 mango, chopped
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- 2 tablespoons mango chutney

½ cup chicken stock

2 to 3 tablespoons rum, preferably dark

2 tablespoons cream of coconut

1 teaspoon Ca-Rib-bean Rub

Splash or two of Pickapeppa sauce (optional)

Salt to taste

1½ teaspoons butter, preferably unsalted

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the pork well with the rum and then with about half of the rub. Transfer the pork to a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the pork from the refrigerator. Pat down the pork lightly with another coating of rub. Let the meat sit at room temperature for 30 to 40 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the pork (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir any remaining rub together with the other mop ingredients and 1 cup water in a saucepan, and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Transfer the pork to the smoker, fattier side up, and cook for 4¾ to 5 hours, or until the internal temperature reaches 160°F. Mop the meat every 40 to 45 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. While the roast cooks, prepare the sauce. In a food processor or blender, purée together the mango, onion, and chutney, pouring in a bit of the stock if necessary. Spoon the mixture into a heavy saucepan and add the remaining stock, rum, cream of coconut, and dry rub. Warm the mixture over medium heat and simmer for about 20 minutes. Taste and add as much Pickapeppa and salt as necessary to balance the savory and sweet flavors. The sauce can be kept warm or refrigerated until the roast is ready and then reheated. Add the butter to the warm sauce just before serving.

7. Remove the pork from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 10 to 15 minutes. Carve the roast and serve, accompanied by the warm sauce.

GUESS I'LL TAKE THE PORK

The Skylight Inn in Ayden, North Carolina, always wins acclaim from serious eaters as one of the best barbecue joints in the South. Proprietor-and-pitmaster Pete Jones smokes whole hogs overnight, chops up a mixture of the pork with a good share of the dark exterior portions, and serves it in a sandwich or on a cardboard plate. That's it folks, but it's so good you won't be left wanting.

Hill Country Links

If you own or can borrow a meat grinder, you can stuff your own sausage links for barbecuing.

MAKES ABOUT TWENTY-FOUR 4-OUNCE SAUSAGES, SERVING 12 OR MORE

- 4 pounds pork butt, with fat
- 2 pounds beef chuck or round steak, with fat
- 1 large onion, minced
- 6 garlic cloves, minced
- 2 tablespoons minced fresh sage or 1 tablespoon dried sage
- 1 tablespoon salt
- 1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper
- 1 to 2 tablespoons chile caribe or other crushed dried red chile of moderate heat
- $\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 teaspoon cayenne
- 4 yards hot sausage casings

Vegetable oil

1. At least one evening before you plan to barbecue the sausages, grind the pork and beef together, using the coarse-grind blade of a meat grinder. Add the rest of the ingredients, except the casings and oil. If you wish, grind the mixture again. Refrigerate, covered, overnight.
2. Prepare the casings, soaking them in several changes of water over several hours.
3. With the stuffing attachment of a meat grinder, stuff the cold sausage mixture into the casings, making 1-inch-thick links about 5 inches long. With your fingers, twist the casing and tie off the individual sausages with kitchen twine.

Cut between the links. If you end up with any air bubbles, prick the casing in those spots with a needle. The sausage is ready to barbecue, but it can be refrigerated for several days or frozen for at least a month.

4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Rub the sausages lightly with the oil.

5. Transfer the links to the smoker and cook for 2 to 2 $\frac{1}{4}$ hours, until the skin of the sausage looks ready to pop. Always err on the side of caution with the timing and cut one of the sausages open to check for doneness before eating any of them. Serve hot.



BBQ TIP Sausage casings are the intestines of various farm animals. You want casings from a pig in this instance. Inexpensive and hard to damage, the casings generally come packed in brine. These days most casings come “preflushed,” eliminating the need to clean the casing interiors with running water. You’ll want to soak them, though, to eliminate the brine. When stuffing the sausages, it’s easiest to work with the casings in sections no longer than a yard long, and to have the meat well-chilled.

BBQ TIP If you plan to make a lot of sausage, some sausage companies or meat markets sell casings in bulk. You can

usually get casings for 100 pounds of sausage and change back from a twenty-dollar bill. The brined casings keep, refrigerated, for up to a year.

LINKS TO THE PAST

The same German butchers who helped to create modern Texas barbecue also made great link sausage, which they smoked with the brisket in the pit at the back of the meat market in venerable central Texas joints such as the City Market in Luling and Smitty's in Lockhart. The links are still as popular as beef in that area of the state.



Store-Bought Hot Brats

If you don't want to grind and stuff your own sausage, you can start with a store-bought variety and still add an abundance of smoky, barbecue taste. Around the barbecue cook-off circuit, nationally distributed Johnsonville bratwurst from Sheboygan, Wisconsin, is a popular choice. Personally, we prefer brats with more spice—nutmeg, coriander, ginger, or caraway—though they are a little harder to find.

SERVES 6

1 dozen 4-ounce to 6-ounce uncooked bratwursts

Vegetable oil

1 to 2 teaspoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Dry Rub (page 26) or other savory seasoning blend (optional)

Alabama Great White (page 362) or Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) or other mustardy barbecue sauce (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the brats lightly with oil and sprinkle them with rub if you wish. Let the brats sit at room temperature for 20 minutes.

3. Transfer the brats to the smoker and cook for 1¼ to 1½ hours, depending on size, or until the skin of the sausage looks ready to pop. Serve hot, perhaps with Alabama Great White or Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce.



BBQ TIP You can—and should—barbecue any kind of store-bought sausage. In addition to bratwurst, our biggest hits have included a robust Molinari Italian sausage and several varieties of Bruce Aidells's links,

both from the San Francisco Bay area but distributed nationally. If you use precooked sausage, get something that was smoked originally, because it will need only about 30 minutes in your smoker—not long enough to absorb much smoke flavor.

Serving Suggestion Don't wait for October for an Oktoberfest menu. Barbecue several varieties of sausage, and buy loaves of hearty breads like pumpernickel and rye, several kinds of mustard, some garlicky dill pickles, and loads of German beer. Make up hefty bowls of Hot German Potato Salad (page 401) and Kraut Salad (page 403), and round out the celebration with Black Walnut Cake (page 437).

STILL SMOKING

Allen & Son Bar-B-Que remains a bastion of the old "Down East" barbecue style that's been popular in eastern North Carolina since the locals talked with British accents. Just outside Chapel Hill, the restaurant cooks its hogs in an open pit over wood coals and serves the meat with a thin vinegary sauce full of pepper and spice.

Italian Sausage Torpedos

These chubby sandwiches are modeled on ones that our friend Patty Karlovitz serves for special family occasions. She has the sausage shipped to New Mexico from her cousin Eugene's south-side Chicago meat market, which adds to their mystique, but any well-seasoned Italian link will work.

SERVES UP TO 8

8 uncooked Italian sausage links, about 6 ounces each

Olive oil

2 large green Italian frying peppers or bell peppers

1 red bell pepper

1 large onion, halved

8 slices provolone (optional)

8 long crusty rolls

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the sausages and vegetables lightly with oil, and let them sit at room temperature for 20 minutes.

3. Transfer the sausages and vegetables to the smoker. Cook the vegetables until tender, about 1 hour. Continue cooking the sausages for an additional 1¼ to 1½ hours, depending on size, or until the skin of the sausage looks ready to pop. When cool enough to handle, slice the peppers and onion into thin strips, discarding loose skins and seeds, but mixing the flavorful juices back into the vegetables. Keep warm. If using the cheese, place it on the rolls. When the sausages are ready, top the cheese in each roll with a hot sausage and a portion of the vegetable mixture and juices. Halve the sandwiches, if you wish, for easier eating. Serve hot.



Cha-Cha Chorizo

A popular sausage throughout the Southwest, spicy chorizo is delicious smoked.

SERVES 4 TO 6

- 1³/₄ pounds pork butt, with fat, ground by your butcher or with a meat grinder at home
- 3 tablespoons chili powder, preferably Gebhardt's
- ¹/₂ cup minced onion
- ¹/₂ cup cider vinegar
- Juice of 1 orange
- 6 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 jalapeño, minced
- 1¹/₂ teaspoons dried oregano, preferably Mexican
- 1¹/₂ teaspoons ground cumin
- 1 teaspoon salt
- ¹/₂ teaspoon cayenne or ground chile de árbol
- ¹/₂ teaspoon *canela* (Mexican cinnamon) or other cinnamon

CHA-CHA MOP (OPTIONAL)

- Juice of 1 orange
- ¹/₄ cup cider vinegar
- 1¹/₂ teaspoons olive oil

1. At least an evening before you plan to smoke the sausages, start the preparations. In a large bowl, mix together the sausage ingredients. Refrigerate, covered, overnight or for a couple of days.

- 2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
- 3. Form the sausage mixture into 8 patties, about 3 ounces each. Let the patties sit at room temperature for about 15 minutes.
- 4. If you plan to baste the sausage patties (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.
- 5. Transfer the patties to the smoker. Cook for about 1 hour, mopping once or twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. The patties should be ready when they are richly browned and cooked through. Always err on the side of caution with the timing, though, and cut open one of the patties to check for doneness before eating any of them. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion Chorizo is a great breakfast sausage. It puts real zing in a simple dish like scrambled eggs. Serve it on the side, or crumble the cooked sausage into the eggs.

Cajun Tasso

This porcine pleasure hails from the heart of Cajun country. Tasso is a seasoning pork, something like home-cured ham, used to flavor other dishes rather than eaten on its own. Try a chunk in your next pot of beans or collards, or chop it and add to gumbo, jambalaya, or soup. You can get fancy with it too, using it to flavor crawfish and shrimp sautés or pasta sauces. Our thanks to Wayne Whitworth for the suggestion of making tasso at home.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ POUNDS OF MEAT, PLENTY FOR A FEW POTS OF BEANS, SEVERAL JAMBALAYAS, AND GUMBO FOR A GANG

CAJUN RAGIN' RUB

- ¼ cup celery salt
- ¼ cup freshly ground black pepper
- ¼ cup white pepper
- ¼ cup packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 1 to 1½ tablespoons cayenne
- 1 tablespoon dried thyme
- 2 teaspoons dried sage
- ½ pork butt, 3½ to 4 pounds

1. At least 3 hours before you plan to barbecue, begin the preparations.
2. Prepare the dry rub, mixing the spices thoroughly in a bowl.
3. Cut the pork more-or-less-lengthwise into strips about 1 inch in diameter. You'll have to work around the bone, which gets in the way of cutting the butt completely

into long neat strips, but do the best you can. As you cut the strips, place them on a baking sheet. Pour the rub over the strips, and massage the spice mixture into each strip. Place the meat in the refrigerator, uncovered, for 2 to 3 hours so that the spices dry somewhat onto the meat's surface. (The meat can sit in the spice mixture for a day or night, if you like, but uncover it for the last 2 or 3 hours if you can.)

4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
5. Transfer the pork strips from the baking sheet to the smoker and cook for 3 to 3½ hours, until well-done and a bit dried out, well-browned but not burned looking. The tasso keeps for a week to 10 days in the refrigerator, but we usually freeze most of it to use over a couple of months.

B.C. Canadian Bacon

We got this idea from friends in British Columbia, Canada, where they call this cut of pork “back bacon.” Actually lean smoked pork loin, Canadian bacon is already cooked, but you can add an enormous boost to its flavor and texture with this technique. Cut leftovers into matchsticks and sprinkle over salads or pizzas.

SERVES 2 TO 4

1 pound chunk Canadian bacon

Vegetable oil

1 teaspoon Wild Willy’s Number One-derful Rub (page 26), Southern Succor Rub (page 27), Cajun Ragin’ Rub (page 29), or other savory seasoning blend

PINEAPPLE MOP (OPTIONAL)

½ cup chicken stock

½ cup pineapple juice

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

¾ teaspoon dry mustard

¼ teaspoon ground cloves

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Rub the Canadian bacon lightly with oil and sprinkle it with rub. Let the meat sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

3. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir together the mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

4. Transfer the Canadian bacon to the smoker and cook for 1 to 1¼ hours, turning and mopping twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

5. Let the meat sit at room temperature for 5 to 10 minutes before slicing and serving.

Serving Suggestion *This home-smoked Canadian bacon is a natural for eggs Benedict. To add some extra punch, we like to substitute chile con queso or another spicy cheese sauce for the Hollandaise.*

THE NAMING GAME

Barbecue cook-offs go hog wild with names. Some of our favorites from over the years include “Swine Days” in Natchez, Mississippi, “When Pigs Fly” in McPherson, Kansas, “Squealing on the Square” in Laurens, South Carolina, and “Hogtoberfest” in Roanoke Rapids, North Carolina. We’re not so sure about the naming folks in Montague, Texas, who host their cook-off at the Fire Ant Festival.

Triple Play Tube Steak

Bologna won't ever replace brisket in the hearts of many pitmasters, but barbecued versions are remarkably good, and certainly not just for kids. All you need to do is a quick score, slather, and smoke.

SERVES 6 TO 8

2-pound chunk of bologna

Memphis Magic (page 353), Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353), or other not-too-sweet, tomato-based barbecue sauce

1 tablespoon cider or white vinegar

1. Score the bologna $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch deep with wide criss-cross cuts. Thin $\frac{1}{3}$ cup of the barbecue sauce with the vinegar. Cover the bologna thoroughly with the thinned sauce. Let the bologna sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Transfer the bologna to the smoker and cook for about 2 hours. The sauce will have caramelized on the bologna's surface. Serve sliced, hot or cold, with additional barbecue sauce.

Serving Suggestion *Make sandwiches out of the bologna, topped with barbecue sauce, Green Tomato Chowchow (page 413), and some chopped onions. If you liked baloney sandwiches as a kid, you'll relish this one.*



Monday Night Ham Loaf

This is a superb way to use up barbecued ham left over from the weekend.

SERVES 6 TO 8

1 pound Ginger-Glazed Ham (page 77),
Maple-Bourbon Ham (page 78), or other
well-smoked fully cooked ham

$\frac{3}{4}$ pound ground pork

1 medium onion, chopped

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

1 cup cornbread crumbs or other bread
crumbs

2 large eggs

1 cup milk

2 tablespoons yellow mustard

2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

1½ tablespoons cider vinegar

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon ground cloves

Pinch of ground ginger

Salt to taste

MONDAY NIGHT GLAZE

2 tablespoons ginger preserves or jelly, or
pure maple syrup

1 tablespoon pineapple or apple juice

1 teaspoon yellow mustard

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Process the ham in a food processor until minced fine, or grind the ham in a meat grinder. Transfer the ham to a bowl, add the remaining ingredients, and combine well.

2. Spoon the moist ham mixture into a loaf pan and smooth its surface. Bake the loaf for 45 minutes. While the loaf bakes, combine the glaze ingredients in a small bowl. Brush the loaf with the glaze. Continue baking for another 15 to 20 minutes, for a total cooking time of 60 to 65 minutes.

3. Remove the meat from the oven and let it sit for at least 10 minutes before cutting. Serve hot or cold. Leftovers keep for 3 to 4 days.

Serving Suggestion For a hot-weather supper, start with Devil-May-Care Eggs (page 408), then serve the ham loaf with sides of Succotash Salad (page 403) and Hot and Spicy Buttermilk Potato Salad (page 400), and then Bourbon Peaches (page 417) to finish. Ham loaf also makes good mini-sandwiches on split Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389) or tiny wedges of Cracklin' Cornbread (page 387). Serve the sandwiches with ginger preserves or jelly, mango or peach chutney, or tangy mustard.

Supper Spread

This is an all-American version of rillettes, the rich, savory potted French dish. Our recipe, using scrumptious barbecued pork shoulder, is modeled on one from Southern food authority Nathalie Dupree.

SERVES 2 AS A MAIN COURSE OR 4 TO 6 AS AN APPETIZER

1/4 cup unsalted butter

1 cup finely chopped smoked pork butt or picnic

2 garlic cloves, minced

1 teaspoon Worcestershire sauce

2 teaspoons minced fresh sage or 1 teaspoon dried sage

Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce to taste

Salt and coarsely ground black pepper to taste

1. In a small heavy saucepan, melt the butter over low heat. Add the pork, 1/2 cup water, garlic, and Worcestershire sauce. Barely simmer the mixture over very low heat for 15 to 20 minutes, or until the liquid evaporates but the pork still looks

moist. The pork should be quite tender. Remove the pan from the heat and mix in the sage, Tabasco, and salt and pepper to taste. Spoon the mixture into a small crock, cover, and refrigerate at least until chilled, but preferably overnight.

2. Let the spread sit at room temperature for about 10 minutes before serving. Serve the spread with a crusty country-style white bread, toast triangles, or crackers.

Serving Suggestion To complete an early winter supper, add *South-of-the-Border Garlic Soup* (page 263), a couple of varieties of pickles, and *Southern Caesar Salad* (page 393). Offer fresh pears to round out the meal.

INNER PEACE PIGS

The TBS SuperStation ranked the Web site of the Ugly Brothers (www.ugly-brothers.net) the top "Guy Food" site on the Internet. Les, Big, and Bud Ugly, a barbecue cook-off team, say they "pursue inner peace through the artistic and scientific practice of slow smoked pig meat." As you might guess, they're from California.

Barbecue Spaghetti

This may never make it in Italy, but it's sure big in Memphis.

SERVES 4

1½ to 2 cups Memphis Magic (page 353) or other tomato-based barbecue sauce

1½ cups pulled or shredded smoked pork butt or picnic

1 pound cooked spaghetti (or other sturdy pasta such as linguine or penne)

Chopped onion, for garnish (optional)

Warm the barbecue sauce in a saucepan. Add the pork and heat through. Mix the sauce with the spaghetti and serve on a platter. Garnish with the onion, if you wish.



Bodacious Beef



Some Southern pitmasters think Texans started barbecuing beef simply because they couldn't tell a steer from a pig. Texans, in turn, reckon that anyone who prefers hogs to cattle doesn't know the difference between a trough and a table.

The pork and beef barbecue traditions are entirely different animals in all respects, including origins. British colonists brought pigs to the East Coast and adopted Native American cooking methods to create their style of barbecue, which was usually perfected by African-American pitmasters. Long before these settlers moved west, Mexican ranchers and *vaqueros*, the earliest cowboys, introduced the southwest to their specialty, *barbacoa de cabeza*. It's whole head barbecue, preferably made with a big bull's head that is smoked overnight in an underground pit.

Barbacoa de cabeza remained a chuck-wagon treat throughout the epic era of the cowboy, but the dish never had a chance in Dallas. German butchers in central Texas intervened around the turn of the century to change the nature of beef barbecue. For them, sweetbreads, brains, and other parts of the head were too much of a delicacy to put in a pit. They took up barbecuing as a way to get rid of their worst cuts of beef, like brisket, sometimes a throw-away piece in the days before fast-food hamburgers. The thrifty butchers found that long, slow smoking

tenderized even the toughest meat, turning a waste product into a hunk of heaven—not to mention a profitable sideline.

From small central Texas towns like Lockhart, Taylor, and Elgin, beef barbecue spread throughout the Southwest and Midwest. It met the pork barbecue tradition in Kansas City, one of the capitals of the 'Q,' and the two learned to live together in mutual respect on that neutral turf. Elsewhere, partisans may continue to clash on the merits of the meats, but anyone who tries both with an open mind will end up on the Kansas City side of the street. Even if pork ribs tickle you pink, you'll discover that the burnt ends of a brisket can't be beat.

Braggin' Rights Brisket	105	Cinderella Short Ribs	124
Dallas Dandy Brisket	107	Pan-Asian Short Ribs	126
Burnt Ends	108	Standing Tall Prime Rib	127
Deli-Cured Brisket	110	Pit Pot Roast	128
Bona Fide Fajitas	112	Southwest Stew on a Stick	129
Simply Elegant Beef Tenderloin	114	High Plains Jerky	131
Drunk and Dirty Tenderloin	115	The Humble Hot Dog	132
Tamarind Tenderloin	117	Humdinger Hamburgers	133
Carpetbag Steak	118	Ain't Momma's Meat Loaf	135
Garlic-Scented Sirloin	119	Brisket Hash	137
Soy-Glazed Flank Steak	121	Salpicón	138
PJ's Spicy Pinwheel Steak	122		

JUST HIDE THE PLATES IN THE PIT

"Barbecuing is only incidentally cooking, and barbecuists avoid, as much as possible, confusing the two. Barbecue is play—serious, mind-concentrating, important, risk-running, even exhausting . . . anything, in fact, except a chore. In real barbecue there's no washing up." John Thorne, *Simple Cooking* newsletter, 1988

Braggin' Rights Brisket

The medieval alchemists, who sought to turn base metals into gold, should have tried barbecuing a brisket on a wood-burning pit. The transformation of the meat is on the same magnitude of magic and much more successful. If you're cooking on a charcoal or electric smoker, skip to the recipe for Dallas Dandy Brisket.

SERVES 12 TO 18

WILD WILLY'S NUMBER ONE-DERFUL RUB

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup paprika

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup freshly ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup sugar

2 tablespoons chili powder

2 tablespoons garlic powder

2 tablespoons onion powder

2 teaspoons cayenne

8-pound to 12-pound packer-trimmed beef brisket

BASIC BEER MOP

12 ounces beer

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup cider vinegar

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, chopped

2 garlic cloves, minced

1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

1 tablespoon Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub

Struttin' Sauce (page 347), Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353), or other tomato-based barbecue sauce (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small

bowl. Apply the rub evenly to the brisket, massaging it into every little pore, reserving at least 1 tablespoon of the rub. Place the brisket in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the brisket from the refrigerator. Let the brisket sit at room temperature for 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. In a saucepan, mix together the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the brisket to the coolest part of the smoker, fat side up, so the juices will help baste the meat. Cook the brisket until well-done and tender, 1 to 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ hours per pound. Every hour or so, baste the blackening hunk with the mop.

6. When the meat is cooked, remove it from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 20 minutes. Then cut the fatty top section away from the leaner bottom portion. An easily identifiable layer

of fat separates the two areas. Trim the excess fat from both pieces and slice them thinly against the grain. Watch what you're doing because the grain changes direction. If you wish, serve Struttin' Sauce, Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce, or other tomato-based barbecue sauce on the side.

Serving Suggestion *For a rousing ranch barbecue, start with Can't Wait Queso (page 315) and Chicken from Hell (page 336), served with an iced tub of beer and a gargantuan pitcher of Sunny Sweet Tea (page 460). Accompany the brisket with Creamy Coleslaw (page 369), Cowpoke Pintos (page 374), San Antonio Cactus and Corn Salad (page 398), and Cracklin' Cornbread (page 387). To finish, what else but Texas Peach Cobbler (page 431)?*



BBQ TIP The best barbecued brisket is heavily smoked and significantly shrunk during the cooking process. The only way

to succeed completely is with a wood-burning pit or similar homemade smoker. If you have the right equipment, be sure to start with a packer-trimmed brisket, the whole cut with a thick layer of fat on one side. You may need to contact your butcher a few days ahead to get what you want. Do not cut it in half or smaller pieces and expect to reduce the cooking time proportionately. The meat retains its density unless you slice off the fatty top section to get the "flat-cut" used in the Dallas Dandy Brisket recipe on the next page.



BBQ TIP Traditional barbecue meats are cooked well done (like 180°F and above). However rare you may like some naturally tender meat, you'll enjoy beef brisket, pork shoulder, ribs, and similar cuts the most when they are thoroughly cooked. It's almost impossible to get them too done, which gives you a fair range of flexibility for timing how long to leave them in your smoker.

KEEPING THE TORCH LIGHTED AT THE HALL OF FLAME

Jim Goode knows barbecue about as well as anyone in the world. He's got two great BBQ restaurants in Houston along with the Goode Company's Hall of Flame (800-627-3502 and www.goodecompany.com for information and orders). Visit the store on Kirby Drive for anything you need for barbecuing at home, and then hop a block down the street to eat at the funky (but very hip) original Goode Company restaurant.

Dallas Dandy Brisket

Even if you have a wood-burning pit, you may not want to fire it up for a full day every time you want some brisket. This is the best alternative style we've found and it works great in a water smoker or charcoal grill. You won't get a full measure of the old-time barbecued brisket flavor, but you'll still have plenty to boast about.

SERVES 6 TO 8

DALLAS DANDY RUB

- 2 tablespoons Smoky Salt (page 30) or hickory-flavored salt
- 2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons paprika
- 2 tablespoons chili powder
- 2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

DALLAS DANDY MARINADE

- 2 tablespoons Dallas Dandy Rub
- 12 ounces beer
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- ½ cup cider or white vinegar
- ¼ cup vegetable oil
- 2 canned chipotle chiles plus 2 tablespoons adobo sauce
- 2 tablespoons pure liquid smoke
- 4-pound fully trimmed brisket section (sometimes called the flat cut)
- Smoked Onion Sauce (page 360), Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353), Struttin' Sauce (page 347), or other tomato-based barbecue sauce (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, stir together the dry rub ingredients in a small bowl. Combine 2 tablespoons of the

rub with the other marinade ingredients in a blender and purée. Place the brisket in a plastic bag and pour the marinade over it. Refrigerate the brisket overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the brisket from the refrigerator. Drain and discard the marinade. Pat the brisket down with all but 2 tablespoons of the remaining rub, coating the slab well. Let the brisket sit at room temperature for about 45 minutes.


3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Transfer the brisket to the smoker and cook for 3 hours. Place the meat on a sheet of heavy-duty foil, sprinkle it with the rest of the rub, and close the foil tightly. Cook for an additional 1½ to 2 hours, until well-done and tender.

5. Let the brisket sit at room temperature for 15 minutes. Trim any excess fat and slice the brisket thinly against the grain, changing direction as the grain changes. If you wish, serve Smoked Onion Sauce, Bar-

BQ Ranch Sauce, Struttin' Sauce, or other tomato-based barbecue sauce on the side.

Serving Suggestion For a summer supper, round out the meal with *Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas Salad* (page 396) and *Boarding House Macaroni Salad* (page 399). No dessert beats *The Best Cure for a Southern Summer* (page 447), unless perhaps it's the watermelon version of *Ice-Sicles* (page 446).



BBQ TIP Chipotle chiles, which are smoked jalapeños, contribute their smoldering heat and smokiness to many great barbecue dishes. They can be found dried, but we often prefer the canned variety for its flavorful adobo sauce, a heady concoction of vinegar, tomato, onions, spices, and smoke. *Muy sabrosa.*

BLESS THEM BONES

Dallas chef Stephan Pyles talks about barbecue as a way of life in his home state. The founder of several wonderful restaurants, including *Star Canyon*, and the author of *The New Texas Cuisine* (1993, Doubleday) and other fine cookbooks, says that barbecuing is “a ritual that’s bred in the bone.”



Burnt Ends

A Kansas City specialty, the burnt ends of a barbecued brisket are fit for a royal feast. Barbecue novices may shy away from these extra-crusty, extra-chewy little nuggets, but aficionados clamor for them. Any pit-smoked brisket has plenty of blackened surface to cut into ends, but we prefer to use the fatty top portion, sliced off in one piece and cooked again. If you don't want to take the time for this on the same day you barbecue initially, freeze the meat and put it back on the pit when you fire up again.

SERVES 4 TO 6

1 fully barbecued fatty top section Braggin' Rights Brisket (page 105)

Struttin' Sauce (page 347), Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353), or other tomato-based barbecue sauce (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Transfer the brisket section to the smoker and cook it for 3 to 4 hours, depending on its size. Let the brisket sit at room temperature for 10 minutes and then slice or shred it. After you break through the coal-like crust, the meat will pull apart into succulent shreds with chewy, deep-flavored ends. Savor at once, with Struttin' Sauce, Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce, or other tomato-based barbecue sauce on the side, if you wish.



BBQ TIP You should seldom trim the fat from meat before you barbecue it. The fat is a natural basting agent that helps to keep the meat moist and flavorful, particu-

larly when it's on the top side of the cut while it's cooking. Much of the fat melts away in your smoker—just check the water pan or reservoir—and the rest can be trimmed before serving.



BBQ TIP The layer of pink, or smoke ring, you find just under the surface of most slow-smoked meat is not an indication of undercooking. When the pink runs from the outside in, as it does in barbecue, it results from the smoking process and becomes more distinct as the meat gets well done. When the pink runs from the center out, like in a rare steak, the meat is cooked less thoroughly than possible. Barbecue authorities often judge smoked food initially by the depth of the smoke ring, hoping to find something heftier than a thin red line.

A BASTION OF BURNT ENDS

Hayward Spears, another guy from Hope, Arkansas, makes some of the best burnt ends in Kansas City. His suburban restaurant, Hayward's, isn't too slack on other kinds of meat either, cooking ten tons or so of barbecue a week. If you want some of the barbecue between bread, the large sandwiches are only fifty cents more than the regular size.



Deli-Cured Brisket

Don't bring this up in Fort Worth, but there are some non-Texan styles of brisket cookery that yield very good results. This version blends barbecue and deli traditions, introducing preparation techniques developed for corned beef and pastrami, two other great styles of cooked brisket. Like the previous recipe, we begin with a flat-cut brisket section, allowing you to get great results in a just about any kind of smoker. Serve this lightly smoked version on its own with dill pickles and a couple of good mustards, or piled high on sandwiches with horseradish on the side.

SERVES 6 TO 8

BRINE

½ cup kosher salt

6 tablespoons packed brown sugar

¼ cup pickling spices

4-pound fully trimmed brisket section
(sometimes called the flat cut)

DELI RUB

¼ cup cracked black pepper

¼ cup cracked coriander seeds

¼ cup cracked mustard seeds

6 tablespoons kosher salt

2 tablespoons garlic powder

DELI MOP

Remaining Deli Rub

1 cup white vinegar

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, stir together the brine ingredients with ½ gallon of water in a large bowl. Place the brisket in a plastic bag and pour the brine over it. Refrigerate the brisket overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the brisket from the refrigerator. Drain and discard the brine. Pat the brisket down with all but 3 tablespoons of the remaining rub, coating the slab heavily. Let the brisket sit at room temperature for about 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you are going to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the mop ingredients with 1 cup water in a saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the brisket to the smoker and cook for 3 hours, mopping at 45 minute intervals in a wood-burning pit or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Place the meat on a sheet of heavy-duty foil, and close the foil tightly. Cook for an additional 1½ to 2 hours, until well-done and tender.

6. Let the brisket sit at room temperature for 15 minutes. Trim any excess fat and slice the brisket thinly against the grain, changing direction as the grain changes. Leftovers are good cold or reheated.

Variation: Deli-Cured Brisket and Eggs

For four breakfast eaters, whisk together 8 eggs with 2 tablespoons of water and

some salt and pepper. Thinly slice about 1 pound of the brisket and cook it in a skillet over medium heat until the meat leaves a thick film of fat in the bottom of the skillet. Pour the egg mixture over the meat and cook, lifting around the edges and tilting the skillet so the uncooked egg runs underneath, until the eggs just begin to set, 3 to 4 minutes. Nudge the mixture onto a platter and serve.

PAPPY'S FEAST

W. Lee "Pappy" O'Daniel gained fame in Texas pitching his Light Crust flour on the radio with country-and-western music. That gave him the credentials to get elected governor and later U.S. Senator. For his inaugural ceremony in 1941, he invited everyone in the state to Austin for a barbecue dinner. Some twenty thousand people showed up and ate about a pound of meat each.



Bona Fide Fajitas

In addition to *barbacoa de cabeza*, Mexican ranchers and *vaqueros* in the Southwest gave the world *fajitas*, another slow-starter. The diaphragm muscle of cattle, *fajitas* or skirt steak, didn't win acceptance even in Texas until the last few decades. After the dish became trendy across the country, restaurants began misusing the Spanish term to refer to almost any kind of grilled meat rolled in a flour tortilla. The only true *fajitas* are made with beef skirt, and the best ones are still slow-smoked outdoors over a wood fire. If you want to be literal, this is a *taco de fajitas*, but most people know it simply by the name of the meat itself.

SERVES 6 TO 8

FAJITAS MARINADE AND OPTIONAL MOP

12 ounces beer

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup vegetable oil

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, chopped

Juice of 2 limes

4 garlic cloves, minced

1 bay leaf

2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

1 tablespoon chili powder

1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

1 teaspoon crushed chilepins or chiles
pequins or Tabasco sauce

1 teaspoon ground cumin

2-pound to 3-pound whole beef skirt,
trimmed of fat and membrane

PICO DE GALLO

4 small red-ripe tomatoes, preferably Roma
or Italian plum, diced

$\frac{1}{2}$ bell pepper, preferably red, chopped

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup chopped cilantro

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup chopped red onion

2 to 3 fresh serranos or 3 to 4 fresh
jalapeños, minced

Juice of $\frac{1}{2}$ lime

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

2 to 4 tablespoons tomato juice (optional)

Warm flour tortillas

Lime wedges and cilantro sprigs, for garnish

Sour cream

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a blender and purée. Place the skirt steak in a plastic bag or shallow dish and pour the marinade over it. Refrigerate the skirt steak overnight, turning occasionally if needed to saturate the surface with the marinade.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the skirt from the refrigerator and drain it, reserving the marinade if you

plan to baste the meat. Let the skirt sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. Make the pico de gallo by combining all the ingredients except the tomato juice in a bowl. If you prefer a more liquid consistency, add some or all of the tomato juice. Refrigerate until serving time.

5. If you are using the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), boil the marinade in a saucepan over high heat for several minutes and then keep the mop warm over low heat.

6. Transfer the skirt to the smoker. Cook for approximately 1 hour, mopping every 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

7. If your smoker has a separate grill area for cooking directly over the fire, or if you have another grill handy, move the meat there and sear it for 1 to 2 minutes per

side. This step adds a pleasant crispy exterior texture, but isn’t necessary for flavor. Alternatively, smoke the meat for about 15 minutes longer.

8. Let the skirt sit for 10 minutes and then slice thinly at a diagonal angle against the grain. Pile the meat and warm tortillas on a platter garnished with lime wedges and cilantro, and serve the pico de gallo and sour cream on the side.



BBQ TIP A red-orange, pea-shaped chile pod that grows wild in parts of the Southwest, chiltepíns add serious zing to barbecue marinades. Their pointed-pod cousins, chiles pequíns, pack similar firepower. If your market has neither, Tabasco or a similar hot sauce makes a good substitute.

SAVE THE TEETH FOR ME

On the old California *ranchos*, beef head’s barbecue was a special feast for the full family. In her delightful 1988 *California Rancho Cooking* (Olive Press, reissued by Sasquatch Books, 2001), Jacqueline Higuera McMahan recounts how the men dug a pit and tended the fire overnight, women made tortillas and salsas, and the children stuffed mint, oregano, and rosemary into the bull’s ears and mouth. When they dug up the head after hours of covered smoking, the chief cook got the eyes and the cheek meat, and the boys grabbed “the huge set of teeth so they could run off to frighten any squeamish young ladies on the sidelines.”

Simply Elegant Beef Tenderloin

Few main dishes dazzle guests like beef tenderloin. This is an easy but elegant version, flavored simply with garlic, salt, and pepper, and then polished to perfection with a quick sear and a slow smoke.

SERVES 6 OR MORE

ROASTED GARLIC MASH

1 whole head of garlic

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 teaspoon olive oil or vegetable oil

2-pound beef tenderloin

1 to 2 tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon white pepper

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups beef stock

3 tablespoons olive oil or vegetable oil

1. Break the garlic head apart into individual cloves, but don't peel them. Place them in a cast-iron or other heavy skillet and dry-roast over medium heat until soft and brown, about 6 to 8 minutes, shaking or stirring as needed to color evenly. Peel the garlic (a quick task once roasted) and transfer to a small bowl. Using the back of a large fork, mash the garlic lightly. Add the salt and oil and continue mashing until you have a rough purée.

2. If you plan to baste the meat, reserve 1 teaspoon of the garlic paste. Rub the beef

with the paste, massaging it into every little crevice, then combine the two peppers and pat them over the surface. Wrap tightly in plastic and let sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

3. If you are using the mop (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the reserved garlic paste with the beef stock and 2 tablespoons of oil in a saucepan and warm over low heat.

4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

5. In a heavy skillet, heat the remaining 1 tablespoon oil over high heat. Sear the meat on all sides, about 30 seconds per side and ends. Transfer the tenderloin to the smoker and cook for 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ to 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ hours, mopping every 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The meat is ready when the internal temperature reaches 140°F to 145°F. Be careful not to overcook since tenderloin is best rare to medium-rare. Slice the tenderloin and serve.



Drunk and Dirty Tenderloin

This one owes its inspiration to our old Kentucky home—the one in Bourbon County. It was there, in the same year that the country adopted the Constitution, that a Baptist preacher named Elijah Craig invented the wonderful American whiskey that flavors this tenderloin. We developed the recipe originally, like a couple of others in the chapter, for our *Texas Home Cooking* (1993, Harvard Common Press). Over the years, it has proved to be one of our most popular dishes, great for casual dinners and fancy affairs alike.

SERVES 6 OR MORE

DRUNK AND DIRTY MARINADE

- 1 cup low-sodium soy sauce
- ½ cup bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
- ¼ cup Worcestershire sauce
- 2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- ½ teaspoon ground ginger
- 4 garlic cloves, minced
- 2-pound beef tenderloin
- 2 tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper
- 1 teaspoon ground white pepper
- ¼ cup vegetable oil

1. At least 4 hours, and up to 12 hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients with ½ cup water in a lidded jar. Place the tenderloin in a plastic bag or shallow dish and pour the marinade over the meat. Turn the meat occasionally if needed to saturate the surface with the marinade.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the tenderloin from the refrigerator and drain the marinade, reserving it. Cover the tenderloin thoroughly with the black pepper first, then the white pepper. Let the tenderloin sit for 30 minutes.

4. Pour half the marinade into a saucepan and refrigerate it until the tenderloin is cooked. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), pour the other half of the marinade into another saucepan and stir in the oil. Bring this mop mixture to a boil over high heat and boil for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat. Sear the meat (without oil) on all sides, about 30 seconds per side and ends. Transfer the tenderloin to the smoker and cook for 1½ to 2 hours, mopping every 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The meat is ready when the internal temperature reaches 140°F to 145°F. Be careful not

to overcook since tenderloin is best rare to medium-rare.

6. To make the sauce, bring the reserved portion of marinade to a boil, and boil for several minutes, until the marinade is reduced by one-fourth. Slice the tenderloin and serve topped by spoonfuls of the sauce.

Serving Suggestion *When you need an impressive but homey menu, start with Smoked Olives (page 321) and Drop-Dead Trout Spread (page 329) with crackers or bread. Alongside the tenderloin, offer garlicky scalloped potatoes and spinach sautéed with baby tomatoes. Cranberry-Ginger Crumble (page 433) completes a memorable meal.*

A TOAST TO STARNES

Starnes Bar-B-Q in Paducah thrives on Kentucky contrariness. Though mutton is the best-known barbecue of choice in much of the western part of the state, pork and beef are the stars at Starnes. Even more ornery, the two-booth joint serves its delicious meat on *toasted* bread, an idea that takes just a bite to like.



Tamarind Tenderloin

Snappy Pickapeppa sauce, a tamarind-based elixir, makes an easy yet complex flavoring for steaks and chops. Here it adds verve to a top cut of meat and the accompanying table sauce.

SERVES 6 OR MORE

2-pound beef tenderloin
2 to 3 tablespoons Pickapeppa sauce
1½ cups beef stock
1 tablespoon vegetable oil

TENDERLOIN DRY RUB

1 teaspoon garlic powder
1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
½ teaspoon ground ginger
½ teaspoon ground allspice
½ teaspoon packed brown sugar

TAMARIND SAUCE

3-ounce package cream cheese, softened
6 tablespoons Pickapeppa sauce
3 tablespoons half-and-half
1 garlic clove, minced
Thinly sliced scallion rings

1. About 1 to 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, rub the meat with the 2 tablespoons Pickapeppa sauce. Wrap the tenderloin in plastic and refrigerate for at least 30 minutes and up to 1½ hours.

2. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), combine the re-

maining 1 tablespoon of Pickapeppa sauce with the beef stock and oil in a saucepan and warm over low heat.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Combine in a small bowl the dry rub ingredients. Remove the tenderloin from the refrigerator. Cover the tenderloin thoroughly with the dry rub and let it sit uncovered at room temperature for 30 minutes.

5. In a heavy skillet, sear the meat quickly on all sides over high heat. Transfer the tenderloin to the smoker and cook until the internal temperature reaches 140°F to 145°F, about 1½ to 2 hours, mopping every 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Be careful not to overcook since tenderloin is best rare to medium-rare.

6. Let the meat sit 10 minutes while you make the sauce. Combine the ingredients in a small saucepan over low heat, cooking just until the cheese is melted. Slice the tenderloin and serve, topped by spoonfuls of the sauce and a sprinkling of scallions.

Carpetbag Steak

The carpetbag steak is an American classic that's disappearing quickly. Revive the idea tonight, plumping up a succulent steak with a stuffing of fresh briny oysters—the ultimate in surf 'n' turf eating.

SERVES 2 TO 4

CREOLE RUB

1 tablespoon celery salt

1½ teaspoons paprika

1½ teaspoons freshly ground black pepper

1½ teaspoons white pepper

1½ teaspoons packed brown sugar

¾ teaspoon garlic powder

¾ teaspoon dried thyme

¾ teaspoon cayenne

Two 12-ounce to 14-ounce New York sirloin strip steaks, cut with a pocket for stuffing
⅓ to ½ cup shucked oysters, with their liquor

CARPETBAG MOP (OPTIONAL)

Reserved oyster liquor

½ cup beef stock or clam juice

2 tablespoons cider vinegar

1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil

1 teaspoon Creole Rub

1. About 1 to 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the dry rub ingredients together in a small bowl. Rub the steaks well with the mixture inside and out, saving at least 1 teaspoon of the rub for the stuffing and 1 teaspoon for the mop. Wrap the steaks in plastic and refrigerate them.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. About 20 minutes before barbecuing, remove the steaks from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature. Drain the oysters gently. Reserve their liquor if you plan to baste the steaks. Toss the oysters with 1 teaspoon of the rub and stuff half the oysters into each steak.

4. If you are using the mop (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the oyster liquor with the remaining mop ingredients and ½ cup water in a small saucepan. Bring the mixture to a boil and then keep it warm over low heat.

5. In a heavy skillet, sear the meat quickly on both sides over high heat. Transfer the steaks to the smoker and cook for 45 to 60 minutes, depending upon your desired doneness. Mop twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. We prefer the steaks when the internal temperature reaches 145°F to 150°F, or medium-rare.

6. Let the steaks sit for 5 minutes and serve. Cut the steaks in half for more delicate appetites.

Serving Suggestion Add baked beans, white rice, good bread with garlic-dill butter, and Candy Bar Cheesecake (page 439).



BBQ TIP When preparing “uptown” cuts of meat, like tenderloins and steaks, for the smoker, we have found that the meat develops the most appealing crusty

caramelized surface and deep color if it is seared over high heat before smoking. Allow enough time for the skillet to heat adequately before you add the meat. If you don’t get a spirited sizzle, you’re not searing.

HOLY SMOKE

Dallas chef Dean Fearing, from the Mansion on Turtle Creek, once said that in Texas, “Barbecue is God.” Thinking about his comment a minute, he added, “or maybe it’s just God’s work.”

Garlic-Scented Sirloin

This may not be the scent you want if you’re feeling frisky, but the heap of garlic in this sirloin sure keeps the meat moist.

SERVES 6

BASIC BLACK RUB

1½ tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2-pound to 2½-pound boneless top sirloin steak about 2 inches thick, cut with a pocket for stuffing, or two 1-pound to 1½-pound steaks of similar shape, each about 1 inch thick

FILLING

1 medium whole head of garlic, roasted (baked whole for about 45 minutes at 350°F, or skillet-roasted as described on page 114)
1 tablespoon butter, preferably unsalted

⅛ teaspoon anchovy paste

½ cup sliced scallions

2 tablespoons red wine

SCENTED MOP (OPTIONAL)

½ cup red wine

½ cup red wine vinegar

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

2 garlic cloves, minced

1. About 1 to 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the dry rub ingredients together in a small bowl. Rub the steak

well with the mixture inside and out. Wrap the steak in plastic and refrigerate it.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. About 20 minutes before barbecuing, remove the meat from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature.

4. To make the filling, break the garlic bulb apart and squeeze each soft clove from its skin.

5. In a small skillet, heat the butter with the anchovy paste. Add the garlic, mashing it with a fork to form a rough purée. Stir in the scallions and wine, and cook a minute or two, until the scallions are limp. Remove the pan from the heat and let the filling cool briefly. Spoon the filling into the pocket of the sirloin or, if you are using two individual steaks, layer the filling on one steak and top it with the other. It is not necessary (or desirable) to secure the pair with toothpicks as long as you handle the sirloin “sandwich” with care.

6. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir together the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

7. In a heavy skillet, sear the sirloin quickly on both sides over high heat. Transfer the meat to the smoker and cook for about $1\frac{3}{4}$ hours, depending upon your desired doneness. Mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. We prefer the meat when the internal temperature reaches 145°F to 150°F, or medium-rare. Let the meat sit for 5 minutes and serve.

Serving Suggestion *Dinner could begin with Brined Bluepoints (page 242). Accompany the steak with a mixed vegetable salad, perhaps marinated green beans and carrots, and Blue Corn Muffins (page 390). Try a fruit dessert, such as spears of fresh pineapple topped with a little rum and brown sugar.*

A TRUE OUTPOST

Unless you're looking for a fine horse to buy, you've got to be intent on barbecue to get to Clark's Outpost in Tioga, Texas. In rich ranch country an hour north of Dallas, the sprawling roadhouse fills up in the evening with locals, lost tourists, and barbecue pilgrims. Definitely try the brisket for a main dish, and for a starter, get adventuresome with the calf fries (if you don't know, ask your daddy).

Soy-Glazed Flank Steak

Flank steaks make excellent barbecue, particularly when marinated.

SERVES 6 TO 8

SOY MARINADE AND GLAZE

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup soy sauce, preferably a low-sodium variety

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup Pickapeppa sauce

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup Worcestershire sauce

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup red wine

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup red wine vinegar

3 tablespoons packed brown sugar, or more to taste

$1\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons oil, preferably sesame

2 garlic cloves, minced

2 flank steaks (about $2\frac{1}{2}$ pounds total)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the flank steaks in a plastic bag or shallow dish and pour the marinade over them. Refrigerate the steaks overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the steaks from the refrigerator. Drain them and reserve the marinade. Let the steaks sit at room temperature for 25 minutes.

4. In a heavy saucepan, bring the marinade to a boil and boil it for 5 to 10 minutes, until reduced by one-third. Keep the mixture warm for glazing the meat.

5. Brush the glaze over the steaks and transfer them to the smoker. Brush the steaks with the glaze again after about 25 minutes. Cook for a total of 45 to 55 minutes, until the meat is rare to medium-rare.

6. Let the steaks rest for 5 or 10 minutes before slicing thinly across the grain. Serve the slices with additional glaze on the top or on the side.



BBQ TIP Allowing food to come to cool room temperature before barbecuing promotes quick and even cooking, and with meat, fowl, and fish, it reduces the chance that a cold center will harbor bacteria. It's unsafe, however, to leave most food at room temperature for any longer than 1 hour. Always adjust the order of the recipe steps to prevent leaving your meat out for too long.



PJ's Spicy Pinwheel Steak

We got the idea for this stuffed round steak from Wayne Whitworth, founder of Pitt's & Spitt's pits. We named it for his delightful wife, PJ, who's as spicy and spirited as the steak.

SERVES 4

- 1-pound top round steak
- 2 teaspoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26), Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29), or other savory seasoning blend

FILLING

- 3 tablespoons oil, preferably peanut
- $\frac{1}{2}$ pound bulk chorizo or other spicy sausage
- 2 tablespoons minced onion
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ cups cooked greens (collards, kale, and spinach are especially good)
- 1 cup dry bread crumbs
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup grated Parmesan cheese
- 2 tablespoons dry mustard
- Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste
- 1 egg, lightly beaten

STEAK MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 1 cup beer
- 2 tablespoons cider or white vinegar
- 1 tablespoon oil, preferably peanut

1. About 1 hour before you plan to barbecue, cut the steak into quarters and pound each quarter into a $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch-thick rectangle. Combine the dry rub ingredients together in a small bowl and sprinkle the steaks with the spice mixture. Let the steaks sit at

room temperature while you finish the preparations.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Warm the oil in a heavy skillet over medium heat. Add the chorizo, onion, and garlic, and sauté briefly until the chorizo is cooked through. Mix in the remaining filling ingredients. Spoon equal portions of the filling over each piece of steak. Roll up each piece of steak from one of its long sides, jelly-roll style. Make the rolls snug but leave some room for the filling to expand. Secure the rolls with toothpicks.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir together the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Transfer the rolls to the smoker and cook for 35 to 45 minutes. Mop once before closing the smoker and again after 25 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Serve immediately, sliced into pinwheels for the most attractive presentation. Remember to remove those toothpicks!



BBQ TIP Oak is the best all-around wood for barbecuing beef. For additional flavor,

we like to add some cherry wood or a little mesquite near the end of the cooking.

I DO, NOW PASS THE 'Q'

PJ and Wayne Whitworth got married in style—real barbecue style. They were hitched between two pits at the barbecue cook-off that opens the Houston Livestock Show and Rodeo, and they celebrated the blessed event afterwards by serving 'Q' to a thousand witnesses. The wedding cake was tiered layers of jalapeño cornbread topped with a Velveeta cheese frosting.



Cinderella Short Ribs

The fatty beef short rib, a cheap cut often made into stew meat, is always one of the ugliest things at a grocery store. A little slow-smoking does wonders for the appearance and sure makes it taste pretty.

SERVES 6

WILD WILLY'S NUMBER ONE-DERFUL RUB

- ¾ cup paprika
- ¼ cup freshly ground black pepper
- ¼ cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- ¼ cup sugar
- 2 tablespoons chili powder
- 2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 2 tablespoons onion powder
- 2 teaspoons cayenne

5 to 6 pounds bone-in beef short ribs, cut between the ribs

BASIC BEER MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 12 ounces beer
- ½ cup cider vinegar
- ¼ cup vegetable oil
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 tablespoon Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub

CINDERELLA GLAZE AND SAUCE

- 1½ cups ketchup
- 1 cup beer
- ¾ cup cider vinegar
- ¼ cup minced cilantro
- 3 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- 2 teaspoons ground cumin
- 1½ teaspoons ground anise
- 1½ teaspoons salt
- 1 teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a bowl. Apply about half of the rub evenly to the ribs, reserving the rest of the spice mixture. Place the ribs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator. Sprinkle them lightly but thoroughly with more rub. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the mop ingredients with ½ cup water in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the meat to the smoker, fatty side up. Cook for 4 to 5 hours, depending on the size of the ribs, until well done. Mop the meat once an hour until the last hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your type of smoker.

6. While the ribs are barbecuing, prepare the glaze. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the liquid to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook the mixture for 30 minutes, stirring frequently. Brush the ribs with the glaze once or twice during the last hour of cooking. Return the remaining sauce to the stove and simmer for an additional 15 minutes to thicken it.

7. Remove the ribs from the smoker and let them sit at room temperature for 10 min-

utes. Trim the fat from the meat. Serve with the reduced Cinderella Sauce on the side. If you have any extra sauce, pull out a spoon and finish it off.



BBQ TIP Any tomato-based sauce, including a barbecue sauce, will burn on the surface of food if applied as a glaze before the last hour of cooking. In rare instances, that's desirable, but not as a general rule.

REVOLUTIONARY RIBS

The town of Gonzales figured prominently in the Texas war for independence from Mexico, but settled into relative somnolence after the 1830s. Ray Lopez and his family perked things up again in 1959, when they began selling Ray's pit-smoked barbecue at their Gonzales Food Market. Robb Walsh in the *Legends of Texas Barbecue Cookbook* (2002, Chronicle Books) calls the beef short ribs "the best I've ever had."



Pan-Asian Short Ribs

This is an entirely different but equally delicious way to flavor humble-looking short ribs.

SERVES 6

PAN-ASIAN PANDEMONIUM PASTE

- 1/2 cup roughly chopped scallions
- 2 walnut-size chunks fresh ginger, peeled
- 1/2 to 1 tablespoon Asian chile-garlic paste
- 3 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
- 2 tablespoons soy sauce
- 1 tablespoon Asian fish sauce

5 to 6 pounds bone-in beef short ribs, cut between the ribs

SHORT-RIBS MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 2 tablespoons soy sauce
- 2 tablespoons rice vinegar or white vinegar
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil

Plum Good Slopping Sauce (page 364)
(optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the paste ingredients in a blender or food processor and process until a smooth thick purée forms. Apply the paste evenly to the ribs, reserving 1 tablespoon of the mixture if you plan to baste the ribs. Place the ribs in a plastic bag and refrigerate them overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator. Let the ribs sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you are using the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), combine the reserved seasoning paste, soy sauce, vinegar, and oil with 1 cup water in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the meat to the smoker, fatty side up. Cook for 4 to 5 hours, depending on the size of the ribs, until well done. Mop the meat once an hour until the last hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your type of smoker. If you want to glaze the ribs with sauce, brush the ribs with it once or twice during the last hour of cooking.

6. Remove the ribs from the smoker and let them sit at room temperature for 10 minutes. Trim the fat from the meat and serve.



Standing Tall Prime Rib

Try to get a true prime rib for this memorable dish, meat that meets USDA standards for the highest grade beef. The cut that most supermarkets sell as a prime rib is actually just a USDA choice rib roast, good meat but not superior.

SERVES 4

STANDING TALL MARINADE AND OPTIONAL MOP

1 1/3 cups red wine

1 1/3 cups red wine vinegar

1/3 cup olive oil

4 teaspoons dried rosemary

4 garlic cloves, minced

2 teaspoons dried thyme

3-pound prime standing rib roast

BASIC BLACK RUB

1 1/2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper

1 1/2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Sprigs of fresh rosemary, for garnish
(optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the roast in a plastic bag, pour the marinade over it, and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the roast from the refrigerator and drain it, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste the meat. Combine the dry

rub ingredients in a small bowl and rub the roast with the mixture. Let the roast sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you are using the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), bring the marinade to a boil in a saucepan and boil for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat. Transfer the roast to the smoker, fatty side up. Cook for about 2 1/2 hours, mopping every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Cook the meat rare, to an internal temperature of about 140°F for the best flavor.

5. Remove the roast from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 10 minutes before carving. Serve immediately.

Serving Suggestion Use this as the centerpiece for a special meal, such as Christmas Eve or New Year’s Eve dinner. Creamy Catfish Spread (page 328) and 007 Shrimp (page 339) make good nibbles. Parmesan-topped baked potatoes, steamed broccoli with orange butter, Squash Relish (page 415), and Butter-milk Biscuits (page 388) with fruit preserves might round out the main course. For dessert, poach pears or other winter fruit in sugar syrup with a touch of vermouth.

Pit Pot Roast

Chuck roast benefits from long, slow cooking, such as the braising technique used in most oven-cooked pot roasts. Barbecuing provides similar low and slow heat, and infuses the meat with the heady aroma of wood smoke, as in this spicy version.

SERVES 6 TO 8

WILD WILLY'S NUMBER ONE-DERFUL RUB

- ¾ cup paprika
- ¼ cup freshly ground black pepper
- ¼ cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- ¼ cup sugar
- 2 tablespoons chili powder
- 2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 2 tablespoons onion powder
- 2 teaspoons cayenne

- 3-pound boneless shoulder chuck roast
- 3 to 4 garlic cloves, slivered
- 1 to 2 pickled jalapeños, slivered

PIT POT MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 16 ounces beer
- ½ cup cider vinegar
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil
- 2 tablespoons pickling liquid from jar or can of pickled jalapeños
- 10-ounce can Ro-Tel tomatoes with green chiles or an equal quantity of canned whole tomatoes and juice
- ¼ cup beef stock or beer (if you're not using the mop)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the dry rub ingredients in a small

bowl. Insert the garlic and jalapeño slivers into openings in the meat's surface. Massage the meat well with the dry rub, place it in a plastic bag, and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the roast from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir together the mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the roast to the smoker and cook for 4 hours, mopping every 45 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Place the roast on a large sheet of heavy-duty aluminum foil and pour the tomatoes over the meat. Add ¼ cup mop, beef stock, or beer. Seal the foil tightly and continue cooking the roast for 3 more hours, until the meat is falling-apart tender.

6. Remove the roast from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 10 minutes before serving.



BBQ TIP Aluminum foil is a wonder wrap in barbecuing, useful in many ways. When you cover food with it during the cooking

process, as with the Pit Pot Roast, the foil creates a little steam oven that keeps meat moist. In other situations it can prevent delicate items from getting too smoky.

LET'S DEMAND A RECOUNT

The Taylor, Texas, International Barbecue Cook-off started in the late 1970s in response to the legislature declaring chili the official state dish. Every August the local organizers prove to the politicians that 'Q' is still the queen of Lone Star cooking. Home to some venerable barbecue joints, the town of Taylor makes a perfect spot to sound off on the subject.



Southwest Stew on a Stick

An old favorite, beef stew, tastes as good in kebob form as in a bowl. You'll want to use a tender cut of beef, though, for the relatively short cooking period. The skewers are finished with a beer and molasses glaze.

SERVES 6

STEW RUB

- 2 teaspoons chili powder
- 1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt, or more to taste
- 1 teaspoon dry mustard
- ¾ teaspoons ground cumin
- ½ teaspoon cayenne
- ½ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- 2 pounds sirloin, cut into 1-inch cubes

- 1½ cups pearl onions, peeled and parboiled
- 6 carrots, cut into thick chunks and parboiled

STEW GLAZE

- ¾ cup beer
- ¾ cup beef stock
- 2 tablespoons tomato paste
- 2 tablespoons molasses
- ½ teaspoon chili powder

- 1.** About 2 to 4 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the dry rub ingredients in a small bowl. Toss the meat cubes with the rub, spoon them into a large plastic bag, and refrigerate.
- 2.** Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
- 3.** Remove the meat from the refrigerator and skewer pieces of meat alternately with the onions and carrots. Cover the kebobs loosely with plastic and let them sit at room temperature while you prepare the glaze.
- 4.** In a saucepan, combine the glaze ingredients and simmer over medium heat for 20 minutes or until reduced by about a third. Keep the glaze warm.
- 5.** Brush the skewers with the glaze and transfer them to the smoker. Cook for 30 to 45 minutes, until your desired doneness, brushing the kebobs with glaze about 5 minutes before they are done. Serve hot, brushed again with the glaze, if you wish.



HOLD THE LETTUCE ON MINE

Barbecue restaurants in California range from fancy to funky. In Beverly Hills, pricey ribs come with a selection from the salad bar. You're better off in Oakland, where you may get a side of collard greens. Our favorite spot—partially for the name—is Dr. Hogly-Wogly's Tyler, Texas Bar-B-Que in Los Angeles. The brisket is terrific, but if you want endive, you better bring your own.

High Plains Jerky

Jerky was one of the main meats of the West when drying food was a major means of preservation. This is a simulated barbecue version, developed for flavor rather than longevity.

SERVES 6 TO 8 AS A SNACK

1 pound top round steak

JERKY MARINADE

½ cup Worcestershire sauce

½ cup soy sauce

¼ cup packed brown sugar

4 garlic cloves, minced

2 teaspoons freshly ground black pepper

2 teaspoons ground red chile, preferably New Mexican or ancho

1 teaspoon onion powder

1. About 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, place the meat in the freezer to make slicing it easier. After 30 to 40 minutes, remove the meat from the freezer and slice it as thin as you can with a good sharp knife. Trim the meat of all fat.

2. Combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the meat in a plastic bag or shallow dish and pour the marinade over it. Marinate for about 1 hour.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the meat from the refrigerator, drain it, and let it sit at room temperature for 10 to 15 minutes.

5. Transfer the meat to a sheet of heavy-duty foil, separating the pieces. Place the meat in the coolest part of your smoker and cook until the meat begins to blacken, about 45 minutes. Wrap the foil loosely over the meat and continue barbecuing for another 1 to 1¼ hours, until well-dried.

6. Remove the jerky from the smoker and let it cool to room temperature before serving. Refrigerate any leftovers.



BBQ TIP When you order logs for a barbecue pit, ask for the smallest ones the supplier has. The ideal size is 12 to 14 inches, but anything up to 16 inches will work fine in most fireboxes.



The Humble Hot Dog

Los Angeles Dodgers fans once raised a big stink and forced the ballpark to start grilling its Dodger Dogs again instead of steaming them. That's a step in the right direction, but the difference in taste is nothing compared to a smokin' dog.

SERVES AS MANY AS YOU WISH

All-beef hot dogs, probably lots of them, of a good brand, such as Vienna Beef, Hebrew National, or Boar's Head

Squishy white bread hot dog buns

Mustard

Chopped onions

Pickle relish

Barbecue sauce, maybe Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) or Struttin' Sauce (page 347)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Transfer the hot dogs to the smoker and cook for about 1 hour, or until the skins look ready to burst. Remove them from the smoker and serve immediately with all the trimmings.



THREE MEATS ARE BETTER THAN ONE

Just south of Kansas City, Snead's looks the part of a barbecue bastion, a plain, rural roadhouse café with an aging sign no taller than the trees. Try one of the magnificent log sandwiches, a long bun stuffed with a robust mixture of barbecued beef, pork, and ham. It'll turn a city slicker into a lumberjack.

Humdinger Hamburgers

This is the way to one-up uppity neighbors who brag about their grilled hamburgers. Smoking makes ground meat taste like tenderloin.

SERVES 4

WILD WILLY'S NUMBER ONE-DERFUL RUB

- 3 tablespoons paprika
 - 1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper
 - 1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
 - 1 tablespoon sugar
 - 1½ teaspoons chili powder
 - 1½ teaspoons garlic powder
 - 1½ teaspoons onion powder
 - ½ teaspoon cayenne
- 2 pounds freshly ground beef, avoiding the higher-priced leaner meat
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- 3 chopped roasted green chiles, preferably New Mexican, Anaheim, or poblano, fresh or frozen (optional)

BASIC BEEF MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 6 ounces beer
 - ¼ cup cider vinegar
 - 2 tablespoons vegetable oil
 - ¼ medium onion, chopped
 - 1 garlic clove, minced
 - 1½ teaspoons Worcestershire sauce
 - 1½ teaspoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub
- Sourdough bread, sliced
- Mustard, mayonnaise, dill pickles, tomatoes, lettuce, and Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353) (optional)

1. About 1 to 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl.
2. In another bowl, mix together the hamburger, onion, and chiles with your hands. Form the mixture into 4 thick patties and apply the dry rub thoroughly to all surfaces, reserving at least 1½ teaspoons of the spice mixture. Cover the patties with plastic and refrigerate them.
3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
4. Remove the patties from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 15 minutes.
5. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir the mop ingredients together with ½ cup water in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.
6. Transfer the patties to the smoker and cook for about 1 hour, mopping every 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.
7. Serve the burgers between slices of sourdough bread. Try a bite before you reach for any of the optional toppings, all good but less than essential with the richly flavored meat.

Serving Suggestion *Make the Humdinger Hamburgers (page 133) and The Humble Hot Dog (page 132) the stars of a fall picnic. Add some Devil-May-Care Eggs (page 408), California Crunch (page 394), Peanut Butter Cake (page 434), and a light, fruity red wine.*

Variation: Jerk Burger We recommend enthusiastic tinkering with the basic burger, but if you're hesitant about it, try this to get you started. Replace Wild Willy's rub with Jamaican Jerk Rub (page 33). Skip the green chiles in the burgers themselves. We like a topping of mayonnaise mixed about half-and-half with store-bought Pickapeppa sauce or Jamaican jerk sauce, or our Jamaican Barbecue Sauce (page 359).

BBQ TIP For the best ground beef for barbecuing, ask your butcher to twice grind a piece of chuck, top or bottom round, or rump, with enough fat to make up about 20 percent of the whole.

BBQ TIP Some of our recipes call for fresh green chiles, such as New Mexican or Anaheim, which must be roasted first to blister the tough skin. You can roast them individually over a gas stove burner, the same way you toast marshmallows over a fire. Spear the chiles on a fork, place them near the flame, and heat them until the skins have blistered and darkened uniformly. If you're roasting several chiles, you might want to do it in an oven. Place a layer of pods on a baking sheet and broil them until all are dark, turning the chiles frequently. After roasting, place the hot chiles in a plastic bag to steam and cool. Peel the roasted pods if you want to use them immediately, or freeze them, which makes the peeling easier. Canned chiles make a poor substitute for a homemade version, whether fresh or frozen.

BARBECUE BARGAIN

The biggest barbecue cook-off in Texas launches the Houston Livestock Show and Rodeo each February, a little ol' event that relies on thousands of volunteers and attracts well over a million spectators. The \$5 price of admission to the barbecue competition, held in the Astrodome parking lot, includes live music performances, two-step dancing, and one brisket sandwich with beans and slaw.

Ain't Momma's Meat Loaf

As with a hamburger, smoking can raise meat loaf from the mundane to the sublime. We like this version, but if you—or your momma—have a favorite recipe, it can be modified for barbecuing by making the meat mixture extra moist and by adding plenty of Worcestershire sauce, vinegar, or other sharp flavor to cut the richness of the smoke.

SERVES 5

MEAT LOAF

- 1 tablespoon vegetable oil
- ½ cup minced onion
- ½ green or red bell pepper, chopped fine
- 3 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- ½ teaspoon ground cumin
- 1¼ pounds ground beef
- ¾ pound ground pork
- 1½ cups dry bread crumbs
- 3 tablespoons sour cream
- 2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 1 large egg
- ¼ cup stock, preferably beef
- 1 teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce to taste

BASIC BEER MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 12 ounces beer
- ½ cup cider vinegar
- ¼ cup vegetable oil
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

- 1 tablespoon Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26), Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29), or other savory seasoning blend

Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353), Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce (page 358), or other spicy tomato-based barbecue sauce

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. In a heavy skillet, warm the oil over medium heat. Add the onion, bell pepper, garlic, pepper, salt, and cumin, and sauté until the vegetables are softened. Spoon the vegetable mixture into a large bowl.
3. Add the remaining meat loaf ingredients and mix well with your hands. Mound the meat into a smoke-proof loaf pan.
4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir the mop ingredients together with ½ cup water in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.
5. Transfer the loaf to the smoker. Cook for 45 minutes, or until the meat has shrunk away from the sides of the pan. Gently ease the meat loaf out of the pan and place

directly onto the grate of the smoker. Continue cooking the meat for an additional 1½ hours, dabbing it every 30 minutes with the mop in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. When 30 minutes of cooking time remain, apply the barbecue sauce to the top of the meat loaf.

6. After removing the loaf from the smoker, allow it to sit at room temperature for 10 minutes before slicing and serve warm or refrigerate for later use in sandwiches.

Serving Suggestion *No meat loaf is ever complete at our house without Mayme's*

Macaroni and Cheese (page 384) on the side and, usually, Country Collard Greens (page 378) as well. Dessert's not essential, but we'd never turn down 'Nana Pudding (page 441).



BBQ TIP *If you want to create a real mess for your spouse to clean up, try starting a meat loaf in a smoker outside a pan. It isn't pretty. You don't even really need to remove the meat from the pan later, but the step allows the meat to soak up extra smoke flavor.*



Brisket Hash

When you barbecue a brisket, you're likely to have leftovers unless you've invited a small town to dinner. This and the following recipe will clear out the fridge fast. We once hosted a breakfast barbecue just to serve this dish to forty friends.

SERVES 4 TO 6

2 tablespoons vegetable oil
1 tablespoon butter, preferably unsalted
2½ cups diced potatoes, preferably unpeeled
1½ cups diced onions
1 cup diced red bell pepper
1 to 2 pickled jalapeños, minced
4 cups shredded smoked brisket, such as Braggin' Rights Brisket (page 105), Burnt Ends (page 108), or Dallas Dandy Brisket (page 107)
¾ cup beef stock
1½ tablespoons yellow mustard
1 tablespoon ketchup
1 teaspoon coarsely ground black pepper
Salt to taste

In a heavy skillet, warm the oil and butter together over medium heat. Add the potatoes, onions, bell pepper, and jalapeños, and sauté for 10 minutes until the potatoes have begun to soften. Mix in the remaining ingredients. Simmer, covered, for 10 minutes, stirring the mixture up from the bottom once after 6 or 7 minutes and patting it back down. Uncover the skillet and continue cooking for several minutes, until the liquid is absorbed and the mixture just begins to get crusty on the bottom. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion For a hearty breakfast, serve the hash with buttermilk biscuits with berry preserves and fresh fruit.

SAVE US THE CHEEKS

Barbacoa de cabeza, or beef head barbecue, is still a festive tradition in southwest Texas. Mexican-American families cook the whole head in a mesquite-fired pit on a Saturday and serve the various parts on Sunday morning, eating the meat and organs on tortillas with salsa. Refried beans and eggs are customary side dishes.

Salpicón

The pride of El Paso, Texas, and the adjoining town of Juarez, Mexico, a *salpicón* typically combines a mélange of colorful vegetables with baked or boiled brisket in a lively vinaigrette. Ours pairs the mixture instead with smoked meat. The hearty salad can serve as a main dish or, when accompanied by tortilla chips for dipping, as an appetizer. It makes a fast-food taco salad look as appetizing as cold gravy.

We'd like to dedicate this recipe to the memory of our friend and fellow cookbook author, Michael McLaughlin, who loved smoked brisket and spicy dishes as much as we do. *Vaya con dios.*

SERVES 12 TO 14

SALPICÓN DRESSING

7-ounce can chipotle chiles in adobo sauce

1 cup extra-virgin olive oil

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup freshly squeezed lime juice

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup cider vinegar

2 garlic cloves, minced

Salt and coarsely ground black pepper to taste

SALPICÓN SALAD

$3\frac{1}{2}$ pounds shredded smoked beef brisket, such as Braggin' Rights Brisket (page 105), Burnt Ends (page 108), or Dallas Dandy Brisket (page 107)

4 small red-ripe tomatoes, preferably Roma or Italian plum, diced

2 ripe avocados, preferably Haas, peeled, pitted, and diced

1 large red bell pepper, diced

1 medium red onion, diced

6 ounces Monterey jack cheese, shredded

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup chopped cilantro

6 medium radishes, grated

1 head romaine, shredded

1. Combine all the dressing ingredients in a blender or food processor and process until well combined.

2. In a large bowl, combine the brisket with half to three-quarters of the salad dressing. Refrigerate for at least 2 hours, or up to overnight.

3. Remove the meat from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes. Add the remaining ingredients to the brisket and toss well. Drizzle on more dressing as you wish, keeping in mind it will increase the salad's heat level. Serve immediately.

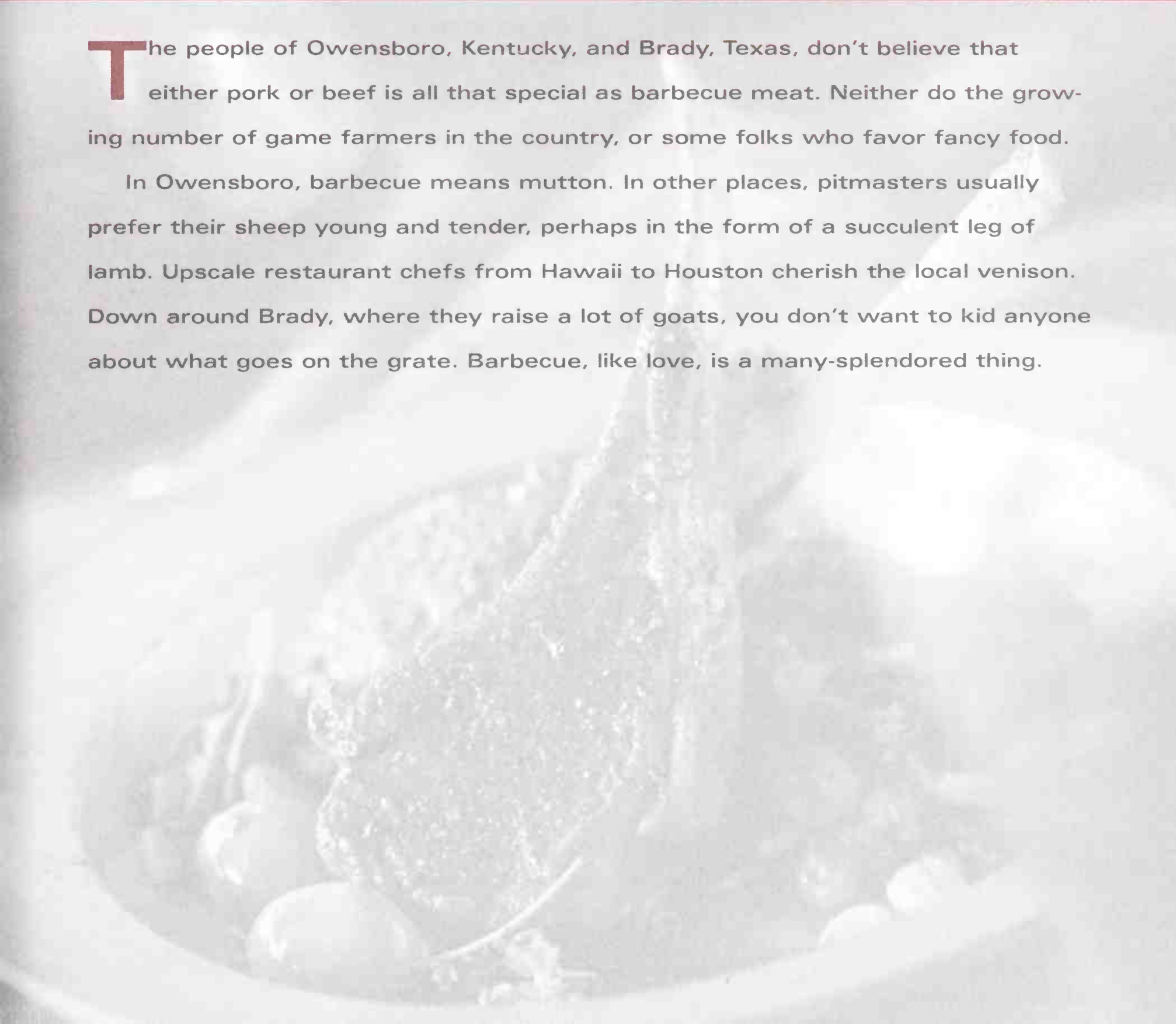
Serving Suggestion *Salpicón shines as the centerpiece of a fiesta meal. Accompany it with Blue Corn Muffins (page 390), Santa Fe Capirotada (page 442), and Turquoise Margaritas (page 454).*

Lean and Mean Meats



The people of Owensboro, Kentucky, and Brady, Texas, don't believe that either pork or beef is all that special as barbecue meat. Neither do the growing number of game farmers in the country, or some folks who favor fancy food.

In Owensboro, barbecue means mutton. In other places, pitmasters usually prefer their sheep young and tender, perhaps in the form of a succulent leg of lamb. Upscale restaurant chefs from Hawaii to Houston cherish the local venison. Down around Brady, where they raise a lot of goats, you don't want to kid anyone about what goes on the grate. Barbecue, like love, is a many-splendored thing.



Almost Owensboro Mutton	141	Curried Goat	156
Seva's Sassy Lamb Ribs	142	Stuffed Veal Roast	158
Martini Leg of Lamb	144	Veal Top Chops	159
Luscious Leg of Lamb	146	Cherry Cumberland Veal Chops	160
Minted Chops	148	Down-on-the-Ranch Venison Pot Roast	162
Lamb Chops à la Greek Town	149	Wine-Sopped Venison Scallops	163
Lamb Burgers with Berry Sauce	150	Gamy Sausage	165
Ground Lamb Pita Pockets	152	Smoked Buffalo Steak	166
Up and At 'Em Lamb Sausage	153	Ragin' Rabbit	167
Southwestern Cabrito	154		



Almost Owensboro Mutton

We cheat a bit with this recipe, since mutton is seldom available commercially in most of the country. The closest substitute we've found is a shoulder roast from a full-grown "yearling" lamb, which comes out much like Owensboro's best when barbecued in this straightforward style. The flavor is distinctive but mild—definitely worth a try. You may need to order this cut from your butcher in advance.

SERVES 6

MUTTON AND LAMB RUB

- 1/2 cup freshly ground black pepper
- 2 1/2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 1/2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 1/2 teaspoon ground allspice
- 7-pound to 8-pound lamb shoulder roast, preferably from a "yearling" lamb
- 1/4 cup Worcestershire sauce

MUTTON AND LAMB MOP (OPTIONAL)

- Remaining Mutton and Lamb Rub
- 1 1/2 cups beer or beef stock
- 3/4 cup white vinegar
- 1/4 cup Worcestershire sauce
- Black Sauce (page 355) or Moonlite and Moonshine sauce (page 356) (optional)

1. The evening before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Coat the meat with the Worcestershire sauce and then massage it with two-thirds of the rub. Transfer the meat to a large plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
3. Remove the meat from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.
4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the remaining rub with the other mop ingredients and 3/4 cup water in a saucepan and warm over low heat. Transfer the meat to the smoker, fatty side up. Cook for approximately 1 1/2 hours per pound, basting

COUNTING SHEEP

Twenty-five years young in 2003, the International Bar-B-Q Festival in Owensboro raises money for local churches and charities every May. Visitors and participants annually consume ten tons of barbecued mutton and fifteen hundred gallons of burgoo in two days of joyful gluttony.

the lamb with a mop about once an hour in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. When ready, the meat should be well done and tender, with an internal temperature of about 170°F.

5. Remove the meat from the smoker and let it sit for 15 minutes at room temperature. Serve pulled into shreds or chopped fine, accompanied by Black Sauce or Moonlite and Moonshine sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Mutton and lamb shoulder taste great chopped and served between a couple of pieces of rye bread with slices of dill pickle and onion—an Owensboro favorite. Top the sandwiches with a dose of spicy Moonlite and Moonshine sauce (page*

356). Offer a side dish of Kentucky Burgoo (page 372) and finish the meal with Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream (page 443).



BBQ TIP With all the alarms raised in recent years about food safety, it pays to be careful in barbecuing. Keep raw meat separate from other food, and wash all cutting boards and knives after using them. If you carry raw meat to the smoker on a plate, don't put anything cooked back on the same plate. Boil all marinades vigorously if using them as the basis for a mop or sauce to be used later on cooked meat.



Seva's Sassy Lamb Ribs

Our masterful meat-cutter and all-around meat authority, Seva Dubuar, introduced us to these ribs. An expert on lamb, she markets the meat through her Santa Fe-based company. The “Denver cut” Seva suggests for barbecuing comes from the middle ribs of a lamb breast.

SERVES 4

FIVE-SPICE RUB

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup store-bought five-spice powder or make your own by grinding together equal amounts of cinnamon sticks, star anise, cloves, fennel seeds, and Szechwan peppercorns

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup packed brown sugar

4 Denver-cut slabs of lamb ribs, about 1 pound each

West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce (page 355) (optional)

1. At least 2 hours and preferably the night before you plan to barbecue, mix together the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the ribs liberally with about a third of the spice mixture. Place the ribs in a plastic bag and refrigerate.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the ribs from the refrigerator. Rub them thoroughly again with the spice mixture and let them sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

4. Transfer the meat to the smoker. Cook for 3½ to 4 hours, turning and sprinkling the ribs with the remaining dry rub about halfway through the cooking time. When done, the ribs should have a thin coating of crispy spices on the surface and should pull apart easily.

5. Serve warm with West Coast Wonder, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Add a fruit salad topped with poppy seed dressing and Sweet Potatoes with Orange-Pecan Butter (page 258).*



BBQ TIP The most important tip we can give you about meat is to find a high-quality butcher or meat-cutter. Look for a market that cuts and grinds to order, perhaps does some aging, and has people who take an interest in you and what you're cooking. We've always found that the people at a serious meat market are fascinated by barbecuing and eager to help. That's especially true if you sometimes take them a sample of your 'Q' later.

I'LL TAKE THAT FORD IF YOU'LL THROW IN A SANDWICH ON THE SIDE

The way Roger Guin figured it, politicians threw a barbecue to attract crowds of people for a stump speech. Well, business was a little slow in his used car lot in Winfield, Alabama, so he built a pit on the side of the showroom and began serving barbecue. Guin brought in a few car buyers but they were far outnumbered by the eaters. Now most of his profit comes from pork rather than pickups.



Martini Leg of Lamb

This gin-scented dish is an elegant lamb preparation, inspired by a creation of Jinx and Jefferson Morgan, great cooks, Caribbean hoteliers, and *bons vivants*.

SERVES 6 TO 8

MARTINI PASTE

½ medium onion, chopped

10 garlic cloves

Juice and zest of 1 lemon

3 tablespoons gin

2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

¼ cup olive oil

5-pound to 6-pound leg of lamb

MARTINI MOP (OPTIONAL)

1 cup gin

1 cup beef stock

Juice of 1 lemon

2 tablespoons olive oil

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, prepare the paste. In a food processor, combine the onion, garlic, lemon, gin, and salt and process to combine. Continue processing, pouring in the oil until a thin paste forms.

2. Generously spread the paste on the lamb. Place the lamb in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the meat from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

AROUND TWO POUNDS OF MEAT PER PERSON, EVEN FOR THE FAIR MAIDENS

Journalists Alexander Sweet and John Knox described a Texas barbecue around 1880 in their book *On a Mexican Mustang through Texas*. “We arrived on the barbecue-grounds at about ten o’clock. More than two thousand people had already arrived, some from a distance of forty to fifty miles,—old gray-bearded pioneers, with their wives, in ox-wagons; young men, profuse in the matter of yellow-topped boots and jingling spurs, on horseback; fair maidens in calico, curls, and pearl-powder, some on horseback, others in wagons and buggies. . . . A deep trench, three hundred feet long, had been dug. This trench was filled from end to end with glowing coals; and suspended over them on horizontal poles were the carcasses of forty animals,—sheep, hogs, oxen, and deer,—roasting over the slow fire.”

5. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients with $\frac{2}{3}$ cup water in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

6. Transfer the lamb to the smoker. Cook for 35 to 40 minutes per pound, until the internal temperature of the meat is 145°F, rare to medium-rare. Baste the meat with the mop every 45 to 50 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

7. Remove the lamb from the smoker and let it sit for 10 minutes. Slice the lamb and serve it warm or chilled.

Serving Suggestion *Have a martini first, to put your taste buds in the right mood. Serve the lamb with Bronzed Garlic (page 323), a*

crusty loaf of bread, Southern Caesar Salad (page 393), and Rhubarb Crunch (page 430).



BBQ TIP Leg of lamb is best when lightly smoked. We like to cook it in a water smoker, but charcoal grills and ovens work well, too. If you're using a wood-burning pit, wrap the lamb in foil after the first hour.



BBQ TIP We often use coarse salt in barbecuing, as we do in both of these leg of lamb preparations. We use either additive-free kosher salt or sea salt. Both have mild flavors, so you can spread them on generously without overpowering a dish.



Luscious Leg of Lamb

A spinach and goat cheese stuffing might taste good even in a tennis ball, but the combo is always a sure bet inside a tender leg of lamb.

SERVES 6 TO 8

LUSCIOUS PASTE

- 10 garlic cloves
- 2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1½ tablespoons olive oil
- 5-pound to 5½-pound boned leg of lamb

FILLING

- 1 tablespoon olive oil
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- ⅓ cup pine nuts or chopped walnuts
- 1½ pounds spinach, cooked, drained, and chopped
- 8 ounces mild goat cheese
- ⅓ cup chopped fresh parsley
- ¼ cup dried currants or chopped raisins
- 1 teaspoon anchovy paste (optional)

LUSCIOUS MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 2½ cups beef stock
- ½ cup red wine vinegar
- 2 tablespoons olive oil
- 1 teaspoon anchovy paste (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, prepare the paste. With a mortar and pestle, or in a mini-food processor, crush or mince the garlic with the salt. Add the olive oil in a stream until a thick paste

forms. Rub the paste very lightly over the lamb. Place the lamb in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the meat from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

4. To make the filling, warm the oil over medium heat in a small skillet. Add the onions and garlic and sauté until softened. Add the pine nuts and continue to cook for another minute or two. Spoon the mixture into a bowl. Add the spinach, cheese, parsley, currants, and the anchovy paste, and blend well. Spread the filling evenly over the lamb. Roll up the meat snugly from one of the long sides, totally enclosing the filling. Tie as needed with kitchen twine to secure.


5. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix together the mop ingredients in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

6. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat and sear the lamb quickly on all sides. Transfer the lamb to the smoker. Cook for 35 to 40 minutes per pound, until the internal

temperature of the meat is 145°F, rare to medium-rare. Baste the meat with the mop after 30 and 60 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

7. Remove the lamb from the smoker and let it sit for 10 minutes. Slice the lamb and serve it warm.

Serving Suggestion *Start off with Warm Mushroom Salad (page 282), and serve the lamb with steamed asparagus dressed with olive oil, garlic, and lemon. Try Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble (page 424) for dessert.*



BBQ TIP Some people barbecue at temperatures as high as 250°F to 300°F. We don't recommend it as a general rule, but it works fine for some food, particularly large cuts of meat that don't require long cooking for tenderness, or ones that taste best with a light touch to the smoke. Leg of lamb fits the bill in both ways.

BARBECUING JIM CROW

Racial integration of the South began at the barbecue pit. African-Americans owned and operated many of the original Bar-B-Q joints, but the food attracted everyone in town, even when churches, schools, and other restaurants were strictly segregated.



Minted Chops

These lovely little chops will score you kudos from every one of your lucky diners.

SERVES 4

MUTTON AND LAMB RUB

- 1/4 cup freshly ground black pepper
- 2 1/2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 1/2 tablespoons garlic powder
- 1 1/2 teaspoons ground allspice
- 8 lamb loin chops, each weighing about 5 ounces and cut 1 inch thick

Garlic-flavored oil

MINTED MOP AND/OR SAUCE

- 1 cup brewed mint tea made with 2 mint tea bags
- 1/4 cup mint jelly
- 4 teaspoons garlic-flavored oil
- Fresh mint sprigs, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. An hour before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Coat the chops with a thin layer of oil and then massage them with the rub. Let them sit at room temperature for 30 minutes while you prepare the mop and/or sauce.

3. If you are going to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix the ingredients together in a saucepan over low heat, keeping the mop warm. If you intend to use the mixture only as a sauce, combine the same ingredients in a saucepan and bring the mixture to a simmer over medium-high heat. Reduce the mixture by half and then keep it warm over low heat.

4. Transfer the chops to the smoker. Cook them to your desired doneness; after 45 to 55 minutes the chops will be rare, with an internal temperature around 140°F. Baste the chops twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

5. If you have used the mop, bring the remaining liquid to a vigorous boil and reduce it by half. Serve the chops immediately, drizzled lightly with the reduced sauce and garnished with the mint.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the lamb with cinnamon-scented rice to soak up the mint sauce and meat juices.*



Lamb Chops à la Greek Town

No lamb repertoire is complete without a Greek rendition. This one came to us by way of Chicago's Greek Town, a fun place to eat, if not exactly a barbecue bastion.

SERVES 4

GREEK TOWN MARINADE AND OPTIONAL MOP

1 cup olive oil (an inexpensive kind is fine)

1 cup freshly squeezed lemon juice

5 garlic cloves, minced

2 bay leaves, crumbled

1½ tablespoons minced fresh oregano or
2 teaspoons dried oregano

1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or
sea salt

8 lamb loin chops, each weighing about 5
ounces and cut 1 inch thick

1 tablespoon Char Crust (optional)

Freshly ground black pepper

Lemon wedges and sprigs of fresh oregano,
for garnish (optional)

1. About 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the chops in a shallow

dish big enough to hold them in a single layer, or in a large plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the chops and refrigerate them.

2. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chops from the refrigerator and drain them, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste the meat. Dust the chops with Char Crust, if you wish, and a generous grinding of pepper. Let the chops sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you are using the mop (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), pour the marinade into a saucepan. Bring the mixture to a vigorous boil over high heat and boil for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

WALTZING OFF THE CALORIES

In the Old South, barbecues were often linked to fancy-dress balls. Scarlett O'Hara and Rhett Butler met at that kind of all-day party in *Gone with the Wind*. Slaves started the cooking the night before in big underground pits, and when Scarlett arrived in the morning she "saw a haze of smoke hanging lazily in the tops of tall trees and smelled the mingled savory odors of burning hickory logs and roasting pork and mutton."

5. Heat a heavy skillet over high heat. Sear the chops quickly on both sides. Transfer them to the smoker, and cook to your desired doneness; after 45 to 55 minutes, the chops will be rare, with an internal temperature around 140°F. Baste the chops with the mop twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Serve immediately, garnished with lemon and oregano, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion Offer *Smoked Olives* (page 321) and cubes of feta cheese for openers.

Serve *Arty Rice Salad* (page 405) on the side and *Key Lime Pie* (page 425) for dessert.



BBQ TIP Char Crust, a smoky-flavored dry rub, hails from the Windy City, as does this recipe. Once available only to restaurants, it now appears in some supermarkets and can be mail-ordered from the Char Crust Company (800-311-9884, www.charcrust.com). Developed for grilled steaks, the original rub and a host of new varieties enhance many meats.

Lamb Burgers with Berry Sauce

Americans used to enjoy grilled or skillet-cooked lamb burgers much more frequently in the past than today. We've taken this wonderful idea and modified it for smoke cooking, which makes the burgers even more succulent. The meat has always been a perfect foil for fruity-tangy sauces, such as this bright raspberry-mint version.

SERVES 6

LAMB BURGER RUB

2 teaspoons garlic powder
2 teaspoons onion powder
1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

BERRY SAUCE

1¼ cups fresh mint leaves, chopped fine
7 tablespoons raspberry vinegar
1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice
3 tablespoons sugar

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

2 pounds ground lamb
3 tablespoons raspberry vinegar
3 scallions, sliced thin
2 garlic cloves, minced

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste
8 ounces mild goat cheese

BURGER MOP (OPTIONAL)

½ cup raspberry vinegar
2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. In another bowl, combine the sauce ingredients, stirring until the sugar dissolves.
3. Mix together the lamb, vinegar, onions, garlic, salt, and pepper in a large bowl. Form the mixture into 12 thin patties. Slice the cheese into 6 equal portions, and cover half the patties with it. Top the cheese with another patty and seal the edges carefully. Sprinkle the burgers lightly with the rub and let them sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.
4. If you plan to baste the burgers (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the burgers to the smoker. Cook until lightly browned and medium-rare, about 40 minutes, or to your desired doneness. Dab the burgers with the mop once or twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Serve the burgers hot, with the Berry Sauce spooned over them or on the side.

Variation: Blue Cheese Lamb Burgers

Replace the goat cheese with a tangy blue cheese, such as Maytag Blue. Change the vinegar throughout the recipe from raspberry to white. In the sauce, replace about one-half of the mint with fresh parsley, and reduce the sugar to 1 tablespoon. Just as yummy.

McPIG

The country's first drive-in restaurant sold barbecue to newly mobile Americans in the early years of the automobile. Opened in 1921 in Dallas, Texas, the Pig Stand expanded into a national chain by the next decade. Waiters with white shirts and black bow ties ran to meet approaching cars and tried to jump on the running board before they stopped, giving rise to the term *carhop*.



Ground Lamb Pita Pockets

This is a different kind of lamb burger, kissed lovingly by the Mediterranean sun. The recipe calls for zatar, a Middle Eastern seasoning blend based on tangy dried sumac, but it isn't essential for good results if you have trouble finding it.

SERVES 6

MIDDLE EASTERN DRY RUB

2 tablespoons paprika

1½ tablespoons zatar (optional)

1½ teaspoons ground cumin

1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1½ teaspoons freshly ground black pepper

1 teaspoon ground cinnamon

⅛ teaspoon cayenne

CUCUMBER-CILANTRO SAUCE

2 medium cucumbers, peeled, halved lengthwise, and sliced into thin half-moons

¾ cup plain yogurt

3 tablespoons minced cilantro

Pinch or 2 of zatar (optional)

Dash of cayenne (optional)

Salt to taste

2¼ pounds ground lamb

2 garlic cloves, minced

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

6 pita breads, sliced open on one side

Feta cheese crumbles (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. In another bowl, combine the sauce ingredients.
3. Mix together the lamb, garlic, salt, and pepper in a large bowl. Form the mixture into 6 broad patties. Sprinkle the burgers lightly with the rub and let them sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.
4. Transfer the burgers to the smoker. Cook until lightly browned and medium-rare, about 40 minutes, or to your desired doneness. Place the burgers inside the pita breads, then drizzle with sauce, and serve hot.



Up and At 'Em Lamb Sausage

While good any time of day, these sausages make a hearty breakfast meal, perfect on mornings when you're firing up the pit for a long spell of smoking. After tossing on a beef brisket or pork shoulder, barbecue a few of these to fortify you for the day.

MAKES SIX 4-OUNCE PATTIES

Juice and zest of 1 orange

1½ pounds mildly seasoned bulk lamb sausage

SWEET SENSATION RUB

Zest of 1 orange, dried and crumbled (about 1½ teaspoons)

1½ teaspoons ground cinnamon

1½ teaspoons paprika

1 teaspoon ground chipotle chile, preferably, or ½ teaspoon cayenne

1 teaspoon sugar

½ teaspoon ground coriander

½ teaspoon salt

UP AND AT 'EM MOP (OPTIONAL)

6 tablespoons orange juice

1 tablespoon sherry or cider vinegar

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Mix the orange juice and zest into the sausage. Form the sausage into 6 thick patties. Combine the dry rub ingredients in a small bowl and sprinkle the patties lightly with the dry rub. Let the patties sit at room temperature for about 15 minutes.
3. If you plan to baste the sausages (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients in a small pan. Warm the mop liquid over low heat.
4. Transfer the patties to the smoker. Cook for 50 to 60 minutes, until the sausages are richly browned and cooked through. Mop them every 20 minutes in a wood-

INCLUDING OUR PRESIDENT?

Ronald Reagan invited "Honey" Monk to barbecue for world leaders at the 1983 Economic Summit. Owner of the Lexington Barbecue No. 1, Monk said the heads of state weren't as picky or as smart about barbecue as the folks back home in North Carolina.

burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion *When you need an elegant breakfast, pair the sausage with a variation on eggs Sardou, a fancy concoction first popularized by Antoine's in New Orleans. Top poached eggs with artichoke hearts, ham, and as many anchovies as you can handle, and then spoon Hollandaise sauce over the whole cholesterol-laden extravaganza. Serve with some fruit-filled muffins.*



BBQ TIP Kansas City's Baron of Barbecue, Paul Kirk, teaches classes on the barbecue craft around the country. Don't miss him if he's in your area. One of the keys to his success, Kirk says, is taking notes on everything he does. As the Baron emphasizes, it's the only sure way you can learn from experience.

Southwestern Cabrito

A festive food throughout the Southwest, particularly in Spanish-speaking areas, cabrito is milk-fed kid slaughtered between the spring and late summer at an age of 30 to 40 days old and a weight of 10 to 15 pounds. You'll probably have to go directly to a farmer for the meat, but it's worth the trouble.

SERVES 8 TO 10

1 cabrito, preferably 10 to 12 pounds, quartered

SAGE PASTE

3 cups fresh sage leaves

1 whole head of garlic, peeled

2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2 cups olive oil (an inexpensive kind is fine)

CABRITO MOP (OPTIONAL)

2 cups chicken or beef stock or beer

1 cup cider vinegar

1 cup olive oil (an inexpensive kind is fine)

¼ cup chopped fresh sage

¼ cup Worcestershire sauce

4 to 6 garlic cloves, minced

Sauce Olé (page 354) or Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, prepare the paste in a food processor. First process the sage, garlic, and salt until the sage and the garlic are chopped fine. Add the olive oil in a slow stream, until a

thick paste forms. Rub the paste over the cabrito, covering the meat evenly. Place the cabrito in a large plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the cabrito from the refrigerator and let it sit, covered, at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients in a saucepan and warm the liquid over low heat.

5. Transfer the cabrito to the smoker. Cook the meat for about 1 hour per pound of weight for each quarter. The skinny fore-quarters will be done earlier than the

meaty hindquarters, which usually take 4 to 5 hours, depending on size. In a wood-burning pit, turn the meat and drizzle the mop over it every 30 minutes. In other styles of smokers, baste as appropriate and turn the meat at the same time.

6. When the cabrito is done, remove it from the smoker, and let it sit for 10 minutes at room temperature. Slice or shred the meat and serve with Sauce Olé or Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *On the side, offer Cowpoke Pintos (page 374), smoked corn-on-the-cob, and Mango and Avocado Salad (page 406). For dessert, Santa Fe Capirotada (page 442) caps the meal nicely.*

LABOR AWAY

If you're looking for a special way to celebrate Labor Day weekend, head down to the World Championship Barbecue Goat Cook-Off in Brady, Texas. You might want to try your hand at cooking the local goat in the main competition, or you can just enter the contest for tossing goat patties. In either case, be sure to chow down on the barbecue.



Curried Goat

After goats start eating grass, the flavor of the meat changes and the bony critters get tougher, requiring more complex and spicy preparations than cabrito. This approach, popular in the Caribbean, works particularly well. Your meat market probably doesn't carry goat, but the butcher may be able to direct you to a source.

SERVES 14 TO 16

CURRY PASTE

4 medium onions, chunked

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup curry powder

1 whole head of garlic, peeled

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 to 2 fresh habanero or Scotch bonnet chiles or 4 to 5 fresh jalapeños, minced

1 cup vegetable oil

1 goat, preferably around 25 pounds, quartered

CURRY MOP (OPTIONAL)

2 cups chicken or beef stock or beer

2 cups cider vinegar

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups vegetable oil

2 tablespoons curry powder

Jamaican Barbecue Sauce (page 359) or South Florida Citrus Sauce (page 363) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, prepare the paste in a food processor. First process the onions, curry, garlic, salt, and habanero until finely chopped. Then add the oil, processing until the mixture forms

a thick paste. This can be done in two batches if needed.

2. Wearing rubber gloves, rub the paste over the goat, covering the meat evenly. Place the goat in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

3. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the goat from the refrigerator and let it sit, covered, at room temperature for 45 minutes.

4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

5. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix together the mop ingredients in a saucepan with 1 cup water and warm the liquid over low heat.

6. Transfer the goat to the smoker. Cook for about 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ hours per pound of weight for each quarter. The forequarters will be done earlier than the hindquarters, which may take 10 hours or longer, depending on size. In a wood-burning pit, turn the meat and drizzle the mop over it every 30 minutes. In other styles of smokers, baste

as appropriate and turn the meat at the same time.

7. When the meat is done, remove it from the smoker, and allow it to sit for 15 minutes before serving. Slice or shred the meat and serve with Jamaican Barbecue Sauce or South Florida Citrus Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *We like Curried Goat with Sweet Sally's Sweet Potato Salad (page 402), Barbecued Rice (page 274), and some cooling cucumbers mixed with sour cream or yogurt. Dessert can be a platter of fresh fruits, such as mango, pineapple, and*

papaya slices, flavored with a touch of freshly squeezed lime juice.



BBQ TIP Always wear rubber gloves when working with chiles as hot as the habanero and its Caribbean cousin, the Scotch bonnet. They make a jalapeño seem as mild as a jelly bean. Even with less fiery chiles, either wear gloves or wash your hands thoroughly after handling them and before touching your eyes or other sensitive spots.

BEDDING DOWN

Despite its relative rarity today, goat was a common barbecue meat in many areas of the South just a generation or two ago. It was usually cooked over an underground pit, often on top of old bedsprings.



Stuffed Veal Roast

This veal sirloin roast stuffed full of sweet and savory treats makes a splendid special-occasion dish. The idea, though not the recipe, comes from the Kansas City Barbeque Society's *The Passion of Barbecue* (1988, Hyperion), a good source for inspiration. You may have to order the roast from your butcher in advance.

SERVES 4 TO 6

CHERYL'S CIDER SOAK (AND OPTIONAL MOP)

- 1½ cups apple cider or juice
- ¾ cup cider vinegar
- ½ medium onion, minced
- 3 tablespoons vegetable oil
- 1½ tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 1 teaspoon ground cinnamon
- 1 teaspoon dried thyme
- 1¾-pound to 2-pound sirloin tip veal roast, about 2 inches thick, cut with a pocket for stuffing

FILLING

- 2 slices bacon, chopped
- ½ tart apple, such as Granny Smith, cored and chopped
- 2 tablespoons minced onion
- 1 garlic clove, minced
- ¼ pound ground veal
- ¼ cup dry bread crumbs
- 3 dried pitted dates, chopped
- 3 scallions, sliced
- 2 tablespoons minced fresh parsley
- ½ teaspoon dried rosemary, crushed
- Pinch of ground cinnamon
- Pinch of dried thyme

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the soak ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the roast in a plastic bag and pour the marinade over it, making sure some goes into the roast's pocket. Refrigerate the meat overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the roast from the refrigerator and drain the marinade, reserving it if you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"). Let the roast sit for 30 minutes at room temperature while you prepare the filling.

4. In a skillet, fry the bacon over medium heat until browned and crispy. Remove the bacon with a slotted spoon, drain it, and place it in a medium bowl. Add the apple, onion, and garlic to the skillet and sauté until soft. Spoon the mixture into the bowl. Stir in the remaining filling ingredients and mix until well combined. Stuff the roast loosely with the filling.

5. If you are using the mop, heat the marinade in a small saucepan. Bring the mop mixture to a boil over high heat and boil

for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

6. Warm a heavy skillet over high heat. Sear the meat quickly on both sides. Transfer the roast to the smoker. Cook for 1¾ to 2 hours, mopping every 20 to 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The roast is best when the internal temperature reaches 145°F to 150°F, or medium-rare.

7. Remove the roast from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 10

minutes before carving. Slice the roast and serve.

Serving Suggestion *For an elegant dinner, nibble Curry Pecans (page 318) while sipping Mango-Lime Spritzers (page 460). Sit down to cups of creamy corn chowder and then pair the roast with spinach sautéed in olive oil. Small slices of South Georgia Pound Cake (page 435) topped with fresh strawberries make a tasty conclusion.*

Veal Top Chops

Little can top veal chops in classiness. Serve this sage-infused version when you want to impress.

SERVES 4

TOP CHOP SAGE PASTE

1 cup fresh sage leaves

4 garlic cloves

¼ teaspoon salt

2 tablespoons dry marsala wine

Juice of 1 lemon

3 tablespoons olive oil

4 thick-cut veal loin chops, 8 to 10 ounces each

4 slices bacon, cut into thirds

TOP CHOP MOP (OPTIONAL)

¾ cup dry marsala wine

Juice of 1 lemon

1½ tablespoons olive oil

Lemon wedges and sage sprigs, for garnish

1. At least 2 hours, and preferably 4 hours, before barbecuing, make the sage paste. Combine the sage, garlic, and salt in a food processor and process until the sage is minced. Continue to process, adding the oil in a thin stream until a thick paste forms. Apply the past thickly to the chops, wrap them in plastic, and refrigerate.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chops from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 20 minutes. Drape the top of each chop with 1 slice (3 pieces) of bacon.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir together the mop ingredients with $\frac{3}{4}$ cup water in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Transfer the chops to the smoker. Cook for $1\frac{1}{4}$ to $1\frac{1}{2}$ hours, mopping every 20 to

30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The chops are ready when the internal temperature reaches 150°F, or medium-rare. Be careful not to overcook them.

6. Remove the chops from the smoker, discard the bacon, and let the chops sit at room temperature for 5 minutes. Serve hot, garnished with lemon and sage.

FAMILY AFFAIR

Almost anywhere you go in central Texas, it seems, there's a cafeteria-style Mikeska barbecue restaurant. Rudy has the one in Taylor, Jerry's over in Columbus, Maurice camps out in El Campo, and Clem runs the operation in Temple. If the family gets any larger, they may make a move on Dallas.

Cherry Cumberland Veal Chops

An exceptionally lean meat, veal can dry out quickly when smoked unless you take care to keep it moist. In the previous veal chop recipe, the paste, mop, and bacon slices all contribute to that goal as well as adding flavor. In this version, the paste and fruity stuffing do double duty too, accomplishing the same aims. These first appeared in another of our books, *Sublime Smoke* (1996, Harvard Common Press).

SERVES 4

VEAL GARLIC PASTE

1 whole head of garlic, broken into individual cloves, dry-roasted in a skillet over low heat until soft, and peeled

1 tablespoon olive oil

$1\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

4 thick-cut veal loin chops, 8 to 10 ounces each, cut with a pocket for stuffing

2 tablespoons dried cherries or cranberries
2 tablespoons minced onion
2 tablespoons port
1 ounce cream cheese, softened
1 tablespoon minced fresh parsley

CUMBERLAND SAUCE

Juice and zest from 1 medium orange
Juice and zest from 1/2 medium lemon
6 tablespoons port
6 tablespoons currant jelly or jam
2 tablespoons minced shallots
1 teaspoon Dijon mustard

Minced fresh parsley, for garnish

1. At least 2 hours, and preferably 4 hours, before barbecuing, make the garlic paste. Mash together the garlic, oil, and salt in a small bowl. Apply the paste thickly to the chops, wrap them in plastic, and refrigerate. Make the filling, combining the remaining paste in another bowl with the cherries, onion, port, cream cheese, and parsley.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chops from the refrigerator, stuff them with the filling, and let them sit covered at room temperature for 20 minutes.

4. Combine the sauce ingredients in a small saucepan and simmer over medium-low heat for 15 minutes. Remove the sauce from the heat, strain it, and reserve it at room temperature. (The sauce can be made several days in advance, if you wish, and refrigerated. Return it to room temperature before proceeding.)

5. Transfer the chops to the smoker. Cook for 1 1/4 to 1 1/2 hours. The chops are ready when the internal temperature reaches 150°F, or medium-rare. Be careful not to overcook them.

6. Remove the chops from the smoker, and let them sit at room temperature for 5 minutes. Serve hot, with the Cumberland sauce, topped with parsley.



Down-on-the-Ranch Venison Pot Roast

Hearty and homey, this venison chuck roast makes a great centerpiece for a casual company dinner. Be sure to cook the roast long enough. Its fall-apart succulence will make you swoon.

SERVES 6

DOWN-ON-THE-RANCH PASTE

- 1 medium onion, chunked
- 1 tablespoon yellow mustard
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- 4 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1/4 cup vegetable oil
- 3-pound venison chuck roast

DOWN-ON-THE-RANCH MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 1 cup beef stock or beer
- 1/4 cup cider vinegar, preferably unrefined
- 1/4 cup vegetable oil
- 14.5-ounce can whole tomatoes with juice
- 1 tablespoon yellow mustard
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the paste ingredients in a food processor or blender until the onion is finely chopped and a thick purée forms. Slather the paste over the venison. Transfer

the venison to a large plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.


2. Before you begin to barbecue, take the roast from the refrigerator and let it sit, covered, at room temperature for 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), stir together the mop ingredients with 1/2 cup water in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the roast to the smoker and cook for 3 hours, mopping every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Place the roast on a large sheet of heavy-duty aluminum foil and pour the tomatoes over the meat. Spoon the mustard and Worcestershire sauce over the tomatoes. Seal the foil tightly and continue cooking the roast for about 2 more hours, until the meat is falling-apart tender.

6. Remove the roast from the smoker and let it sit at room temperature for 10 minutes before serving.



BBQ TIP Wrapping the venison roast in foil part-way through the cooking helps accomplish two things. It lets you seal in moisture

and extra flavor, but also helps shield the delicate meat from becoming too heavily infused with smoke in its lengthy cooking time.

BATTER UP

The American Royal invitational cook-off each October deserves its reputation as the “World Series of Barbecue.” Unlike the open competition held during the same event, all the contestants are winners of major cook-offs and participate strictly by invitation. To take the top prize, you’ve got to show premium skill barbecuing a range of meats.

Wine-Sopped Venison Scallops

These tender slices of venison get sloshed to perfection in a red wine marinade. Be careful not to overcook them.

SERVES 6

RED WINE MARINADE

- 2 cups dry red wine
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup red wine vinegar
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons minced fresh sage leaves or 2 teaspoons dried sage
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds venison scallops (from the loin or backstrap), cut against the grain in slices $\frac{1}{3}$ inch thick

SOPPED SAUCE

- 1 cup Red Wine Marinade

- 1 cup beef stock
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup currant jelly
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup crème de cassis
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- 1 teaspoon minced fresh sage leaves or $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried sage
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt or more to taste
- 1 tablespoon butter, preferably unsalted
- Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste
- 1 to 2 tablespoons vegetable oil
- Fresh sage sprigs, for garnish (optional)

1. About 2 to 3 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a food processor. Place the venison in a nonreactive dish or plastic bag and pour all but 1 cup of the marinade over it. Cover the venison and refrigerate it.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
3. Combine the reserved cup of marinade, stock, jelly, crème de cassis, onion, sage, and salt in a heavy saucepan. Simmer over low heat for about 30 minutes, or until reduced by half. Whisk in the butter. Keep the sauce warm over low heat.
4. Drain the venison and sprinkle it with salt and pepper. In a heavy skillet, warm the oil over high heat until it almost smokes. Add the venison, a few scallops at a time, and sear it, a matter of just seconds. Repeat with the remaining meat.
5. Transfer the venison immediately to the smoker. Cook until the meat absorbs the

smoke lightly, but is still rare to medium-rare, 20 to 25 minutes.

6. Serve immediately with the sauce ladled over the venison. If desired, garnish with sage sprigs.



BBQ TIP The lack of fat in venison calls for some adjustments in the way you normally cook meat. If your venison comes frozen, thaw it in a liquid compatible with the recipe, such as red wine or buttermilk. Don't expose cooked or uncooked venison to the air for long. Wrap the meat tightly in plastic while it marinates, and cover it with foil if the venison has to sit at all before serving. Eat venison as soon as possible after cooking. If you are serving prime cuts, such as backstrap scallops, finish everything because the meat doesn't reheat well.

HOGGING THE GLORY

Jimmy Carter knows his barbecue, which is why he hired Sconyers Bar-B-Que of Augusta, Georgia, to cater a down-home lunch on the White House lawn in 1980. Opened in a shack in 1956, the restaurant became a huge operation, serving up to three thousand people a day. Despite the success, or maybe in recognition of it, proud founder Larry Sconyer continued to call himself on a vanity license plate, the "No. 1 Pig."

Gamy Sausage

When you make sausage from venison, you need to blend it with a fattier meat, such as the wild boar or pork that we use here.

MAKES ABOUT TWELVE 4-OUNCE SAUSAGES SERVING 6 OR MORE

- 1½ pounds ground venison
- 1½ pounds ground wild boar or pork
- 1 small red bell pepper, chopped fine
- ¼ cup dry red wine
- ¼ cup grated Parmesan cheese
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- 2 teaspoons dried oregano
- 2 teaspoons dried basil
- 2 teaspoons salt
- 1½ teaspoons fennel seeds
- 1 to 1½ teaspoons crushed dried red chile of moderate heat, such as chile caribe, or a pinch of cayenne (optional)
- 2 yards hog sausage casings
- Vegetable oil

1. At least an evening before you plan to barbecue, start the preparations. In a large bowl, mix together all of the ingredients except the casings and oil. Refrigerate, covered, overnight.

2. Prepare the casings, soaking them in several changes of water over several hours. (For more information about sausage casings and their stuffing, see the BBQ Tips, pages 92–93.)

3. With the stuffing attachment of a meat grinder, stuff the cold sausage mixture into the casings, making 1-inch-thick

links about 5 inches long. With your fingers, twist the casings and then tie off the individual sausages with kitchen twine. Cut between them. If you end up with any air bubbles, prick the casing in those spots with a needle. The sausage is ready to be smoked, but it can be refrigerated for several days or frozen for up to a month.

4. When you are ready to cook the sausage, prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Rub the sausages lightly with the oil.

5. Transfer the sausages to the smoker and cook for 2 to 2¼ hours, until the skin of the sausage looks ready to pop. Always err on the side of caution with the timing and cut one of the sausages open to check for doneness before eating any of them. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion Make these sausages a part of a “mixed grill” by serving them with Hill Country Links (page 92) and Store-Bought Hot Brats (page 93). Add some good breads and a selection of hearty side dishes, such as Hot German Potato Salad (page 401), Kraut Salad (page 403), and Devil-May-Care Eggs (page 408). Finish off with *The Best Cure for a Southern Summer* (page 447).



BBQ TIP If you need a good source for venison or buffalo, we recommend two different South Texas outfits. Broken Arrow Ranch oversees the hunting and processing of deer and antelope on more than 150 Texas ranches. The Ingram-based operation

can be contacted at 800-962-4263, 210-367-5875, or www.brokenarrowranch.com. Hugh Fitzsimmons's Rio Bravo Bison, outside of San Antonio, raises grass-fed bison, available in many Southwestern markets. Snatch it up if you find it in your area.

Smoked Buffalo Steak

The American bison is making a comeback, especially in the Great Plains and West, where Native Americans are frequently involved in the animals' stewardship. The lean and beefy meat—not at all gamy—makes a great change of pace from more common meats. As with venison, the meat's leanness—a great reason for enjoying it—makes it worthy of a little extra care in preparation.

SERVES 4 OR MORE

Four 8-ounce rib eye, sirloin, or strip steaks,
¾ to 1 inch thick

MUSTARD PASTE

2 tablespoons brown mustard

1½ teaspoons vegetable oil

Coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt, and
freshly ground black pepper

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

1. About 1 to 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the mustard paste ingredients and rub the mixture over the bison. Cover the meat and refrigerate it.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Let the meat sit, covered, at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

4. In a heavy skillet, warm the oil over high heat until it almost smokes. Add the steaks, two at a time, and sear them on both sides, about 20 seconds per side. Repeat with the remaining meat.

5. Transfer the bison immediately to the smoker. Cook until the meat absorbs the smoke lightly, but is still rare to medium-rare, 20 to 30 minutes. Serve immediately.

Ragin' Rabbit

A spicy Cajun-style coating keeps this rabbit hopping on your tongue.

SERVES 5 TO 6

CAJUN RAGIN' RUB

- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- 1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1½ teaspoons white pepper
- 1½ teaspoons celery salt
- ½ to 1 teaspoon cayenne
- ½ teaspoon dried thyme
- ¼ teaspoon dry mustard
- 2 rabbits, about 2½ pounds each, quartered
- 1 tablespoon vegetable oil
- 1 tablespoon Creole mustard

1. About 2 to 3 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the dry rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the meat lightly with oil and mustard and sprinkle evenly with the dry rub. Place the meat in a shallow glass ovenproof or other smokeproof dish, cover it, and refrigerate it.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the rabbit from the refrigerator and let it sit in the dish, covered, at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes. Cut a yard-long section of cheesecloth and dampen it thoroughly with water. Uncover the dish and drape the top of it loosely with several thicknesses of folded cheesecloth.

4. Transfer the cheesecloth-covered dish to the smoker. Cook for about 1¼ hours, wetting down the cheesecloth with warm water a couple of times in a wood-burning pit, or with other styles of smokers, any time you raise the lid. The cheesecloth will brown but won't burn if it is kept moist. Remove the cheesecloth from the meat and discard it. Continue smoking until the

A GRAND LOOK AT A GRAND TRADITION

Writer Lolis Eric Elie and photographer Frank Stewart decided to collaborate on *Smokestack Lightning* (1996, Farrar, Straus and Giroux) one day when they shared some barbecued ribs in North Carolina. They set out on a quest to look at American life and culture through the traditions of barbecue. Elie and Stewart succeeded admirably, serving up a heaping plateful of stories, observations, reflections, and evocative photos.

meat is cooked through but still juicy, an additional 15 to 25 minutes. Serve the rabbit immediately.

Serving Suggestion *Lead off dinner with Smoked Spud Skins (page 261), hot from the smoker. Then serve the rabbit with lightly buttered noodles, Killed Salad (page 394), Squash Relish (page 415), and, for good measure, Peanut Butter Cake (page 434).*

BBQ TIP The function of the cheesecloth in the Ragin' Rabbit and other recipes is to keep lean meat moist during its slow smoking. You can skip the wrapping in smokers designed for moist cooking, such as water smokers and Cookshack ovens.

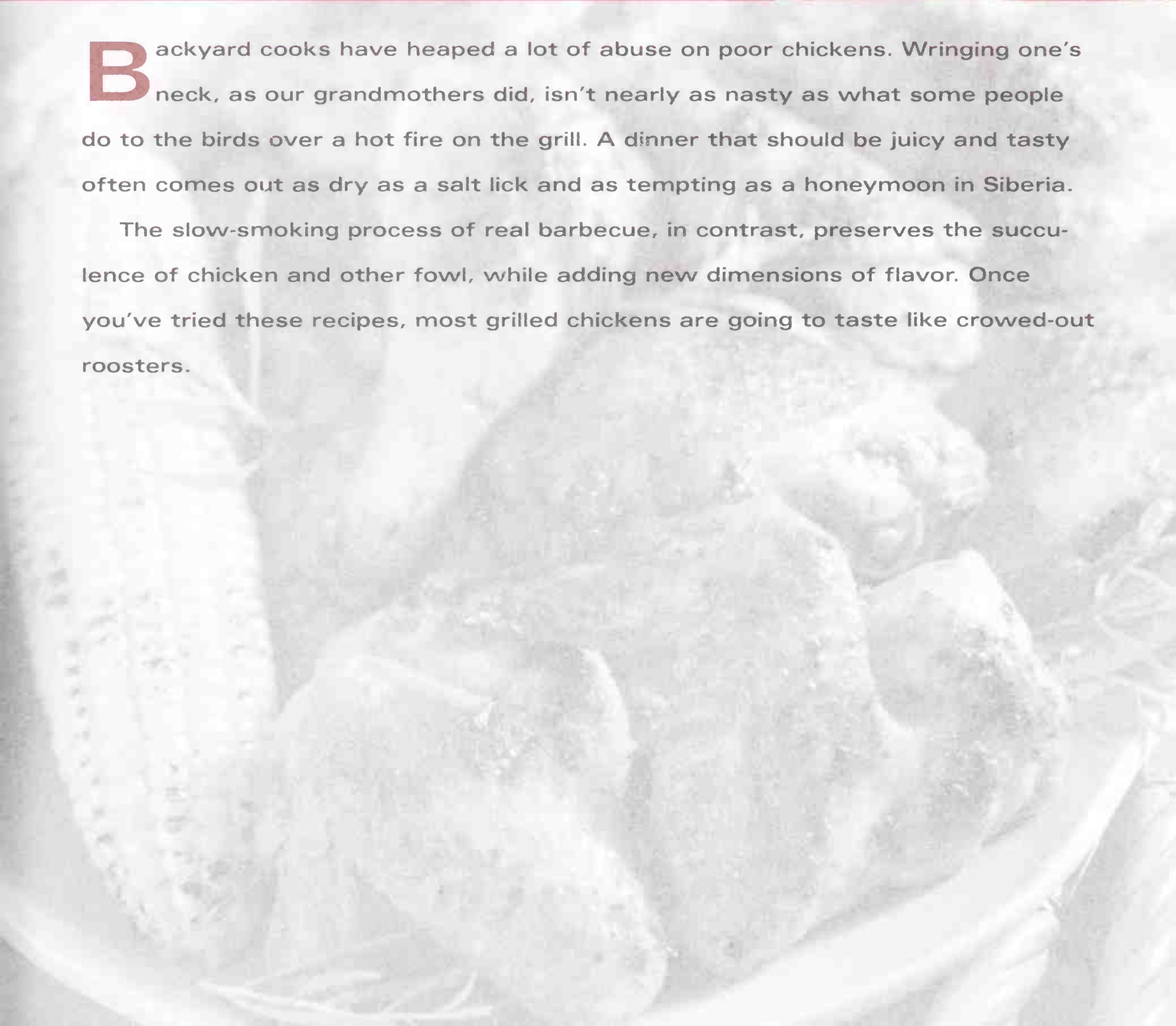


Fowl Play



Backyard cooks have heaped a lot of abuse on poor chickens. Wringing one's neck, as our grandmothers did, isn't nearly as nasty as what some people do to the birds over a hot fire on the grill. A dinner that should be juicy and tasty often comes out as dry as a salt lick and as tempting as a honeymoon in Siberia.

The slow-smoking process of real barbecue, in contrast, preserves the succulence of chicken and other fowl, while adding new dimensions of flavor. Once you've tried these recipes, most grilled chickens are going to taste like crowed-out roosters.



Chicken on a Throne	171	Green Chile Chicken Soup	189
Mustard 'n' Lemon Chicken	173	Worth-the-Wait Turkey	190
Birds of Paradise	175	Hot Times Jalapeño Turkey Breast	192
Fancy Chicken with Cheese	176	Wildly Stuffed Turkey Breast	194
Finger Lickin' Fried Smoked Chicken	178	Two-Steppin' Turkey Legs	196
Quick Chick	179	Hot Browns	197
Chicken-Wrapped Apple Sausage	181	Quacker 'Q'	198
Chicken Oregano	182	Tea-Smoked Duck	200
Thunder Thighs	183	Dandy Little Hens	202
Delectable Drumsticks	185	Mushroom-Stuffed Quail	203
Alabama Smoked Chicken Sandwich	186	Fruited Pheasant	204
Smoked Chicken Sandwich with Summer Confetti	187	Rosy Rosemary Quail	206



Chicken on a Throne

This established barbecue classic, also called “beer-can chicken,” may be the best way of cooking a whole chicken ever invented in America. If you own a large smoker, and want to really delight your guests, arrange a row of these inside, with their legs crossed jauntily, or with one wing propped up in a salute. Your friends will talk about it for years.

SERVES 5 TO 6

WILD WILLY’S NUMBER ONE-DERFUL RUB

- 6 tablespoons paprika
- 2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
- 2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 2 tablespoons sugar
- 1 tablespoon chili powder
- 1 tablespoon garlic powder
- 1 tablespoon onion powder
- 1 teaspoon cayenne

INJECTION LIQUID

- 12 ounces beer
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup cider or white vinegar
- 2 teaspoons Wild Willy’s Number One-derful Rub

Two $3\frac{1}{2}$ -pound whole chickens

THRONE MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 12 ounces beer
- 1 cup chicken stock
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil
- 1 tablespoon Wild Willy’s Number One-derful Rub

Two 12-ounce cans beer (no bottles please)

- $\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, chopped
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup cider or white vinegar
- 4 garlic cloves, minced

Alabama Great White (page 362), Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce (page 360), or Old-Fashioned High Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce (page 351) (optional)

BELLO AND THE BIRD

Browsing the Web about barbecue one day, we found a site in the Netherlands (web.inter.nl.net/users/R.Hiddinga/bello) that shows a homemade offset-firebox smoker and a few pictures of it in operation. Right there in the land of tulips, these guys are cooking Chicken on a Throne, presumably on a European beer can. The site described everything pretty thoroughly, but since it was in Dutch, we have no idea what it said. All we could decipher is that the smoker is called “Bello.”

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. In another bowl, combine the ingredient for the injection liquid. Remove the organs from the cavity of the chickens.

2. With a kitchen syringe, inject about $\frac{1}{2}$ cup of the injection liquid deep into the breast and legs of each chicken in several spots. Massage the chickens thoroughly, inside and out, with the remaining injection liquid, working it as far as possible under the skin without tearing the skin. Cover the chickens well with the dry rub, again massaging inside and out and over and under the skin. Reserve at least 1 tablespoon of the rub if you are planning to baste the chickens. Place the chickens in a plastic bag and refrigerate them.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the chickens from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

5. While you wait, open the 2 beer cans and drink half—and only half—of each beer. With a can opener, remove the tops of the half-empty beer cans. Place half of the onion, vinegar, garlic, and reserved rub in each can. Insert the replenished beer cans into the cavities of the chickens, balancing the birds so that they rest upright with their legs bent forward. The cans should sit flat on the grill or on a cooking tray, holding the chickens at attention while

their insides are steaming and their outsides are smoking.

6. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), combine the ingredients in a saucepan with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water and keep the mixture warm over low heat.

7. Transfer the chickens to the smoker. Cook for $3\frac{1}{2}$ to 4 hours, mopping every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. When the chickens are done, their legs will move freely and the internal temperature should be 180°F to 185°F.

8. Let the chickens sit for 5 to 10 minutes. Remove the skins, carve the chickens, and serve. Offer Alabama Great White, Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce, or Old-Fashioned High Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce on the side, if you wish, but be sure to try some of the savory bird unadorned before slathering on the sauce.



BBQ TIP You should seldom remove the skin from chickens or other birds before barbecuing them. The skin keeps the meat moist and its fat acts as a natural basting agent. When there is skin on only a portion of the meat, as with a chicken breast, place that side up in your smoker. We remove the skin before serving, just as we trim any remaining layers of fat from other barbecue meats. It doesn't crisp up as it would with

high-heat grilling and is generally a little over-smoked for most people's tastes. The one exception we've found is when chicken

is cooked in a Big Green Egg or other kamado smoker, which produces poultry with moist meat and crackling crisp skin.

Mustard 'n' Lemon Chicken

If you want your chickens sober instead of steamy with beer, stuff their cavities with lemons and onions. The rub adds a tangy mustard taste.

SERVES 5 TO 6

POULTRY PERFECT RUB

- 6 tablespoons paprika
- 2 tablespoons freshly ground black pepper
- 2 tablespoons celery salt
- 2 tablespoons sugar
- 1 tablespoon garlic powder
- 1 tablespoon dry mustard
- 1 teaspoon cayenne
- Zest of 1 to 2 lemons, dried and minced
- Two 3½-pound chickens
- 2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 medium onion, cut into thin wedges
- 1 lemon, cut into thin wedges

LEMON SPLASH (OPTIONAL)

- 1½ cups chicken stock
- ¾ cup freshly squeezed lemon juice
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- ½ cup butter, preferably unsalted
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 tablespoon yellow mustard
- 2 teaspoons Poultry Perfect Rub

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) or Black Sauce (page 355) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl.
2. Remove the organs from the cavity of each chicken.
3. In a small saucepan, melt the butter and stir in the Worcestershire sauce. Massage the chickens thoroughly with the butter mixture, inside and out, working the mixture as far as possible under the skin without tearing it. Cover the chickens well with the dry rub, again massaging inside and out and over and under the skin. Reserve about one-third of the rub. Place the chickens in a plastic bag and refrigerate them.
4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
5. Remove the chickens from the refrigerator and rub them again with the dry rub,

reserving at least 2 teaspoons of the mixture if you plan to baste the birds. Let the chickens sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes, and then insert the lemon and onion slices into their cavities.

6. If you are going to use the Lemon Splash mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix together the ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a saucepan. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

7. Place the chickens in the smoker, breast down. Cook for $3\frac{1}{2}$ to 4 hours, basting the birds with the mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Turn the birds breast side up about halfway through the cooking time. When the chickens are done, their legs will move freely and the internal temperature should be 180°F to 185 °F.

8. Let the chickens sit for 5 to 10 minutes. Remove the lemons and onions from the cavities, remove the skins, carve the chicken, and serve. Offer Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce or Black Sauce on the side, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Accompany the chicken with your favorite fresh green vegetable and*

either Mayme’s Macaroni and Cheese (page 384) or Boarding House Macaroni Salad (page 399). How about Becky’s Pineapple Cake (page 436) for dessert?



BBQ TIP You have more control over your cooking temperature in a log-burning pit than in most other kinds of smokers, but the mechanisms of control are not always well explained in the owner’s manual. First in importance is the size and intensity of the fire. In an efficient, well-constructed pit you seldom need more than three logs burning at once, or more than a small flame going. The air intake control is a close second in significance. You open it to increase the draft—which stirs the flame and raises the heat—or close it to dampen the blaze and reduce the temperature. The out-take adjustment on the smoke stack is most useful in reining back a fire that’s gotten too hot. Unless that happens, leave it fully open to keep the smoke circulating freely. If it’s shut down for an extended period, food will get sooty.

HENRY PERRY AND THE BRYANT BOYS

Henry Perry was our kind of pioneer, the founding father of Kansas City barbecue. Slapping together a living during the Depression, he started barbecuing ribs in an outdoor pit along the street, selling slabs wrapped in newspaper. Two Bryant brothers joined Perry in the business in 1931 and eventually turned the makeshift operation into the country’s most famous ‘Q’ joint, Arthur Bryant’s.

Birds of Paradise

The paradise on this plate comes from the Caribbean. The herb seasoning paste helps the chickens develop deep flavor while cooking, and the mighty mojo sauce blesses and bathes them on the table.

SERVES 5 TO 6

NAME-YOUR-HERB PASTE WITH MINT, PARSLEY, AND CILANTRO

1½ cups fresh herbs (a combination of mint, Italian flat-leaf parsley, and cilantro, about ½ cup each)

10 to 14 garlic cloves

1 teaspoon salt

¾ cup olive oil

Two 3½-pound whole chickens

MOJO

¾ cup freshly squeezed orange juice, plus
2 tablespoons orange zest

¾ cup freshly squeezed lime juice

6 to 8 garlic cloves, minced

¾ cup olive oil

2 teaspoons ground cumin

2 teaspoons dried oregano

1 teaspoon salt, or more to taste

⅓ cup chopped cilantro

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, purée the herb paste ingredients in a blender or food processor, first combining the herbs, garlic, and salt. Process until the herbs are finely chopped. Add the oil in a slow stream, mixing thoroughly.

2. Remove the organs from the cavity of each chicken.

3. Cover the chickens well with the paste, massaging inside and out and over and under the skin, working the mixture as far as possible under the skin without tearing it. Place the chickens in a plastic bag and refrigerate them.

4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

5. Remove the chickens from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

6. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix the mojo ingredients together now, leaving out the cilantro. Reserve 1½ cups of the mojo for sauce and, for the mop, combine the remaining mojo with 1 cup water in a saucepan. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

7. Place the chickens in the smoker, breast down. Cook for 3½ to 4 hours, basting the birds with the mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Turn the birds breast side up about halfway through the cooking time. When the chickens are done, their legs will move freely and the internal temperature should be 180°F to 185°F.

8. Let the chickens sit for 5 to 10 minutes.

9. Stir together the mojo now, if you didn't previously. Stir the cilantro into the sauce.

10. Remove the skins, carve the chickens, and serve, with mojo on the side.

Serving Suggestion Set a festive table, and put on some salsa music. Offer toasted thick shreds of dried coconut as a nibble. Accompany the chickens with fluffy white rice and Mango and Avocado Salad (page 406).

Serve lively Mojito Sorbet (page 444) for dessert.



BBQ TIP Perfectionists may want to truss stuffed whole chickens. The birds will look a bit more shapely coming out of the smoker, but the extra step isn't needed for taste.

"BARBECUE MAN"

Arthur Bryant became so legendary in barbecue circles that he rated an obituary in *The New York Times* titled simply, "Arthur Bryant, Barbecue Man." Raised in poverty in East Texas, he bought his famous Kansas City joint from his older brother Charlie in 1946. From then until his death in 1982, the "Barbecue Man" cooked almost daily on his white-tiled pits. Calvin Trillin called Arthur Bryant's the best restaurant in the world, but Bryant himself thought of his place as just the "House of Good Eats."

Fancy Chicken with Cheese

A creamy goat cheese under a chicken's skin helps to keep the meat moist and adds its own delightful flavor. Try this when you need to impress someone who looks down their nose at barbecue.

SERVES 3

3½-pound whole chicken

2 to 3 ounces fresh mild goat cheese

1 tablespoon prepared pesto

8 to 10 basil leaves

FANCY MOP (OPTIONAL)

1 cup chicken stock

½ cup white wine

2 tablespoons olive oil

1 tablespoon prepared pesto

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, remove the organs from the cavity of the chicken. Massage the chicken thoroughly with the cheese and pesto, inside and out, working them as far as possible under the

skin without tearing it. Insert the basil leaves under the skin, placing them as evenly as possible over the chicken. If you wish, truss the chicken. Place the chicken in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chicken from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the chicken (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix together the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a saucepan. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the chicken to the smoker, breast down. Cook for $3\frac{1}{2}$ to 4 hours, basting the chicken with the mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Turn the bird breast side up about halfway through the cooking time. When the

chicken is done, its legs will move freely and the internal temperature should be 180°F to 185°F.

6. Let the chicken sit for 5 to 10 minutes. Remove the skin, carve the chicken, and serve it.

Serving Suggestion *Lead off by nibbling Smoked Olives (page 321). Accompany the chicken with pasta tossed with good olive oil and steamed zucchini, followed by Texas Peach Cobbler (page 431).*



BBQ TIP Different kinds of smokers require different levels of attention during the start-up process. With self-sufficient models that don't need much tending, such as an electric water smoker, you can adjust the order of recipe steps to preheat the smoker while you go about the final food preparations.

POLITICKING WITH THE 'Q'

Lyndon Johnson loved his barbecue. From the moment he took office as president, Johnson used barbecue parties to coddle political allies and cajole adversaries. His favorite pitmaster was Walter Jetton, who told about what he doled in the 1965 *LBJ Barbecue Cook Book* (Pocket Books).



Finger Lickin' Fried Smoked Chicken

When eating out in Kansas City, it can be tough to decide between the world-class barbecue and the superlative fried chicken served at places like Stroud's. This technique, first suggested by Bobby Seale, is an at-home compromise between the two down-home dishes, one that bathes the birds in smoke before finishing them in a crunchy coating.

SERVES 4

3½ to 4 pounds chicken parts

Buttermilk to cover, about 3 cups

1½ tablespoons Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

2 to 3 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

1½ cups all-purpose flour

1½ pounds solid shortening (3 cups), preferably Crisco

3 tablespoons bacon drippings

1. At least 3 hours, and up to 12 hours, before you plan to barbecue, place the chicken in a shallow dish. Pour the buttermilk and Tabasco over the chicken. Turn the chicken in the buttermilk to coat it well. Cover the dish and refrigerate it.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Drain the chicken, reserving the marinade in the refrigerator. Allow the chicken to stand at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

4. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 35 to 45 minutes, long enough to

give the bird some smoky flavor but only to cook it partially.

5. Return the chicken to the buttermilk bath. Pour the flour into a medium-size brown paper sack and sprinkle in the salt and pepper.

6. In a 10-inch to 12-inch cast-iron skillet, melt the shortening and bacon drippings over high heat. When small bubbles form on the surface, reduce the heat to medium-high. Drain each piece of the chicken, starting with the dark pieces, and drop them into the bag of seasoned flour. Shake well to coat.

7. Lower each piece gently into the skillet, skin-side down. Arrange the chicken so that all pieces cook evenly. It's desirable that the pieces fit snugly together, although they shouldn't be sticking to each other. Reduce the heat to medium and cover the skillet. Fry the chicken for 10 to 11 minutes. Reduce the heat to medium-low, uncover the chicken, and turn it over. Fry it, uncovered, for another 10 to 11 minutes, wiping up any grease spatters on

your stove as they occur. The chicken will be a rich mahogany brown and should be cooked through and tender inside. Cut into a test piece first, cooking an additional minute or two if needed. Remove the chicken, drain it, and serve it piping hot.

Serving Suggestion For an old-fashioned Sunday dinner, add Country Collard Greens (page 378), Flash-Fried Okra (page 376), garlicky mashed potatoes and gravy, Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389), Squash Relish (page 415), and loads of Sunny Sweet Tea (page 460). Finish off with Peanut Butter Cake (page 434).

EYE TO EYE WITH LBJ

As a leader of the Black Panther Party, Bobby Seale didn't agree with President Lyndon Johnson about anything except barbecue. In 1988 Seale wrote a tribute to the 'Q' he loved at his uncle's restaurant in Liberty, Texas, and showed how to duplicate it on a grill using marinades flavored with liquid smoke. *Barbeque'n with Bobby* (Ten Speed Press) is a gem, for tips and tales alike. Look for it in used book stores.

Quick Chick

Here's a great way to serve barbecued chicken on a weeknight when time is short. You don't want to fire up a log pit to cook Quick Chick, but it's great for stovetop smokers, electric-powered smokers, and other smokers that start up in a snap.

SERVES 4 TO 6

SPLIT-SECOND DRY RUB

- 1 tablespoon paprika
 - 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
 - 1 teaspoon sugar
 - ½ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
 - ½ teaspoon onion powder
 - Pinch of cayenne
- 6 boneless, skinless chicken breasts, pounded lightly

SPLIT-SECOND MOP

- 1 cup orange juice
 - 3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
 - 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- Smoked Onion Sauce (page 360), South Florida Citrus Sauce (page 363), or Bour-BQ Sauce (page 357) (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the breasts with the mixture and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

3. Combine the mop ingredients in a small saucepan, placing the pan over low heat to melt the butter. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

4. Drizzle the breasts with about one-third of the mop. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 25 to 30 minutes, or until cooked through. In a wood-burning pit, turn the breasts after 15 minutes and mop well again. With other smokers, don't worry about turning the breasts or mopping while cooking—just drizzle the breasts with more mop as soon as you remove them from the smoker. Serve im-

mediately, with Smoked Onion Sauce, South Florida Citrus Sauce, or Bour-BQ Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Accompany the chicken with cool Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas Salad (page 396) and hot rice. Sweet Potato Pudding (page 440) makes a fitting finish if you have time to prepare it. Otherwise, offer a plate of fresh fruit.*

Variation: Deviled Quick Chick In place of the dry rub, make a paste of 2 tablespoons brown or Dijon mustard, and 1 teaspoon each Worcestershire sauce, salt, and black pepper. Replace the orange juice in the mop with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water. We prefer these without any sauce.

SPICE MASTER

The inspiration for the Quick Chick recipe came from Dallas pitmaster Obie Obermark, sometimes known in barbecue cook-off circles as “the chicken champion.” Our version is different from his, which relies on Obie’s special dry rubs. If you want to make it the original way, you can order his Obiecue Texas Spice mixtures by phone at 972-641-2660 or on the Web at www.obiecue.com. Try the Sweet Rub in particular, a consistent contest winner.



Chicken-Wrapped Apple Sausage

A revived interest in sausage in recent years has led to an explosion of new varieties, many leaner than the old favorites. We find Bruce Aidells's nationally distributed sausages among the best at balancing heartiness and healthiness, although many markets now make their own fine versions, too. If you can't find an apple-laced chicken sausage, substitute any other made from chicken or turkey.

SERVES 4

CHICKEN-APPLE MARINADE

1 cup apple juice

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup cider vinegar

2 tablespoons olive oil

2 tablespoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26) or other savory seasoning blend to taste

1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon brown mustard

4 boneless, skinless chicken breasts, pounded thin

1 teaspoon olive oil

4 uncooked chicken-apple sausages, such as Aidells

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons brown mustard

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup minced onion

Additional Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub or other savory seasoning blend, to taste

1 tart apple, cored and sliced thin

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup chicken stock

1. About 2 to 3 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the chicken in a large plastic bag or shallow, nonreactive dish. Pour the marinade over the chicken and refrigerate it.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chicken from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

4. Warm the olive oil in a skillet over medium-low heat. Add the sausages and sauté until just cooked through. Remove the sausages from the skillet, saving the drippings. Cool the sausages briefly, and then rub them with the mustard.

5. Drain the chicken, reserving 1 cup of the marinade. Arrange a sausage on each chicken breast, sprinkling 1 to 2 teaspoons of the onion over each portion. Wrap the chicken around the sausage, securing each roll with toothpicks. It's not necessary to entirely encase the sausages, but make the rolls as attractive as possible. Sprinkle the tops of the rolls with dry rub.

6. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook until the chicken is cooked through and tender, about 25 minutes.

7. While the chicken smokes, add the remaining onion and the apple to the pan

drippings and sauté over medium heat until both begin to soften. Pour in the stock and the reserved marinade and bring to a boil. Boil for at least 5 minutes, allowing most of the liquid to evaporate.

8. Remove the chicken from the smoker and arrange each chicken breast on a plate. Spoon equal portions of the apple mixture over the chicken and serve hot.

Chicken Oregano

Garlic always goes great with chicken, and as any Italian cook can tell you, it also makes a delicious seasoning duo with oregano.

SERVES 6 TO 8

OREGANO MARINADE

2 cups olive oil (an inexpensive kind is fine)

1 cup freshly squeezed lemon juice

6 to 8 garlic cloves

2 teaspoons salt

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup chopped fresh oregano or
2 tablespoons dried oregano

8 bone-in, skin-on chicken breasts, 7 to 8 ounces each

Fresh oregano sprigs, for garnish (optional)

1. About 4 to 8 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a blender and purée. Loosen the skin of the chicken, and place the chicken in a shallow, nonreactive dish or plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the chicken and refrigerate it, turning once, if needed, to saturate the surface.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chicken from the refrigerator and drain the pieces. Let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

4. Transfer the chicken pieces to the smoker, skin sides up. Cook the chicken for 50 to 60 minutes, until it is cooked through and the juices run clear when a skewer is inserted into a breast. Remove the chicken from the smoker and serve hot, garnished with oregano sprigs, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion Try this simple preparation with *Sweet and Sour Cukes* (page 398), *roast potatoes*, and *Lemon Pudding Ice Cream Pie* (page 426).

Variation: Chicken Tarragon Substitute tarragon vinegar for the lemon juice and fresh tarragon for the fresh oregano in the marinade. Garnish with tarragon sprigs.

Thunder Thighs

Many dishes from the old South have their origins in Africa, and that's the source of the seasoning combination here, a thunder storm of a mixture.

SERVES 3 TO 4

THUNDER PASTE

- 1 small onion, chunked
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup orange juice
- 2 tablespoons peanut butter
- 1 tablespoon peanut oil
- 2 teaspoons ground anise
- 1 teaspoon curry powder
- 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 teaspoon packed brown sugar
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground cinnamon
- 8 bone-in, skin-on chicken thighs

THUNDER MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 1 cup chicken stock
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup orange juice
- 1 tablespoon peanut oil
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon curry powder

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine all the paste ingredients in a food processor or blender. Coat the thighs

thickly with the paste, rubbing under and over the skin. Place the chicken in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chicken from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 15 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the chicken (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{4}$ cup water in a small saucepan and keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 1½ to 1¾ hours. Mop the thighs every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. The chicken is done when it is very tender and the juices run clear when a skewer is inserted into a thigh. Serve the thighs immediately.

THE FOOD OF PEACE

Every year at the big Memphis in May barbecue cook-off, the showmanship competition is one of the highlights. One time when we attended, the Rowdy Southern Swine team from Kossuth, Mississippi, walked away with the prize in a breeze. The troupe's crowd-rousing skit told the story of how barbecue—with the help of the Blues Brothers—brought peace to the planet.

Serving Suggestion *Pair the thighs with Sweet Potatoes with Orange-Pecan Butter (page 258), Okra Pickles (page 409), and Cracklin' Cornbread (page 387). Sip creamy Plumb Loco Coco Punch (page 458) in place of dessert.*



BBQ TIP Some people use beer, wine, or other liquids in their water pan or reservoir,

or they add slices of apples, onions, fresh or dried herbs, or other favorite foods. We usually don't notice much difference in taste, except when we're cooking in a water smoker, which produces more steam than other kinds of barbecue equipment do. If you have a lot of something, like a garden full of fresh rosemary, give it a try, but the effect usually seems very subtle for the price if you have to buy the ingredients.

IT PLAYED IN PEORIA

Big John Robinson of Peoria, Illinois, ran into financial problems in the 1980s, but he's still a legend in the city. In 1949, he opened a barbecue shack on a downtown sidewalk, buying his meat daily in 15-pound slabs because he didn't own a freezer. By 1974, Big John's 'Q' was Peoria's favorite chow, and the pit-master was named the state's small-business man of the year.



Delectable Drumsticks

Yogurt, like buttermilk, is a miracle marinade, capable of tenderizing anything short of the calluses on a bureaucrat's butt.

SERVES 2 TO 4

DELECTABLE MARINADE

- 1 cup plain yogurt
- 1 cup fresh mint leaves, chopped fine
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
- 8 chicken drumsticks

DELECTABLE MOP (OPTIONAL)

- Remaining marinade
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil

Lime-Mint Barbecue Sauce (page 363) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a small bowl. Loosen the skin on the drumsticks, then place the drumsticks in a large plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the drumsticks and refrigerate overnight.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
3. Remove the chicken from the refrigerator and drain it, reserving the remaining marinade. Let the chicken sit at room temperature for about 15 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the chicken (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the mop ingredients with $\frac{1}{4}$ cup water in a small saucepan and bring the mixture to a boil, boiling for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the chicken to the smoker. Cook for 1½ to 1¾ hours, or until the drumsticks are very tender and the juices run clear when a skewer is inserted into one of them. Mop the chicken every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

6. Remove the drumsticks from the smoker and serve them immediately, with a dish of Lime-Mint Barbecue Sauce for dipping, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion Accompany the drumsticks with white or brown rice, Zooks and Cilantro Sauce (page 271), and tangy Corn and Watermelon Pickle-lilli (page 416). Santa Fe Capirotada (page 442) makes an unusual dessert.

Alabama Smoked Chicken Sandwich

Big Bob Gibson's in Decatur, Alabama, serves an unusual barbecued chicken. After cooking, the chicken is dunked into a white barbecue sauce that dates back to Big Bob's early days, some eight decades ago. Nobody really remembers how or why the white sauce got started but it's become as much a trademark of the place as the dancing pig sign. Don McLemore, the present-day honcho, says his grandfather, Big Bob, began the famous sauce as a simple mixture of mayonnaise, vinegar, and black pepper. Here's our own humble attempt to recreate this special treat in the backyard, starting with quick and easy chicken breasts.

SERVES 6

SOUTHERN SUCCOR RUB

- 1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper
 - 1 tablespoon paprika
 - 1 tablespoon turbinado sugar
 - 1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
 - ½ teaspoon dry mustard
 - ¼ teaspoon cayenne
- 6 boneless, skinless chicken breasts, pounded lightly

ALABAMA GREAT WHITE

- 1 cup mayonnaise (the real stuff—no Miracle Whip here)
 - 3 to 4 tablespoons vinegar, preferably cider
 - 1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper
 - 1 teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
 - Pinch or two of onion powder
 - Pinch or two of cayenne
- 12 large slices toasted white bread

6 crisp lettuce leaves

Green Tomato Chowchow (page 413), bread-and-butter pickles, or other tangy relish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the breasts with the mixture and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.
3. Make the sauce, first whisking together the mayonnaise with about one-half of the vinegar. Add the remaining ingredients, and 1 tablespoon of water, and whisk until smooth. Spoon out about ¼ cup of the sauce, and mix it with ¼ cup water to use as a mop.
4. Drizzle the breasts with about one-third of the mop. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 25 to 30 minutes, or

until cooked through. In a wood-burning pit, turn the breasts after 15 minutes and mop well again. With other smokers, don't worry about turning the breasts or mopping while cooking—just drizzle the breasts with more mop as soon as you remove them from the smoker.

5. Assemble the sandwiches, slathering sauce on one side of all the bread slices. Arrange a lettuce leaf on each of six bread slices, then top each with a chicken breast and a hearty dollop of chowchow. Top each with a remaining bread slice, halve, and serve with the remaining sauce on the side.

Smoked Chicken Sandwich with Summer Confetti

If the previous sandwich was country singer Tim McGraw, this would be Faith Hill—closely related, but this one's definitely prettier, with a more elegant appearance. It resembles a summer garden, with its bright bits of herbs, tomato, onion, and peppers.

SERVES 6

CONFETTI PASTE

- 1 tablespoon minced fresh basil
- 1 tablespoon minced fresh parsley
- 2 tablespoons olive oil
- 1 tablespoon brine from a jar of peperoncini peppers
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- $\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 6 boneless, skinless chicken breasts, pounded thin

SALAD TOPPING

- $\frac{2}{3}$ cup chopped pimiento-stuffed green olives
- 1 small red-ripe tomato, chopped
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup minced red onion

- 2 to 3 tablespoons chopped peperoncini peppers
- 2 tablespoons minced fresh basil
- 2 tablespoons minced fresh parsley
- 2 tablespoons olive oil
- 1 teaspoon Dijon mustard
- Pinch of salt

12 large slices sturdy sourdough bread or other good sandwich bread

6 slices provolone cheese

1. At least 2 hours and up to the night before you plan to barbecue, combine the paste ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the paste thoroughly over the chicken, wrap it

in plastic, and refrigerate for at least 1 hour.

2. While the chicken marinates, make the salad topping. Combine the ingredients in a bowl, cover the mixture, and refrigerate.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 25 to 30 minutes, or until cooked through. Place a cheese slice on each breast and cook for another few minutes, until softened.

5. Assemble the sandwiches, arranging a chicken breast on each of six bread slices. Spoon equal portions of the salad topping over the chicken breasts. Top each with a remaining bread slice, halve, and serve.

Variation: Smoked Chicken Salad with Summer Confetti If you don't want something quite so filling, simply do away with the bread and the cheese. Slice the cooked chicken breasts and fan each one across a plate. Top with equal portions of the salad topping. Serve warm or lightly chilled.

DON'T GO TO TEXAS WITHOUT IT

Robb Walsh's *Legends of Texas Barbecue Cook Book* (2002, Chronicle Books) is the ultimate guide to its fascinating subject. Walsh entertains and enlightens at the same time, telling stories about the men behind the meat, offering time-honored recipes, giving good advice on where to eat, listing cook-offs to attend, and much more. All Texans need a copy, and so does any visitor who wants to venture into the soul of the state.



Green Chile Chicken Soup

As mentioned several times, we often make extra smoked foods to have intentional leftovers for other dishes. This soulful soup is one of our favorite chicken leftover treats, so good you'll be tempted to fire up your smoker and make it from scratch. You can easily cook the chicken a day or two ahead of when you want to prepare the soup.

SERVES 8

SOUTHWEST HEAT

2 tablespoons ground New Mexican red chile

2 tablespoons ground ancho chile

2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2 teaspoons ground cumin

$\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon dried oregano, preferably Mexican

4 to 5 bone-in, skin-on chicken breasts, 7 to 8 ounces each

SOUP

2 tablespoons vegetable oil

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ medium onions, chopped

2 to 3 garlic cloves, minced

8 cups chicken stock

14.5-ounce can stewed tomatoes, preferably a Mexican-flavored variety

1 cup chopped roasted mild green chiles, such as New Mexican or poblano, preferably fresh or frozen

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons dried oregano

Salt

Minced cilantro and grated Monterey jack cheese, for garnish

1. At least 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, and up to the night before, combine

the dry rub ingredients in a small bowl. With your fingers, loosen the skin of the breasts and massage the chicken with the spice mixture, rubbing over and under the skin. Place the breasts in a plastic bag or covered container and refrigerate them for at least 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the chicken from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

4. Transfer the chicken pieces to the smoker, skin sides up. Cook the chicken for 50 to 60 minutes, until it is cooked through and the juices run clear when a skewer is inserted into a breast.

5. While the chicken smokes, prepare the soup broth. Warm the oil in a large pot over high heat. Stir in the onions and garlic, and sauté until the onions are softened and browned on the edges. Frequently scrape up the vegetables from the bottom of the pan. Pour in the stock, and add the tomatoes, chile, oregano, and salt to taste.

Bring to a boil, then reduce the heat to a simmer and cook for 25 to 30 minutes, until all the vegetables are tender. (The broth can be prepared a day or two ahead to this point, and refrigerated.)

6. When the chicken is cool enough to handle, shred the meat into bite-size

chunks, discarding the skin and bones or saving them to make stock later.

7. Stir the chicken into the soup and continue simmering about 10 more minutes. Ladle the soup into bowls, top with cilantro and cheese, and serve hot.



Worth-the-Wait Turkey

You may be talking gibberish yourself after a long, long day of barbecuing this bird, but your guests will be talking about the turkey for many more days to come.

SERVES 8 TO 10

INJECTION LIQUID

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup garlic-flavored oil

4 ounces beer

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon cayenne

10-pound to 11-pound turkey

TURKEY PASTE

4 garlic cloves

1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Pinch of cayenne

1 tablespoon garlic-flavored oil

TURKEY MOP (OPTIONAL)

2 cups turkey or chicken stock

8 ounces beer

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil

Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce (page 358) or Struttin' Sauce (page 347) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the injection liquid ingredients in a small bowl. With a kitchen syringe, inject the mixture deep into the turkey in a half-dozen places, moving the needle around in each spot to shoot the liquid in

several directions. Inject the greatest amount into the breast.

2. With a mortar and pestle or in a mini-food processor, combine the paste ingredients, mashing the garlic with the pepper, salt, and cayenne. Add the oil to form a thick paste. Massage the turkey with the paste inside and out, working it as far as possible under the skin without tearing the skin. Place the turkey in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

3. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the turkey from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 45 minutes.

4. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

5. Cut a 4-foot to 5-foot length of cheesecloth and dampen it thoroughly with water. Wrap the bird in the cheesecloth and tie the ends.

6. Transfer the turkey to the smoker, breast side down (you should be able to feel through the cheesecloth), and cook for 1¼ to 1½ hours per pound, until the internal temperature reaches 180°F. Wet the cheesecloth down with more water at 30-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

7. After about 6 hours, remove the cheesecloth, snipping it with scissors if necessary, and discard it. When the cheesecloth is removed, baste the turkey for the remainder of its cooking time, if possible, in your smoker (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”). If

you plan to baste, combine the mop ingredients with 1 cup water in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat. Mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

8. When the turkey is done, remove it from the smoker and allow it to sit for 15 minutes before carving. Serve with Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce or Struttin’ Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *For a festive meal suitable for a holiday, start with Shrimp Ré-moulade (page 238). Along with the bird, serve Candied Sweet Potatoes (page 378), Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions (page 254), cornbread dressing, and Buttermilk Biscuits (page 388). Load a relish tray with Green Tomato Chowchow (page 413), Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles (page 411), Okra Pickles (page 409), Bourbon Peaches (page 417), or make up a relish tray of store-bought favorites. Offer a scrumptious Black Walnut Cake (page 437) for dessert.*



BBQ TIP *Injecting an oil mixture is a good way of adding internal moistness and flavor to lean meat. The amounts we recommend in recipes may seem large, but they don’t make food greasy. Much of it cooks away.*



BBQ TIP To make your own garlic-flavored oil, mince a whole head of fresh garlic. Place it in a lidded jar and add enough oil to

cover the garlic by a couple of inches. Refrigerate for at least a day before straining off the oil and using. Don't let it sit at room temperature for any length of time.

SOMETHING ELSE TO MAKE MILWAUKEE FAMOUS

Milwaukee makes lots of beer, of course, so we figured there had to be some good barbecue, too. We found it at the Speed Queen, mainly a take-out business with limited seating. The kitchen puts together plates and sandwiches that look like sloppy Joes but taste like genuine 'Q.' Ask for "outside meat," the blackened exterior cuts often known farther south as "Mr. Brown."

Hot Times Jalapeño Turkey Breast

Spanish explorers celebrated a feast of thanksgiving near present-day El Paso back when our Pilgrim mothers and fathers were still boys and girls in England. That's all the excuse you need to add Southwestern flair to your next Thanksgiving meal.

SERVES 6 TO 8

INJECTION LIQUID

- 1/3 cup vegetable oil
- 1/3 cup pickling liquid from a jar or can of pickled jalapeños
- 1 teaspoon yellow mustard

5-pound to 7-pound turkey breast

HOT TIMES RUB

- 2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 2 teaspoons ground cinnamon

1/2 teaspoon dry mustard

1/2 teaspoon cayenne (optional)

HOT TIMES MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 2 cups chicken or turkey stock
- 1/4 cup vegetable oil
- 1/4 cup pickling liquid from a jar or can of pickled jalapeños
- 1/4 cup jalapeño jelly

Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce (page 360) or Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, mix together the injection liquid ingredients in a small bowl. With a kitchen syringe, inject all but about 2 tablespoons of the mixture deep into the turkey breast in a half-dozen places, moving the needle around in each spot to shoot the liquid in several directions. Using your fingers, massage the breast with the rest of the liquid, working it as far as possible under the skin without tearing the skin.

2. Stir together the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Massage the breast well with the mixture, again rubbing it over and under the skin. Place the breast in a plastic bag and refrigerate it overnight.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the turkey breast from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes. Cut a 3-foot length of cheesecloth and dampen it thoroughly with water. Wrap the breast in the cheesecloth and tie the ends.

5. Transfer the breast to the smoker skin side up (you should be able to feel through the cheesecloth) and cook for 1¼ to 1½ hours per pound, until the internal temperature reaches 180°F. Wet the cheesecloth down with more water at 30-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. After 4 hours, remove the cheesecloth, snipping it with scissors if necessary, and

discard it. When the cheesecloth is removed, baste the turkey for the remainder of its cooking time, if possible in your smoker (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”). If you plan to baste, combine the mop ingredients in a saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat. Mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

7. When the turkey is done, remove it from the smoker and allow it to sit for 10 minutes before carving. Serve with Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce or Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *For a different spin on a holiday meal, offer Little Devils (page 320) and Sangrita Marias (page 456) while everyone gathers. Sit down to Texas Terrine (page 342) for the first course. Accompany the turkey breast with Drunken Sweet Potatoes (page 259), San Antonio Cactus and Corn Salad (page 398), spinach sautéed with garlic, and Blue Corn Muffins (page 390). Prodigal Pecan Pie (page 421) makes a great ending.*

Variation: Glazed Hot Times Jalapeño Turkey Breast If you want a quick glaze for the turkey breast, heat together equal portions of jalapeño jelly and chicken stock. Spoon it over individual slices or offer it on the side.

GOOD SHOPPING

More and more barbecue cook-off teams are starting Web sites. You can learn all about the team and events they enter, and you usually get the opportunity to buy something, from logo-boasting beach hats to catering services. For a partial list of sites, see www.southernbarbecue.com.



Wildly Stuffed Turkey Breast

In the half-dozen years since we developed this recipe, it's become a big-time favorite in Cheryl's family. Of course, it works well for Thanksgiving, but we also prepare it for other special fall and winter dinners.

SERVES 6 TO 8

4½-pound to 5½-pound boneless turkey breast

¼ cup turkey or chicken stock

2 tablespoons frozen orange juice concentrate, thawed

3 tablespoons vegetable oil

WILD PASTE

3 garlic cloves, minced

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted, softened

1 tablespoon frozen orange juice concentrate, thawed

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

STUFFING

⅓ cup dried cranberries

3 tablespoons frozen orange juice concentrate, thawed

¼ cup butter, preferably unsalted

½ cup chopped red onion

2 garlic cloves, minced

2 cups cooked wild rice or half wild rice and half brown rice

⅓ cup chopped pecan pieces

3 tablespoons minced fresh thyme or parsley

3 tablespoons turkey or chicken stock

Coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1. The night before you plan to barbecue the turkey, pound the meat if it's uneven in thickness. Mix the stock, orange juice concentrate, and oil in a small bowl. With a kitchen syringe, inject the mixture deep into the turkey breast in a half-dozen places, moving the needle around in each spot to shoot the liquid in several different directions.

2. Combine the paste ingredients in a small bowl. Using your fingers, spread the paste over the turkey breast. Place in a plastic bag and refrigerate overnight.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the turkey breast from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

5. Make the stuffing for the turkey while it sits. Combine the cranberries with the orange juice concentrate in a small bowl. Melt the butter in a small skillet over medium heat. Add the onion and sauté it briefly until soft. Scrape the mixture into a bowl and add the remaining ingredients, including the cranberry-orange juice mix-

ture. Spoon the stuffing compactly over the turkey and roll it up from one of the longer sides. Secure the roll with kitchen twine. Tie it snug but leave room for the filling to expand a bit while cooking.

6. Cut a 3-foot length of cheesecloth and dampen it thoroughly with water. Wrap the breast in the cheesecloth and tie the ends.

7. Transfer the turkey to the smoker. Plan to cook it about 1¼ to 1½ hours per pound, until the internal temperature reaches 180°F. Wet the cheesecloth down with more hot water at 30-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

8. After about 3 hours, remove the cheesecloth, snipping it with scissors, and discard it. Continue smoking the turkey until done. When the turkey is cooked, remove it from the smoker and allow it to sit for 10 minutes before carving into thick slices.



BBQ TIP You will likely need to call your butcher ahead to get a full boneless breast. If the breast turns out to be smaller than our suggested size, it will work fine, but you may have more stuffing than meat. Spoon any overflow into a baking dish, cover it, and warm it in a conventional oven or on the smoker, to serve along with the turkey breast.

Two-Steppin' Turkey Legs

You'll be two-stepping yourself when you wrap your fist around one of these drumsticks and steer it into your mouth.

SERVES 6

- 6 turkey legs
- 3 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 1 tablespoon vegetable oil

TWO-STEPPIN' LEG RUB

- 2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper
- 1 tablespoon onion powder
- 1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
- ½ teaspoon cayenne

TWO-STEPPIN' LEG MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Two-Steppin' Leg Rub

- 1 cup white vinegar
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 tablespoon vegetable oil

Black Sauce (page 355) (optional)

1. At least 4 hours before you plan to barbecue, and preferably the night before,

begin preparations. Loosen the skin on the turkey legs by running your fingers under it as far as possible without tearing the skin.

2. In a small lidded jar, combine the Worcestershire sauce and oil. In a small bowl, combine the dry spices. Coat your fingers with the wet mixture and rub it well over the legs, getting as much as you can under the skin. Then sprinkle on the dry seasonings liberally, again rubbing as much under the skin as possible. Reserve any remaining dry rub. Place the legs in a plastic bag and refrigerate for at least 4 hours, or overnight.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the turkey legs from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

KEEPING IT SIMPLE

In his delightful *American Taste* (1982, Arbor House), James Villas brags about the barbecue of his native North Carolina. The former *Town and Country* editor says that at any of the great joints in the state, "the scene's always about the same: a counter with short stools, plain wooden tables and chairs, paper napkins, plastic forks and iced-tea glasses, bottles of red-pepper vinegar, maybe a little country music on the spanking-new jukebox, and an inexpensive portrait of Jesus."

5. If you plan to baste the legs (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), combine the mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

6. Transfer the turkey legs to the smoker. Cook until the legs are very tender and the juices run clear, 3½ to 4 hours. Mop the legs at 45-minute intervals in a wood-

burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Serve the legs hot, to be eaten with your fingers. Brush on Black Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Gobble the legs with down-home fare, such as Devil-May-Care Eggs (page 408), Sweet and Sour Cukes (page 398), and Buttermilk Onion Rings (page 380).*



Hot Browns

Louisville’s grand old hotel, The Brown, developed the tasty “Hot Brown” sandwich, which we embellish here by using smoked turkey, preferably our own leftovers.

SERVES 2

CHEESE SAUCE

3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1 tablespoon minced onion

1½ tablespoons all-purpose flour

1 cup whole milk

1 teaspoon Worcestershire sauce

¼ teaspoon dry mustard

¼ teaspoon paprika

½ cup shredded mild or medium-sharp Cheddar cheese (2 ounces)

Salt to taste

4 slices good white bread

½ pound sliced or shredded smoked turkey breast, warmed

4 slices bacon, fried crisp

4 thin slices red-ripe tomato

1½ tablespoons grated Parmesan cheese

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.

2. Start the cheese sauce by melting the butter over medium heat in a heavy saucepan. Add the onion and sauté briefly until it is softened. Stir in the flour, and continue stirring a minute or two. Add the milk, Worcestershire sauce, mustard, and paprika, and heat until thickened, about 3 to 5 minutes. Turn the heat down to low and sprinkle in the cheese, stirring to melt

it evenly. Taste the sauce and add salt if needed. Keep the sauce warm in the top of a double boiler until you are ready to use it.

3. Toast the bread and cut each slice on the diagonal. Arrange the slices on two plates.

Top each plate with half of the turkey and cheese sauce. Arrange the bacon slices, tomato, and sprinklings of Parmesan evenly over both. Pop the plates in the oven for 5 minutes. Serve immediately.

SECRET TO A SANE HOLIDAY

Though we love to smoke our own turkeys, we admit to taking a shortcut sometimes when it's cold outside. Greenberg's in Tyler, Texas (903-595-0725), has almost sixty years of experience in smoking turkeys and has perfected the art. You won't find a better commercial holiday bird in the country, and they'll ship them anywhere.

Quacker 'Q'

If you want to show off like a professional chef, dunk a duck in this marinade, similar to one created by James Beard, the master of American cooking. The Asian-accented marinade and plum finishing sauce will part your lips into a gorgeous smile.

SERVES 4 TO 6

4 to 6 duck breasts, about 5 ounces each

JAMES BEARD'S BASIC BARBECUE MARINADE

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup soy sauce

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup dry sherry

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup strong brewed tea

2 tablespoons honey

2 tablespoons peanut oil

1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground anise

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground cloves

1 garlic clove, minced

Plum Good Slopping Sauce (page 364)
(optional)

1. About 3 hours before you plan to barbecue, place the duck breasts in a steamer and steam them for 25 to 30 minutes.

2. While the breasts steam, mix together the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Combine the breasts with the marinade in

a shallow, nonreactive dish or plastic bag and refrigerate for 2 hours.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the breasts from the refrigerator and drain, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”). To make the mop, bring the marinade to a boil over high heat in a heavy saucepan. Boil until reduced by about one-third.

5. Transfer the breasts to the smoker, skin sides up, and cook for 65 to 75 minutes. Mop the breasts immediately and at 30-minute intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. Let the breasts sit for 5 minutes before slicing the meat on the diagonal. Serve hot or chilled with Plum Good Slopping Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the duck with Wonderful Watermelon Pickles (page 412), Creamy Coleslaw (page 369), white or brown*

rice, and Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble (page 424).

Variation: Quacker ‘Q’ with Green Peppercorn Rub Eliminate the marinade. Chop 3 tablespoons drained green peppercorns (the kind that come in little jars with brine) together with 1 tablespoon coarse salt and 2 teaspoons ground black pepper. This may be easiest in a mini-food processor. Rub the mixture lightly over the duck breasts. No mop is necessary for keeping the breasts moist. Serve with the plum sauce.



BBQ TIP When you barbecue fatty meats, the fat tends to melt away during the cooking process. This general rule doesn’t apply to ducks, who shed their excess pounds more reluctantly than a Sumo wrestler. The time-tested method of steaming the birds first keeps you from having to tend the pit all night.

A PRINCE OF A PIT

The pit in the name of the Shady Rest Pit-Bar-B-Q in Owensboro, Kentucky, is worth a visit of its own. A splendid piece of barbecue sculpture, the huge, domed brick pit puffs away majestically all day in the take-out area, where the walls are little more than layers of smoke.

Tea-Smoked Duck

When we wrote *Smoke & Spice* originally, we considered including this triumph of Chinese cooking, but ultimately concluded that it would seem too exotic in a book that celebrated real American barbecue. So guess what dish people have asked us about more than any other in the ensuing years? Traditionally smoked in a large sealed wok, here is a version designed for an American smoker.

SERVES 4 TO 6

DUCK PASTE

¼ cup cracked Szechwan brown peppercorns

¼ cup peeled and minced fresh ginger

Minced dried zest of 2 oranges or tangerines

1½ tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 tablespoon ground cinnamon

1 teaspoon Chinese five-spice powder

Two 4-pound to 4½-pound ducks

5 tablespoons black or oolong tea leaves

3 whole cinnamon sticks

Peel of 1 orange or tangerine in large sections

1 tablespoon Szechwan brown peppercorns

1 to 2 star anise (optional)

1. At least 10 hours, and up to 24 hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the paste ingredients with a food processor or mortar and pestle. Rub the ducks with the paste thoroughly inside and out, and over and under the skin, being careful to avoid tearing the skin. Reserve 1 or 2 tablespoons of the paste if you plan to mop the ducks, and refrigerate it. Wrap the ducks in plastic and refrigerate them.

2. About 2 hours before you begin to barbecue, take the ducks from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 30 minutes. Prepare the tea for steaming the ducks. Place the tea leaves in a large heatproof bowl. Bring 12 cups of water just to a boil, and pour it over the tea leaves. Let the mixture steep for 10 minutes. Pour the tea through a strainer into a large saucepan, reserving about 3 cups of the tea if you plan to mop the ducks. Place the leftover tea leaves in a disposable pie pan or other smokeproof dish and add the cinnamon, orange peel, peppercorns, and optional star anise. Reserve the tea leaf mixture.

3. Arrange a bamboo steamer over the saucepan of tea and place the ducks in the steamer. (If one steamer isn't large enough for the two ducks, make a double batch of tea and use two saucepans and steamers.) Steam the ducks over medium-high heat 1½ hours. Discard the greasy steaming liquid.

4. If you plan to baste the ducks (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), combine the remain-

ing paste and tea in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

5. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

6. Place the pan of tea leaves and spices on your smoker's lower grate or shelf. Place the ducks on the upper grate or shelf directly over the pan of spices. (If your smoker has a single grate, arrange the pan and the ducks alongside each other, with the pan closer to the heat source.) Cook 4½ to 5 hours, mopping with the tea at 1-hour intervals in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The ducks will darken to a deep mahogany and their leg joints will move easily when done.

Serving Suggestion *Many Chinese cook-books give recipes for scallion pancakes, which are delicious eaten warm with the duck. For a quick substitute, use thin flour*

tortillas or other "wrap" flatbread. Place a few slices of duck in the bread. Sprinkle with a few scallion rings, and spoon a bit of West Coast Wonder (page 355) barbecue sauce over. Roll up and savor.

Variation: Tea-Smoked Duck with Long-Life Chinese Noodles

Reserve a cup or so of the duck from the first meal for this second dish. Reheat the duck and slice it (with skin) into matchsticks. Make a sauce by sautéing 2 garlic cloves in a tablespoon of vegetable oil, then add ½ cup chicken stock, 2 tablespoons dry sherry, and 1 tablespoon each soy sauce, Chinese oyster sauce, and Asian sesame oil. Toss 12 ounces of cooked thin egg noodles with the sauce and the duck. (Leave those noodles long for a long and prosperous life!) Add a few bright bits of vegetables, such as slivers of red bell pepper, snow peas, and scallions, and serve.



Dandy Little Hens

We think Cornish game hens often look more appetizing than they taste, but in this case, the little birds burst with flavor.

SERVES 4

DANDY DUNK

1½ cups tequila

1 cup freshly squeezed lime juice

¼ cup triple sec or other orange-flavored liqueur

¼ cup minced onion

¼ cup vegetable oil

2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

Pinch of cayenne or crushed chile de árbol

4 Cornish hens, 1¼ to 1½ pounds each

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

1 lime, sliced into 4 wedges

1 small orange, sliced

DANDY MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Dandy Dunk

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1 tablespoon triple sec or other orange-flavored liqueur

Sauce Olé (page 354), South Florida Citrus Sauce (page 363), or Mango-Habanero Hellfire (page 365) (optional)

1. At least 4 hours, and up to 12 hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the game hens in a shallow, nonreactive dish or plastic bag, pour the marinade over them, and refrigerate. Turn the hens occasionally.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the hens from the refrigerator. Drain the hens, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste them. Salt and pepper the birds lightly, stuff their cavities with the fruit, and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

4. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), bring the marinade to a boil over high heat in a small saucepan and boil for several minutes. Stir in the butter and triple sec, and keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the hens to the smoker, breast side down, and cook for 2¼ to 2½ hours. Baste the birds with the mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker. Turn the hens over about halfway through the cooking time. When the birds are done, their legs will move freely and the internal temperature should be 180°F to 185°F.

6. Let the hens sit for 5 to 10 minutes. Remove the skin and slice to serve. Pass a bowl of Sauce Olé, South Florida Citrus Sauce, or Mango-Habanero Hellfire, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion Start a summer meal by nibbling on *Chicken's Little Livers* (page 335) or guacamole and chips while sipping *Firewater* (page 454). Accompany the hens

with *Killed Salad* (page 394) and *Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas Salad* (page 396). A finale of *Texas Peach Cobbler* (page 431) should leave your guests smiling.

I'LL TAKE A MUSTANG AND A BAG OF CHARCOAL

Henry Ford, who revolutionized the American automobile industry, also invented charcoal briquettes. He originally made his cars with lots of wood parts and ended up with a plant full of scraps. Ever the entrepreneur, Ford came up with the idea of charring the discards and compressing them into briquettes, a job he turned over to his brother-in-law, E. G. Kingsford. The new company sold the briquettes only at Ford dealers until the 1950s, when a surge of interest in outdoor cooking prompted grocery stores to start carrying them.

Mushroom-Stuffed Quail

Another miniature fowl, quail has more inherent flavor than Cornish game hens, so it doesn't require as heavy a hand with the seasoning.

SERVES 2 TO 4

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup dried mushrooms, such as morels or cèpes
4 quail
1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil
Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste
4 garlic cloves, slivered
2 bay leaves, halved

MUSHROOM MOP (OPTIONAL)

Mushroom soaking liquid
 $\frac{1}{2}$ cup chicken stock
1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil

2 garlic cloves, minced

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Combine the mushrooms and 1 cup warm water in a small bowl and soak for 30 minutes.
3. Prepare the quail, cutting off their necks if necessary. Rub the quail with the oil inside and out, and then salt and pepper them liberally. Drain the mushrooms,

reserving their liquid if you plan to baste the quail. Stuff each quail with the mushrooms, garlic, and bay leaves. Truss their tiny legs.

4. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), pour the mushroom soaking liquid through a fine strainer into a small saucepan. Add the stock, oil, and garlic, and warm the mop over low heat.

5. Transfer the quail to the smoker, breast side down, and mop them every 20 to 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The quail are ready when they are well-browned and their legs move easily at the joints, about 1½ to 2 hours. Serve the quail immediately, 1 or 2 to a portion.

A SHARED PASSION

Barbecue] is America's very own slow food, hand-made and idiosyncratic. Like stock-car racing, oversweet iced tea, and the Baptist church, barbecue is an authentic emblem of the American South, especially the rural, working-class south. . . . Barbecue, like jazz, was one of the very few passions that southern blacks and whites shared during segregation. Today barbecue is one of the few passions shared by foodies and good ol' boys." R.W. Apple, Jr. in *Williams-Sonoma Taste*, Summer 2002

Fruited Pheasant

Farm-raised pheasants taste a lot like free-range chickens. This recipe makes the most of that flavor.

SERVES 5 TO 6

PHEASANT MARINADE

4 cups cranberry-apple juice
½ cup balsamic vinegar
½ cup vegetable oil
6 garlic cloves, minced

1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
2 pheasants, 2½ to 3 pounds each
2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

PHEASANT MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Pheasant Marinade

1/2 cup chicken stock

DRESSING

1/2 cup dried currants

1/2 cup cranberry-apple juice

3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1 medium onion, chopped

4 ounces mushrooms, sliced (wild varieties are especially nice)

1/2 cup chopped celery

1/2 cup pecan pieces

1/4 cup chopped fresh parsley

1/2 teaspoon dried marjoram

1/2 teaspoon dried thyme

1/2 cup raw wild rice cooked in chicken stock according to package directions

1/2 cup raw brown rice cooked in chicken stock according to package directions

1/2 cup chicken stock

Salt to taste

Apple City Apple Sauce (page 361) (optional)

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Using your fingers, loosen the birds' skins, trying to avoid tearing them. Place the pheasants in a plastic bag and pour the marinade ingredients over the birds. Refrigerate them overnight, turning at least once, if needed, to soak the birds evenly.

2. Before you begin to barbecue, remove the pheasants from the refrigerator and drain them, reserving the marinade if you

plan to baste the birds. Salt and pepper the pheasants inside and out, being sure to rub some under the skin. Let them sit at room temperature for 30 to 45 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 220°F to 220°F.

4. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), bring the marinade and stock to a boil in a large saucepan, and boil for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the pheasants to the smoker, breast side down. Cook for about 3 hours, mopping the birds every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate in your style of smoker.

6. While the pheasants cook, make the dressing. In a small bowl, combine the currants with the cranberry-apple juice and let them steep for about 15 minutes.


7. Warm the butter in a smokeproof skillet. Add the onion, mushrooms, celery, and pecans. Sauté until the vegetables soften. Mix in the herbs, rices, currants (with any remaining liquid), and chicken stock. Add salt, if needed. Cover the dressing with foil and refrigerate.

8. After the pheasants have smoked for about 2 hours, transfer the dressing skillet to the smoker. Continue smoking until the pheasants' internal temperatures measure 160°F. The juices will run pink if pierced. The dressing will be ready at the same time as the pheasant. If you want to add a

smokier flavor to the dressing, uncover it during the last 15 minutes, adding a little water if the mixture appears dry.

9. Remove the pheasants from the smoker, tent them with foil, and let them sit for 10 minutes before carving. Accompany the sliced pheasants with the hot dressing and, if you wish, Apple City Apple Sauce.

Serving Suggestion *Munch on Curry Pecans (page 318) while waiting for the pheasant. Add a Southern Caesar Salad (page 393) and Cranberry-Ginger Crumble (page 433) topped with cranberry sorbet to round out the meal.*



BBQ TIP If you're cooking food in a smoker in a pan or skillet, try to find a container that won't discolor easily from the smoke, such as a cast-iron pot, or something that can be cleaned with relative ease, such as a Pyrex dish. Disposable foil pans are a good option, too. Other utensils may require a lot of scrubbing to remove the dark smoke color, particularly if you're barbecuing in a wood-burning pit.

GIVE IT A SHOT

The next time you're in Luling, Texas, for the annual summer Watermelon Thump, have lunch downtown at the old City Market. The pitmasters fix such juicy brisket and links that you might find yourself wanting to enter the watermelon seed-spitting contest. If you can reach somewhere near 70 feet in the sport, you may take the blue ribbon but won't break the world record, usually held by a Luling pro.

Rosy Rosemary Quail

A bath in red wine turns these bantam birds a pleasant pink before they brown.

SERVES 4 TO 8

ROSEMARY MARINADE AND OPTIONAL MOP

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup dry red wine

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup red wine vinegar

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup olive oil

12 garlic cloves, minced

1½ teaspoons crushed rosemary

8 quail, butterflied

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

1. About 3 to 4 hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Arrange the quail in a shallow, nonreactive dish or plastic bag, pour the marinade over them, and refrigerate.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
3. Drain the quail, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste the birds. Salt and pepper the quail lightly and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.
4. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), bring the marinade to a boil and boil it for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.
5. Transfer the quail to the smoker, skin side up, and cook until well-browned and

a little crispy, 1½ to 2 hours. Mop every 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Serve the quail immediately.

Serving Suggestion *We usually offer Unholy Swiss Cheese (page 316) and more red wine for openers. With the quail, serve mixed greens dressed with vinaigrette and potato slices sautéed with garlic and thyme. Try a fruity dessert, such as Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble (page 424).*



BBQ TIP If your quail don't come butterflied, the little birds are easy to prepare yourself. Cut through the fragile breast bone, chop off the neck, and flatten as needed.

WE'LL VOTE FOR THE PARTY PARTY

Some things people do while barbecuing: drink beer, lie like a politician, play with children, pop another top, curse work, laugh loud, lose the church key, recollect younger years, dip a chip, and down more cold ones. Some things you don't do: pay bills, mow the grass, watch TV, or use a freeway to go get more ice. Vote for the party of your choice.



Fishing for Compliments



Before pork shoulder, long before brisket, fish was America's favorite barbecue fare. When Spanish and British explorers arrived in the New World centuries ago, they found Native Americans smoking their food over wood fires. From the Caribbean all the way over to the Pacific Northwest, different tribes used a similar method of cooking the catch of the day. They didn't offer the Europeans take-out from a "Sandy's Salmon Bar-B-Q" joint, but the natives did share their smoking secrets, and they even gave the newcomers the term *barbecue*.

Today, most smoked fish in markets and restaurants is smoke-cured rather than smoke-cooked in a barbecue manner, but both processes yield delicious results. As the original Americans knew long before Columbus or Sir Walter Raleigh, the fusion of flavors in fish and smoke is a natural bounty.



Kingly Salmon	211	Soused Swordfish	233
Simply Superb Salmon	212	Sherried Grouper	234
Sugar-and-Spice Brined Salmon	214	California Dreamin' Fish Tacos	235
Tom Douglas's Sake-Cured Hot-Smoked Salmon	215	Jalapeño-Lime Shrimp	237
Jamaican Jerked Salmon	217	Shrimp Rémoulade	238
Elemental Trout	218	Smoked Shrimp and Scallop Platter	239
Stuffed Mountain Trout	219	Eye-Popping Oysters	241
Mint Trout	221	Brined Bluepoints	242
Smoked Trout Hash	222	A Honey of a Lobster Tail	243
Peppered Catfish	223	Jungle Prince Scallops	245
Flounder Surprise	224	Scallop and Snapper Ceviche	246
Rockfish with Old Bay Butter	226	Cookin' Clams	247
Cuban Snapper	228	Smoked Mussels with Dill Mayonnaise	248
Smoked Snapper Tostadas with Sangrita Sauce	230	Crab in Garlic Cream	249
Kohala Tuna Steaks	231	Katzen Dawgs	250
Tuna Caper	232		



Kingly Salmon

For thousands of years before the arrival of Europeans, Native Americans in the Pacific Northwest perfected ways to cook salmon, their most abundant food. They boiled the fish in watertight baskets, steamed them in underground rock ovens, and, in one of their tastiest preparations, smoke-roasted split sides of the salmon over an alder wood fire. To preserve fish for the winter, the Indians smoked their catch until it was fully dehydrated, but during the season, they cooked it similar to this for immediate eating. A butterflied tail section from a Pacific king salmon offers royal flavor, but coho or silver salmon make regal meals, too.

SERVES 8

KINGLY RUB

- 1/4 cup dried dill
- 1/4 cup packed brown sugar
- 2 teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 2 teaspoons freshly ground black pepper
- 3-pound to 3 1/2-pound salmon tail section, boned and butterflied

KINGLY MOP (OPTIONAL)

Remaining Kingly Rub

- 1 cup cider vinegar
- 1/4 cup vegetable oil

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, combine the rub ingredients in a small

bowl. Open the salmon flat and massage it well with about two-thirds of the rub, reserving the rest of the mixture. Fold the salmon back into its original shape, place it in a plastic bag, and refrigerate it overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Remove the salmon from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. If you plan to baste the fish (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), stir the remaining rub together with the other mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm the mixture over low heat.

CAN'T COOK TONIGHT HONEY, I'VE GOT A HEADACHE

The Barbecue Industry Association says that men are more likely than women to do the outdoor cooking in the family, but the women are the ones who decide when and what to cook. Sounds to us like men are being conned into thinking that they are in charge.

5. Transfer the salmon to the smoker, skin side down, placing the fish as far from the fire as possible. Cook for 55 to 65 minutes, mopping it after 10 and 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The salmon should flake easily when done. Have a large spatula and a platter ready when taking the salmon off the smoker, because it can fall apart easily. Serve hot or chilled.

Serving Suggestions *Serve with Arty Rice Salad (page 405), Smoked Spud Skins (page*

261), and some crusty bread. Rhubarb Crunch (page 430) would be wonderful for dessert.



BBQ TIP Alder remains the best wood for smoking Pacific salmon. Alder chips are fairly common across the country, but you may have more difficulty finding the wood in chunks or logs. Fruit woods are the best substitute, particularly when mixed with smaller pieces of alder.

Simply Superb Salmon

If you have access to superb fresh salmon, such as Alaskan Copper River salmon or other wild Pacific varieties, the best preparation is the simplest. The fish cost more than their farm-raised Atlantic cousins, but the difference in flavor may be even greater than the difference in cost. This is summer eating at its best and most elemental.

SERVES 3 TO 4

1½-pound salmon fillet, preferably Copper River king or sockeye salmon

Coarse sea salt and freshly cracked black pepper

LEMON SPLASH

¾ cup chicken stock

¼ cup freshly squeezed lemon juice

2 tablespoons chopped onion

¼ cup unsalted butter

1½ teaspoons Worcestershire sauce

1½ teaspoons yellow mustard

1 teaspoon Seafaring Seafood Rub (page 28) or ½ teaspoon more sea salt

Lemon wedges

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Remove the salmon from the refrigerator, sprinkle it rather boldly with salt and pepper, and let it sit covered at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

3. Combine the Lemon Splash mop ingredients in a saucepan and warm over low heat. Drizzle the salmon once with about $\frac{1}{3}$ of the mop and transfer it to the smoker. Smoke it until just cooked through and flaky, 35 to 45 minutes for a fillet of about $\frac{1}{2}$ -inch thickness. In our experience, fillets of Copper River salmon tend to be thinner than many farm-raised. If your fish is thicker than $\frac{1}{2}$ inch, simply add a few minutes to the cooking time. Mop once again after about 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"). Have a large spatula and a platter ready for taking the salmon off the smoker, since it will be fragile when done. Drizzle a bit more mop over the fish as it comes off if you didn't during its cooking. Transfer the salmon to the serving platter. Serve warm or lightly chilled, garnished with lemon, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Stretch the salmon to serve more folks by using it as an appetizer. Flake it into small chunks, arrange atop thin slices of pumpernickel, toasted white bread, or simple crackers. Add a bit of sour cream or crème fraîche, then crown with a dill sprig, a few pearls of salmon caviar, lemon zest, or tiny dice of red or yellow tomato.*



BBQ TIP Hot-smoked salmon differs substantially from cold-smoked lox or nova in its texture. Cold-smoked salmon has a silky, slick feel to it, where hot-smoked salmon is a bit drier, flakes easily, and is generally more permeated with smoke. We like either hot- or cold-smoked on a bagel, but prefer the hot-smoked variety for hashes, pastas, and other dishes where flaky chunks provide a more satisfactory texture.



FOLLOWING IN THE FOOTSTEPS

George Bush the Elder likes the barbecue at Otto's in Houston, which honors the ex-president with a photo gallery in a back dining room. Bush can also barbecue for himself, on a Pitt's & Spitt's pit that he brought home from Camp David. His son George W. favors the 'Q' at Cooper's in the hill country town of Llano, where you order your barbecue at outside pits and bring the meat inside to pay for it, sauce it, and dress it with side dishes.

Sugar-and-Spice Brined Salmon

You can't open a food magazine these days without someone telling you to brine your pork, fish, chicken, you name it. While we think the idea—a heavily salted marinating liquid, sometimes with a sweetener added—has gotten a little over-hyped, it serves an important role in many instances. Sometimes it's used to aid with preservation, other times it firms the texture of an ingredient, or as it does in this marinade, adds flavor interest to everyone's favorite fish.

SERVES 4 OR MORE

SUGAR-AND-SPICE MARINADE

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup vodka

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup packed brown sugar

3 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2 tablespoons mixed pickling spice, bruised

2 teaspoons dill seeds, bruised

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ -pound salmon fillet

Large bunch of fresh dill (optional)

1. At least 2 hours and up to 8 hours before you plan to smoke the fish, combine the marinade ingredients in a bowl. Place the salmon in a plastic bag or shallow dish, pour the marinade over it, and refrigerate it for at least 1 hour. Leave it longer to intensify the seasoning.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Remove the salmon from the refrigerator, and drain it, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste the fish (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"). Leave any clinging spices on the surface of the salmon. Let the fish sit uncovered at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

4. If you are using the marinade as a mop, stir the brine together with 1 cup water in a small saucepan and boil vigorously for a few minutes.

5. Transfer the salmon to the smoker, skin side down. Cook for 45 to 55 minutes, mopping it after 10 and 30 minutes in a

SOUNDS A LITTLE FISHY

Near Vancouver in New Westminister, British Columbia, the Canadian International Barbecue Championship in August includes salmon among the cook-off categories, along with pork shoulder, ribs, and beef brisket. There's also a chili cook-off at the same time, and plenty of opportunity for the public to sample all the food, both unusual in the U.S.

wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Have a large spatula and a platter ready for taking the salmon off the smoker, since it will be fragile when done. We prefer to serve the salmon with some of the whole spices clinging to it. The fish can be eaten immediately or refrigerated and later served chilled. If you are using the fresh dill, arrange it on a serving platter. Top the dill with the salmon, and serve.



BBQ TIP Bruising the spices means to almost—but not quite—crush the whole spice seeds or pods. By pressing on the spices with a pestle or the side of a knife, you release the natural oils, making the seasonings more flavorful.



Tom Douglas's Sake-Cured Hot-Smoked Salmon

Our friend Tom helped define Pacific Northwest cuisine, which draws heartily on influences from around the Pacific Rim. He does amazing things with meat and local fish at his popular Seattle restaurants, Dahlia Lounge, Etta's Seafood, and Palace Kitchen. In this dish, smoking yields very rich Asian-accented little tidbits for a small lucky group. The recipe first appeared in *Tom Douglas' Seattle Kitchen* (William Morrow, 2001).

SERVES 8

SAKE MARINADE

1 cup soy sauce

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup sake

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup packed brown sugar

8 slices peeled fresh ginger "coins," $\frac{1}{8}$ inch thick (see BBQ Tip)

1 tablespoon chopped garlic

2 teaspoons kosher salt

1-pound salmon fillet, cut into 2-ounce pieces and skin removed

8 fresh sage leaves

1. The day before you plan to barbecue, prepare the salmon. Whisk together the marinade ingredients with $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water, mixing until the sugar dissolves. Place the

salmon in a nonreactive container and pour the marinade over it. Cover and refrigerate at least 12 hours, turning occasionally if needed to totally submerge the fish.

2. Remove the salmon pieces from the marinade (reserving about $\frac{1}{4}$ cup of it) and place the fish on a rack sprayed with oil set over a baking sheet. Refrigerate, uncovered, for the glaze to set, about 2 hours. Refrigerate the reserved marinade also.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

4. Remove the salmon from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for about 15 minutes. Arrange a sage leaf on top of each piece of salmon and brush with the reserved marinade.

5. Transfer the salmon to the smoker, and smoke until just cooked through and flaky, about 20 to 25 minutes. Serve the salmon pieces hot or chilled, one per guest.

Serving Suggestion *We like the salmon with something light, such as a salad of frisée (curly endive) or other greens, with sesame seeds or radish shreds for crunch, and a vinaigrette of sesame oil and rice vinegar.*



BBQ TIP The sake marinade, or cure, is a brine mixture too, with most of the hallmark salt coming from soy sauce. The sake, a rice wine; garlic; and ginger “coins” all add a subtle flavor to the dish. To prepare the ginger “coins,” Tom Douglas peels the fresh root, and then slices it across into thin rounds, or coins. In marinades, don’t worry about getting off every bit of peel from the ginger since it will be discarded eventually.



THE BARBECUE DIET

The “BBQ Smythe” (www21.brinkster.com) promotes a diet that we could learn to like—a barbecue version of a low-carbohydrate regimen. He gives a sample day that starts with three eggs and bacon for breakfast, a handful of smoked almonds for a mid-morning snack, a beef brisket salad with a crumbled blue cheese dressing at lunch, smoked link sausage as an afternoon snack, and a smoked salmon fillet for dinner. He’s losing lots of pounds, he says, probably from laughing all day at Weight Watchers Anonymous.

Jamaican Jerked Salmon

Jamaicans barbecue with “jerk” seasonings—assertive combinations of all-spice, chiles, and other ingredients. Originally, “jerking” preserved meats like pork and chicken, but its popularity today stems from the spicy taste. The rub in this dish will dance on your tongue but won’t scorch it, allowing the rich but subtle salmon flavor to shine through.

SERVES 4

JERK RUB

- 1 tablespoon onion powder
- 1 tablespoon dried onion flakes
- 1 teaspoon ground allspice
- 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1 teaspoon cayenne
- 1 teaspoon sugar
- $\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon dried thyme
- $\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon ground cinnamon
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon ground nutmeg
- Pinch of ground habanero chile (optional)

1½-pound salmon fillet

JAMAICAN BARBECUE SAUCE

- 1 cup seafood stock
- 2 heaping tablespoons honey
- 1 tablespoon tamarind concentrate
- 1 tablespoon peeled and minced fresh ginger
- 1 tablespoon Jerk Rub

1. About 1½ hours before you plan to barbecue, combine the jerk seasoning ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the salmon thoroughly with a generous portion of the seasoning, reserving at least 1 tablespoon. Wrap the salmon in plastic and refrigerate it.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
3. Remove the salmon from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.
4. Transfer the salmon to the smoker and smoke it until just cooked through and flaky, 45 to 55 minutes. Have a large spatula and a platter ready for taking the salmon off the smoker, since it will be fragile when done.
5. While the salmon cooks, make the sauce. Combine all the ingredients and

SPANISH 101

The word *barbecue* comes from the Spanish *barbacoa*, the term early explorers in the New World applied to the wood frame Caribbean natives used in their smoke cooking. The Spanish word is probably an adaptation of an Indian word.

bring to a boil over high heat. Reduce the heat and simmer until reduced by one-third; this will take 5 to 10 minutes. Keep warm. In a wood-burning pit, brush the salmon with sauce after it has cooked for about 30 minutes. In other smokers, brush the salmon with the sauce as soon as it comes from the smoker. Serve the salmon with the remaining sauce served separately to spoon over individual portions of salmon.

Serving Suggestion *Accompany the elegant salmon with Scalloped Green Chile Potatoes (page 260) and Mango and Avocado Salad (page 406). Conclude with South Georgia Pound Cake (page 435), gilded if you like with lemon pudding or curd.*

Variation: Jamaican Jerked Snapper Meaty snapper can also hold up well to jerk seasonings. Use a whole gutted red snapper, weighing in at about 2½ to 3 pounds. Cut three slashes down to the bone on each side of the fish and then rub

inside and out with the jerk paste. Smoke for about 15 minutes per pound.



BBQ TIP The preferable temperature range for smoking fish is slightly lower than for meat. Generally, our recipes call for cooking fish and other seafood at a temperature of 180°F to 200°F. If your smoker is difficult to maintain in that range, it's no problem. Just subtract a few minutes of cooking time, generally up to a quarter-hour for fish steaks, fillets, or even whole fish. Some experienced people like to hot-smoke fish at a temperature as low as 165°F. Be vigilant if you choose to go that low, and maintain the temperature consistently. If the mercury drops much lower, you can get into the temperature range where bacteria grow. The general idea behind the lower temperature is to get the seafood to absorb the maximum amount of smoke before it is cooked through.

Elemental Trout

The premier freshwater fish for barbecuing, trout relish a swim in the smoke. A couple of good recipes follow, which add layers of flavor. We start here with a basic, quick, and eminently flexible preparation. If you have access to wild-caught trout, it's much more tasty than the farm-raised variety, the kind most of us have to accept routinely.

SERVES 4

Four 8-ounce to 10-ounce trout, gutted and butterflied, or skin-on trout fillets

Olive or vegetable oil

Juice of 1 large lemon

Coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt, and freshly ground black pepper

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Remove the trout from the refrigerator and spray or rub with a thin coat of oil.

Drizzle with lemon juice and sprinkle with salt and pepper. Let the trout sit at room temperature for approximately 15 minutes.

3. Transfer the trout to a small grill rack. If working with whole trout, lay them open, like a book you are reading. Place the rack with the fish in the smoker. Cook the trout until opaque and easily flaked, 30 to 45 minutes depending on size. Serve immediately, or chill for later use.



Stuffed Mountain Trout

In this preparation, the bacon does the work of a mop.

SERVES 4

TROUT PASTE

4 garlic cloves

Juice of ½ lemon

1 teaspoon Worcestershire sauce

1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

½ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

4 boned trout, about 8 ounces each

8 slices bacon

5 tablespoons chopped onion

6 tablespoons chopped green bell pepper

6 tablespoons chopped celery

16 saltine crackers, crushed

6 tablespoons chopped pecans

1. About 1½ hours before you plan to barbecue, prepare the paste by mashing or chopping the garlic in a mortar and pestle or mini food processor. Mix in the lemon juice, Worcestershire sauce, pepper, and salt. Then blend in the oil to make a paste. Rub the trout inside and out with the paste. Wrap the trout in plastic and refrigerate for about 1 hour.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Remove the trout from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

4. In a heavy skillet, fry the bacon over medium heat, removing it from the skillet while still limp. Set the bacon aside. Add the onion, bell pepper, and celery to the bacon drippings and sauté briefly until softened. Remove the mixture from the heat and stir in the cracker crumbs and pecans. Stuff each trout with a portion of this filling. Wrap two slices of bacon

around each fish, securing with toothpicks as needed.

5. Transfer the trout to the smoker. Cook until the bacon is brown and crisp, and the fish opaque and easily flaked, 40 to 50 minutes. Serve immediately.



BBQ TIP Trout and catfish can take a heavier level of smoke flavor than most fish, making them particularly suitable for log-burning pits.

DON'T EAT THE SHELL

New Yorkers used to barbecue turtles in the eighteenth century, according to food historians Waverley Root and Richard de Rochemont. No wonder they gave up on the 'Q,' at least until the recent emergence of several good barbecue restaurants in the city that serve traditional pork and beef dishes.



Mint Trout

Mint is mighty good with trout. Unlike most mops, the one in this recipe can be used in all kinds of smokers because it isn't applied during the cooking process.

SERVES 4

MINT PASTE

- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup fresh mint leaves
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup sugar
- 2 tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper
- 2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice
- 1 tablespoon vegetable oil

1½ pounds trout fillets

MINT MOP

- 1 cup brewed mint tea made from 2 mint tea bags

Mint sprigs, for garnish

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, prepare the paste by combining the ingredients in a food processor and processing until puréed. Rub the trout fillets with a thick coating of the paste. Wrap the fillets in plastic and refrigerate them.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
3. Remove the trout from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for approximately 15 minutes.
4. Transfer the trout, covered with the paste that clings to each fillet, to a small

grill rack. Drizzle each fillet with enough mint tea to moisten the coating well and place the fish in the smoker. Cook the trout until opaque and easily flaked, 30 to 45 minutes depending on the size of the fillets. Drizzle with additional mint tea and serve immediately.

Serving Suggestion Start with *South-of-the-Border Garlic Soup* (page 263). Pair the fish with *Warm Mushroom Salad* (page 282) and steamed asparagus served hot or cold. Finish off with sliced mangoes or papayas sprinkled with rum and lime juice. It's a great combo when you need to impress your boss or main squeeze.



BBQ TIP Several recipes in this chapter suggest using a small grill rack to hold pieces of fish and seafood in a smoker. The mesh on the grate permits smoke to pass but prevents food from falling through. You'll find them in barbecue stores, discount stores, and cookware stores, especially in the summer months.

Smoked Trout Hash

Sometimes we think “heavenly hash” must have been coined specifically to describe hashes concocted with smoky trout or salmon. If you’ve only had the corned beef variety, you owe it to yourself to try this immediately. Poached eggs make a superlative topping, if you wish, at dinner as well as breakfast.

SERVES 4

1½ tablespoons vegetable oil

1½ tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1 pound Yukon Gold or red waxy potatoes, peeled if you wish, and diced in ½-inch cubes

½ medium red onion, chopped

3 tablespoons half-and-half

2 teaspoons Dijon mustard

Salt and freshly ground black pepper

Elemental Trout (page 218), flaked

¼ cup minced fresh dill

2 tablespoons minced fresh chives

Sour cream and capers, for garnish (optional)

1. Warm the oil and butter in a large, heavy skillet over medium-low heat. Stir in the potatoes. Cover and cook for 10 minutes, during which time you should hear only a faint cooking noise.

2. Uncover and turn the potatoes. Raise the heat to medium and cook for about 5 minutes longer, until uniformly soft with some

crisp brown spots. Add the onion, and pat the mixture back down. Cook until the onion is very soft, and the mixture begins to stick in a few spots and brown on the bottom, about 5 minutes longer. Scrape up from the bottom, then add the half-and-half, mustard, salt, and a generous bit of pepper. Raise the heat to medium-high. Continue cooking until the liquid evaporates and the mixture begins to crisp and brown again, 5 to 8 minutes longer. Scrape up from the bottom and pat back down another time or two. Add the trout and the herbs and cook for a couple minutes longer, until heated through. Serve hot, topped if you wish with a dollop of sour cream and a sprinkling of capers.

Variation: Smoked Salmon Hash Replace the trout with about 1 pound of hot-smoked salmon fillet or steaks, flaked. Reverse the proportions of dill and chives.

WELL, IT IS A VOLUNTARY THING

They take pig rustling seriously in Tennessee, according to John Egerton in *Southern Food* (1987, Knopf). Since the early years of statehood, stealing a porker could land you in jail for up to fifteen years, three times longer than the maximum sentence for involuntary manslaughter.

Peppered Catfish

Most Americans fry their catfish. This will quickly disabuse you of that approach. Plan to make enough to save some for Katzen Dawgs or Creamy Catfish Spread.

SERVES 6

THREE-PEPPER CATFISH RUB

3 tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper

2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1½ tablespoons coarsely ground white pepper

1 teaspoon onion powder

½ teaspoon cayenne

Six 8-ounce catfish fillets

CATFISH MOP (OPTIONAL)

2 cups seafood or chicken stock

½ cup vegetable oil

Juice of 3 limes

1 to 2 tablespoons remaining Three-Pepper Catfish Rub

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) (optional)

1. At least 2½ hours before you plan to barbecue, or preferably the night before, mix the rub ingredients together in a small bowl. Cover the catfish lightly and evenly with the rub, reserving at least 1 to 2 tablespoons of the mixture if you plan to

baste the fish. Place the fillets in a plastic bag and refrigerate them for 2 hours or overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Remove the fillets from the refrigerator and let them sit at room temperature for 20 minutes.

4. If you are going to use the mop (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix the ingredients together in a small saucepan and warm over low heat.

5. Place the catfish in the smoker on a small grill rack as far from the fire as possible. Cook the fish for approximately 1½ hours, dabbing the catfish with the mop every 20 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. When cooked, the catfish will be opaque and firm, yet flaky. Serve warm. If desired, accompany the catfish with Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce.



CATFISH TO GO

When you're yearning for smoked catfish and don't want to fix it yourself, contact Betty and Quentin Knussmann at the Pickwick Catfish Farm (731-689-3805 or www.pickwickcatfishfarm.com) in Counce, Tennessee. They raise the fish and smoke them over hickory. You won't find a better mail-order version. If you're in the vicinity, 2 hours east of Memphis, stop by the farm's restaurant for the catfish, some of Betty's hushpuppies, and barbecued ribs.



Flounder Surprise

This is a fancy “sandwich” of double-smoked salmon stuffed between two barbecued flounder fillets. Use leftovers from Kingly Salmon or another home-smoked salmon, or substitute a store-bought Pacific Northwest-style smoked salmon.

SERVES 4

1½ to 1¾ pounds flounder or sole fillets

WILD WILLY'S NUMBER ONE-DERFUL RUB

3 tablespoons paprika

1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 tablespoon sugar

1½ teaspoons chili powder

1½ teaspoons garlic powder

1½ teaspoons onion powder

½ teaspoon cayenne

STUFFING

6 to 8 ounces smoked salmon, such as Kingly Salmon (page 211)

½ cup dry bread crumbs

¼ cup chopped celery

¼ cup chopped onion

1 egg white, lightly beaten

¼ teaspoon paprika

1 to 2 tablespoons milk

SURPRISE MOP (OPTIONAL)

1 cup seafood or chicken stock

3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

Juice of 1 lemon

Lemon wedges, for garnish (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. Cut the flounder into 8 equal portions, about 3 to 4 ounces each. Mix the rub ingredients together in a small bowl and rub the fillets lightly but evenly with the mixture. Let the fillets sit at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

3. Place the smoked salmon in a food processor. Add the rest of the stuffing ingredients, except the milk, and process together briefly. The stuffing should be thoroughly blended but not puréed to oblivion. Add as much of the milk as is needed to moisten the mixture without making it soupy. Spoon equal portions of

the stuffing onto half of the fillets. Top each “stuffed” fillet with one of the remaining fillets.

4. If you plan to baste the fish (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), combine the mop ingredients in a small saucepan and warm over low heat until the butter melts. Keep the mop warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the fillets to a small grill rack and place them in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook until the flounder is opaque and flaky and the salmon heated through, 35 to 40 minutes. Mop twice during the cooking process in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Serve the fish with the lemon wedges, if you wish.



BBQ TIP To tell how much smoke flavor you’re putting into food, simply check the amount of smoke being vented out of your barbecue equipment. If nothing is coming out, it’s time to add more wood.

DON'T MISS THE BOAT

When Memphis in May competition teams sold barbecue to the public for the first time in 1993, the Paddlewheel Porkers took the “People’s Choice” award for the best ‘Q.’ You can’t miss the group at a cook-off. They’re the ones who are barbecuing and partying on the huge two-story replica of a Mississippi River paddle boat.

Rockfish with Old Bay Butter

The rockfish or striped bass is one of the mid- and upper-Atlantic coast conservation successes. After years of overfishing, an enforced moratorium and more intelligent management policies have put it back on the table again. Here we smoke whole fish, and then serve them with an Old Bay Seasoning-flavored butter.

SERVES 6

3 small whole rockfish (striped bass), hybrid striped bass, other small bass, snapper, or other mild-flavored fish, about 2 pounds each, gutted and cleaned

Olive oil

Juice of 2 lemons (remove the zest before slicing for the butter below)

2 tablespoons Old Bay Seasoning

OLD BAY MOP (OPTIONAL)

Juice of 2 lemons

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup white vinegar

2 tablespoons olive oil

2 teaspoons Old Bay Seasoning

OLD BAY BUTTER

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup unsalted butter or Smoked Butter (page 352)

2 teaspoons Old Bay Seasoning, or more to taste

Zest of 1 to 2 fresh lemons, minced

Lemon wedges and parsley sprigs, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Cut three deep diagonal slashes into both sides of the fish to promote even

cooking and flavor absorption. Rub the fish inside and out with the oil and half the lemon juice. Sprinkle sparingly with Old Bay Seasoning. Allow the fish to sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

3. If you plan to baste the fish (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), mix the mop ingredients together with $\frac{1}{4}$ cup water in a small saucepan. Warm the mop over low heat.

4. Transfer the fish to the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook until flaky and opaque, about 20 minutes per pound. Mop the fish early and once or twice more in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

5. While the fish cooks, make the butter sauce. Melt the butter in a small skillet with the Old Bay seasoning and lemon zest. Keep warm.

6. Remove the fish from the smoker with a large spatula and transfer it to a decorative platter. Garnish the fish with lemons and parsley. To serve, remove the skin, and cut

through the fish, watching for its bones. Pass the sauce separately. Alternatively, skin the top side of the fish, spread a thick layer of the sauce over it, and serve.



BBQ TIP Old Bay Seasoning is one of the best-selling commercial spice blends on

the market. The distinctive mixture was created as a flavoring for Chesapeake Bay blue crabs, but is now a staple for flavoring all kinds of seafood. Most supermarkets coast to coast carry it. If you substitute another seasoning, taste as you go, because many other similar blends are saltier than Old Bay.

DON'T TRY IT ON THE MATTRESS

Chief cook Jim Ward designed and built the smoker for the Porky Pilots, a barbecue contest team composed entirely of Federal Express pilots. The basic concept for the pit, Jim told us, came from the old Southern practice of barbecuing over a slow fire on discarded bedsprings, using a junked car hood for a cover. Back then, he says, when pitmasters didn't have thermometers, they could tell they were cooking at the right temperature if the flies stayed away from the meat.



Cuban Snapper

This is a new spin on a dish that's now common in south Florida, where red snapper is often poached or cooked in clay.

SERVES 4 TO 6

3-pound to 3½-pound gutted whole red snapper, sea bass, or other mild-flavored white fish

1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil

Juice of 2 lemons

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

STUFFING

½ cup dry bread crumbs

½ medium onion, chopped

3 tablespoons minced fresh parsley, preferably Italian flat-leaf

¼ teaspoon dried thyme

¼ teaspoon dried oregano

¼ teaspoon ground nutmeg

¼ teaspoon crushed hot red chile, such as cayenne or chile de árbol

Juice of 1 lemon

CUBAN MOP (OPTIONAL)

1 cup fish or seafood stock

2 tablespoons olive oil

Juice of 1 lemon

AVOCADO SAUCE

2 ripe Haas avocados

Juice of 2 limes

2 tablespoons chopped onion

1 teaspoon salt

Freshly ground black pepper to taste

3 to 4 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

Lemon and lime wedges and parsley sprigs, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. Cut three deep diagonal slashes into both sides of the snapper to promote even cooking and flavor absorption. Rub the fish inside and out with the oil and half the lemon juice. Sprinkle sparingly with salt and liberally with pepper. Allow the fish to sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

3. In a bowl, mix together the bread crumbs, onion, parsley, thyme, oregano, nutmeg, chile, and lemon juice. Stuff the fish loosely. Place the fish on a greased grill rack or baking sheet.

4. If you plan to baste the fish (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), mix the mop ingredients together with ¼ cup water in a small saucepan. Warm the mop over low heat.

5. Transfer the snapper to the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook until flaky and opaque, about 20 minutes per

pound. Mop the fish early and once or twice more in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

6. While the fish cooks, prepare the sauce. Peel, pit, and chop the avocados. Combine them in a food processor with the lime juice, onion, salt, and pepper. With the processor running, add the oil in a steady stream, until the sauce has the consistency of thin mayonnaise. Spoon the sauce into a small bowl.

7. Remove the snapper from the smoker with a large spatula and transfer it to a decorative platter. Garnish the snapper

with lemons, limes, and parsley. To serve, remove the skin, and cut through the fish, watching for its bones. Serve each portion with some of the stuffing. Pass the sauce separately. Alternatively, skin the top side of the fish, spread a thick layer of the sauce over it, and serve.

Serving Suggestion *Snack first on Fiesta Salsa (page 324) and tortilla chips. Accompany the snapper with a mixed green salad and tangy citrus vinaigrette, and top it off with 'Nana Pudding (page 441), dulce de leche ice cream, or fresh tropical fruit.*

DIVINE BARBECUE

The Owensboro, Kentucky, International Bar-B-Q Festival dates its origin back to the church barbecue picnics that have been a local tradition since 1834. A team from St. Mary Magdalene Catholic Church won the first festival cook-off in 1978 and then claimed a record fifth championship in 1992 in a tight decision over a team from Our Lady of the Lourdes.



Smoked Snapper Tostadas with Sangrita Sauce

Smoking snapper fillets is a snap, hardly allowing you enough time for a leisurely beer by the pit. This sauce is based on the Mexican drink sangrita—not sangria—a tangy tomato-citrus chaser for tequila.

SERVES 4

Four 8-ounce fillets red snapper, sea bass, or other mild-flavored white fish fillets (or other more-or-less equal-size fillets that add up to two pounds)

1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil

Mexican hot sauce such as Cholula, or several teaspoons Southwest Heat (page 32) or South-of-the-Border Smoky Heat (page 32)

SANGRITA SAUCE

6 tablespoons tomato juice

2 tablespoons freshly squeezed orange juice

2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice

½ teaspoon grenadine syrup

Several dashes Mexican hot sauce, such as Cholula, or ¼ teaspoon Southwest Heat or South-of-the-Border Smoky Heat (both on page 32) or ground ancho chile

Salt

Juice of 1 lime

1 serrano or jalapeño chile, minced

2 scallions, with their green tops, minced

2 to 3 tablespoons minced cilantro

8 crisp corn tostada shells (like flat taco shells)

1 to 2 medium ripe avocados, peeled, pitted, and sliced thin, and 1 medium to large red-ripe tomato, chopped

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. Rub the snapper with the oil. Sprinkle with hot sauce or dry rub. Allow the fish to sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

3. Prepare the sauce, simply mixing the ingredients together in a small bowl. If you plan to baste the fish (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), set aside a few tablespoons of the sauce to use as the mop.

4. Transfer the snapper to the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook for about 25 to 30 minutes, until the fillets are flaky and opaque. Adjust the time a bit if your fillets are larger or smaller. Drizzle the mop lightly over the fillets after about 15 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker.

5. Remove the snapper from the smoker. When cool enough to handle, flake the fish into a medium bowl, discarding skin and bones. Toss the fish with the lime juice, chile, scallions, and cilantro to taste. Spoon the snapper mixture evenly onto the tostada shells. Top with avocado and tomato. Serve with the sauce, passed separately, and drizzled over the tostadas.

Kohala Tuna Steaks

In recent decades, Hawaiian chefs have created a sumptuous new regional cuisine, often featuring the local tuna. Here's a smoked version of a Big Island favorite.

SERVES 4

KOHALA MARINADE

6 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted, melted

6 tablespoons Asian-style sesame oil

6 tablespoons rice vinegar

Juice of $\frac{1}{2}$ lemon

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons peeled and minced fresh ginger

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried thyme

1 garlic clove, minced

1 crushed Thai, Hunan, or other tiny hot red chile

4 tuna steaks, each about 1 inch thick

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Soy sauce

West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce (page 355) (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. In a lidded jar, mix together the marinade ingredients. Place the tuna steaks in a shallow, nonreactive dish and pour the marinade over the tuna. Allow the steaks to sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

3. Heat a skillet over high heat and sprinkle in the salt. Drain the tuna steaks. Sear the steaks quickly on both sides.

4. Transfer the steaks to the smoker. Cook the tuna to desired doneness, 20 to 25 minutes for medium-rare. Avoid overcooking the tuna. Serve hot with soy sauce and, if you wish, a touch of West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce.

Serving Suggestion *Mix up a salad of thinly sliced snow peas, carrots, water chestnuts, and napa cabbage or bok choy tossed with a vinaigrette made with Asian-style sesame oil and rice vinegar. A creamy dessert works best, perhaps Lemon Pudding Ice Cream Pie (page 426).*



BBQ TIP Before you smoke meaty fish steaks, such as tuna and swordfish, it helps to sear them quickly over high heat to seal in their juices and add a light crust.

Tuna Caper

If you prefer Mediterranean to Pacific flavors, this tuna should tantalize.

SERVES 4

OLIVE PASTE

¼ cup chopped pitted black olives, preferably kalamata or niçoise

¼ cup extra-virgin olive oil

2 tablespoons red wine

1 tablespoon capers

1 teaspoon dried thyme

2 garlic cloves, minced

4 tuna steaks, about 1 inch thick

¼ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Lemon wedges and basil sprigs, for garnish (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. In a food processor, process the paste ingredients to a thick purée. Rub the paste over the tuna steaks. Transfer the tuna to a plate and allow the steaks to sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

3. Heat a skillet over high heat and sprinkle in the salt. Add the tuna steaks and sear them quickly on both sides.

4. Transfer the steaks to the smoker. Cook the tuna to desired doneness, 20 to 25 minutes for medium-rare. Avoid overcooking the tuna. Serve hot, garnished with lemons and basil, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Serve Unholy Swiss Cheese (page 316) to start. Accompany the tuna with steamed artichokes, a platter of red-ripe tomatoes and mozzarella dressed with olive oil, and crispy breadsticks. Offer Becky's Pineapple Cake (page 436) or a fruity sorbet for dessert. For a light meal, the tuna makes a great salad ingredient, used either hot or cold.*



LET THE SUN SHINE

Rain has always been the bane of barbecuers. In *Gone with the Wind*, Scarlett O'Hara fretted about the weather just before a big Georgia party, saying "There's nothing worse than a barbecue turned into an indoor picnic." Unless, of course, it's a mess of drowned food.

Soused Swordfish

If you have any leftovers, these swordfish will have a helluva hangover the next day.

SERVES 4

SOUSED MARINADE

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup seafood or chicken stock

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil

3 garlic cloves, minced

1 tablespoon green peppercorns, plus
1 teaspoon brine

Four 8-ounce to 10-ounce swordfish steaks

BASIC BLACK RUB

$1\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or
sea salt

1. At least 2 hours, and up to 8 hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the swordfish in a shallow, nonreactive pan or a plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the swordfish and refrigerate it for at least $1\frac{1}{2}$ hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Drain the swordfish, reserving about $\frac{3}{4}$ cup of the marinade. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl and sprinkle them lightly but evenly over both sides of the steaks. Let the swordfish sit at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

4. In a small pan, bring the reserved marinade to a vigorous boil over high heat and boil for several minutes. Keep the liquid warm over low heat.

5. Heat a heavy skillet over high heat. Place the steaks in the skillet, in batches if necessary, and sear quickly on both sides. Remove the steaks immediately, drizzle the hot marinade lightly over them, and transfer the steaks to the smoker. Cook for 40 to 50 minutes, until the fish is cooked through. Serve the swordfish hot.

Serving Suggestion When you need an uptown down-home meal, try these steaks with Barbecued Rice (page 274) and California Crunch salad (page 394). For dessert, we would opt for Long-on-Strawberries Shortcake (page 432).



BBQ TIP Bourbon is a great marinade ingredient for barbecuing because of its smoky, sweet flavor. It works particularly well with red meat but also enhances some lighter fare, such as meaty swordfish.

A BELLY FULL

If you haven't come across John T. Edge's *Southern Belly* (2000, Hill Street Press), go get a copy. The subtitle tells it straight in claiming that the book is "The Ultimate Food Lover's Companion to the South." Edge ambles with wit and passion through the real, down-to-earth culinary delights of ten states, focusing in particular on good local restaurants and barbecue joints.

Sherried Grouper

Here's a more delicately inebriated fish, and one that's quick to prepare.

SERVES 4

SHERRY MARINADE AND SAUCE

Juice of 2 oranges (about $\frac{2}{3}$ cup)

Zest of 1 orange, minced

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup sherry

6 tablespoons oil, preferably peanut

1 tablespoon Creole mustard

2 garlic cloves, minced

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

Four 6-ounce grouper fillets, mahi-mahi fillets, or other firm white fish fillets

Chopped fresh parsley, orange slices, and orange zest, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Combine all the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Lay the fillets in a single layer

in a shallow, nonreactive dish or place them in a plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the fillets and let them sit at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

3. Drain the fillets, reserving the marinade. In a small pan, bring the marinade to a vigorous boil over high heat. Reduce the heat to simmer and cook for several minutes, until the marinade forms a thin sauce. Taste and adjust the seasoning, if needed. Keep the sauce warm over low heat.

4. Transfer the fillets to the smoker. Cook for 25 to 30 minutes, until the fish is opaque and flaky. Spoon the sauce on a serving platter and top it with the fillets. Garnish the fish with a sprinkling of parsley and a scattering of orange slices and zest. Serve immediately.



California Dreamin' Fish Tacos

Some people dream of sunshine in southern California. We dream of soft tacos overflowing with fish and salsa. The optional vegetable relish here adds another flavorful touch.

SERVES 4 TO 6

Two 12-ounce to 14-ounce mahi-mahi fillets, snapper fillets, or other mild white fish fillets

1 cup Lawry's Mesquite with Lime Juice Marinade or other commercial mesquite marinade

Juice from 1 lime

TOMATILLO SALSA

3 teaspoons extra-virgin olive oil

1 small red or sweet onion, chopped

1 pound fresh tomatillos, husks removed and chopped, or 2 cups canned tomatillos

2 canned chipotle chiles, minced, or more to taste

1 tablespoon white vinegar

1 teaspoon dried oregano, preferably Mexican

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup chopped cilantro

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

VEGETABLE RELISH (OPTIONAL)

3 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

$\frac{1}{2}$ pound jicama, peeled and cut into matchsticks

1 small red onion or sweet onion, chopped

1 small red pepper, cut into matchsticks

1 small zucchini, cut into matchsticks

1 roasted green chile (optional), preferably New Mexican or poblano, fresh or frozen, cut into matchsticks

6 squash blossoms (optional), cut into matchsticks

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup chopped cilantro

Warm flour tortillas, preferably no larger than 6 inches in diameter

Lime wedges, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. Place the mahi-mahi fillets in a nonreactive, shallow dish. Pour the marinade over the fish, add the lime juice, and let the fish sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

3. Prepare the salsa while the fish marinates. Warm $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons of the oil in a heavy skillet over medium heat. Add the onion and sauté until softened. Spoon the onion into a bowl. Warm the remaining $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons of the oil in the same skillet over medium-high heat. Add the tomatillos and sauté until lightly browned. Place the tomatillos in the bowl with the onion. Stir in the chipotles, vinegar, and oregano, and refrigerate.

4. Remove the mahi-mahi from the marinade, draining as little of the liquid as possible. Spoon some of the remaining marinade over the fish and place the fillets in the smoker. Cook the mahi mahi until opaque and easily flaked, 45 to 55 minutes.

5. Remove the fish from the smoker. Let it cool for a couple of minutes while you finish the salsa, stirring in the cilantro and adding salt and pepper to taste. Pour the salsa into a decorative bowl. Flake the fish into bite-size chunks and mound it on one side of a large platter. Cover it with foil.

6. Prepare the vegetable relish, if you wish. In a skillet, warm the 3 tablespoons oil over medium heat. Add the jícama, red onion, red pepper, zucchini, and chile, and sauté until the vegetables are crisp-tender. Stir in the squash blossoms and remaining $\frac{1}{3}$ cup cilantro and heat through. Spoon the vegetable relish onto the other half of the platter.

7. Serve immediately with the tortillas and lime wedges. Spoon some of the fish into the tortillas, along with spoonfuls of the vegetable relish. Top with salsa and, if you wish, squeezes of lime juice. Fold the tortillas in half and devour.



BBQ TIP Our recipes rarely call for commercial marinades, but we're happy to make an exception for Lawry's Mesquite with Lime Juice Marinade in the fish tacos. The sauce works great with many smoked fish dishes. It saves time but doesn't sacrifice flavor in the process. If the salsa preparation seems lengthy to you, simply pick up your favorite at the store when you're purchasing the marinade.



THE BUZZ

When we first wrote *Smoke & Spice*, almost every reader who wasn't from California seemed to think fish tacos were on the same level of weird as barbecued boots. In just a decade, the idea has swept across the country as a hot food trend, fueled largely by quick-service, prepared-to-order eateries that specialize in fish tacos. Even our small hometown of Santa Fe has one of the restaurants, a great place called Bumble Bee's Baja Grill, run by a cowboy turned cook named Bumble Bee Bob Weil.

Jalapeño-Lime Shrimp

Dallas chef Dean Fearing, the genius in the kitchen at the Mansion on Turtle Creek, inspired this fiery Southwestern shrimp treat. It's as classic a combo as Carolina pork and vinegar.

SERVES 4

JALAPEÑO-LIME MARINADE

- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup pickled jalapeño slices
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup pickling liquid from jar or can of pickled jalapeños
- Juice of 2 limes
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup unrefined corn oil, preferably, or other vegetable oil
- 3 tablespoons minced cilantro
- 4 scallions, sliced
- 3 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 pound large shrimp (24 to 30 shrimp)

JALAPEÑO-LIME MOP

- Remaining Jalapeño-Lime Marinade
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup seafood or chicken stock
- Juice of 1 lime
- Slices of fresh red jalapeño or other red chile, for garnish (optional)

1. Purée the marinade ingredients in a food processor or blender.
2. Peel the shrimp, leaving the tails on. Clean the shrimp and, if desired, devein them. Place the shrimp in a shallow, non-reactive dish or plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the shrimp and let the shrimp marinate at room temperature for 30 to 40 minutes.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
4. Drain the shrimp from the marinade, pouring the marinade into a saucepan. Add the stock and additional lime juice to the remaining marinade for the mop. Bring the liquid to a vigorous boil over high heat and boil for several minutes. Keep the mop warm over low heat.
5. Place the shrimp on a small grill rack and baste liberally with the mop. Transfer the shrimp to the smoker and place as far from the fire as possible. The shrimp should cook in approximately 25 minutes, but watch them carefully. They are ready when opaque, slightly firm, and lightly pink on the exterior. Remove the shrimp from the smoker and mop them heavily again. Place the shrimp on a platter, scatter the red jalapeños over them, if you wish, and serve.



BBQ TIP Shrimp dishes work particularly well in stovetop smokers, making them great winter treats when it's too cold to barbecue outside.

Shrimp Rémoulade

Rémoulade sauce, a Louisiana marvel, is usually served on boiled shrimp. A touch of smoke in the shellfish enhances all the flavors.

SERVES 4 TO 6

1½ pounds medium shrimp

SHRIMP MARINADE

3 tablespoons olive oil

Juice of 1 lemon

2 teaspoons Cajun or Creole seasoning or
Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29)

RÉMOULADE SAUCE

⅓ cup extra-virgin olive oil

2 large celery ribs, chopped

4 scallions, chopped

2 tablespoons Creole mustard

2 tablespoons ketchup

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

1 tablespoon capers

1 tablespoon chopped cilantro

2 to 3 teaspoons Tabasco or other hot pepper
sauce

1 teaspoon prepared horseradish, or more to
taste

1 teaspoon paprika

½ teaspoon Cajun or Creole seasoning or
Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29)

½ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

Lettuce leaves, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. Peel the shrimp, leaving their tails on. In a bowl, toss them with the oil, lemon juice, and seasoning. Let the shrimp marinate at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

BARBECUE RULES!

The judging process in a barbecue cooking contest varies considerably depending on the organization that “sanctioned” the event. We’re partial to the rules of the International Barbecue Cookers Association (817-469-1579, www.ibcabbq.org), which emphasizes blind judging and uses a progressive elimination system rather than numerical rankings. The IBCA also insists on evaluating sauces separately from the barbecue, prohibiting any “visible alteration” of food after it is cooked. A \$30 membership entitles you to a full packet of materials on sponsoring and judging a barbecue contest.

3. While the shrimp marinate, prepare the sauce. Place all the ingredients in a blender or food processor and purée until smooth. Refrigerate until ready to use.

4. Transfer the shrimp to the smoker and smoke them until just cooked through and lightly fragrant, 15 to 20 minutes. They are ready when opaque, slightly firm, and lightly pink on the exterior. Combine the shrimp with the sauce in a serving dish and chill for 1 to 2 hours. Garnish the dish with the lettuce just before serving.

Variation: Zydeco Shrimp Rémoulade
Zipper than a zydeco tune, this version introduces even more smoke flavor to the dish by smoking tomatoes for the rémoulade sauce along with the shrimp. Put 2 large plum tomatoes beside the shrimp in the smoker, and cook them the same amount of time. Delay making the sauce until everything is done. Then substitute the tomatoes for the ketchup in the sauce, puréeing them skins and all.

Serving Suggestion *Serve as an appetizer preceding Cajun Country Ribs (page 76) or Creole Crown Roast (page 89), or as a light main dish accompanied by Peppery 'Pups (page 385).*

Smoked Shrimp and Scallop Platter

Serve this as a main-dish platter for up to four to share, or make it an appetizer for a lucky group. If you can afford more scallops, buy them. They'll all disappear.

SERVES UP TO 4

1 pound medium to large shrimp

$\frac{3}{4}$ to 1 pound sea scallops

3 tablespoons olive oil

Juice of 1 lemon

BASIC BLACK RUB

1½ tablespoons coarsely ground black pepper

1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

LEMON-SAFFRON MAYO

2 pinches of crumbled saffron threads

Zest of 1 lemon

$\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

1 cup mayonnaise (not a low-fat variety)

2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

1 to 2 garlic cloves, minced

Minced fresh parsley

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Peel the shrimp, leaving their tails on. If any of the scallops is much larger than an inch, halve it. In a bowl, toss the shrimp and scallops with the oil, lemon juice, and dry rub. Let the shellfish marinate at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.
3. Make the mayonnaise while the shellfish marinate. Combine the saffron and lemon zest and juice in the bottom of a small bowl and let sit for 5 minutes. Whisk in the mayonnaise, oil, and garlic. Refrigerate covered until ready to use.
4. Transfer the shrimp to the smoker and smoke them until just cooked through and lightly fragrant, 15 to 20 minutes. They are ready when opaque, slightly firm, and lightly pink on the exterior.
5. Arrange the shrimp and scallops on a small grill rack or baking sheet. Smoke as far from the fire as possible until just cooked through and opaque, about 30 minutes. Remove from the smoker and serve warm or chilled. Arrange the shrimp and scallops on a decorative platter with the sauce. Sprinkle parsley over and serve. If the neighbors aren't watching, eat with your fingers.

HAVING FUN IN HANOVER

The New England Barbecue Society thrives just fine way north of the barbecue belt. Every September, the group sponsors the Massachusetts State BBQ & Blues Festival in the town of Hanover. The cook-off features standard meat categories, but also gives awards for local catches of the day such as lobster. For the biggest challenge, enter the competition modeled on the Iron Chef TV show, where all competitors start with same batch of surprise ingredients to make an improvised dish.

Eye-Popping Oysters

We've seen these peppery oysters bring jubilation to the most jaded of palates. Crack the peppercorns with a mortar and pestle or use coarsely ground black pepper.

MAKES 1 DOZEN

EYE-POPPING MARINADE AND MOP

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup bottled clam juice

3 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice

3 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

1 tablespoon freshly cracked black pepper

3 to 4 garlic cloves, minced

1 dozen oysters, shucked, with bottom shells and brine reserved

About a dozen ice cubes

Lemon wedges and freshly cracked black pepper, for garnish

1. In a lidded jar, combine the clam juice, lemon juice, oil, pepper, garlic, and any oyster brine. Place the oysters in a small bowl or plastic bag. Pour the marinade over the oysters and refrigerate for about 45 minutes.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Drain the oysters, reserving the marinade for the mop. Arrange each oyster on

a half-shell. Bring the marinade to a vigorous boil and boil for several minutes. Reduce the heat and keep the mop warm.

4. Put the ice cubes in a smokeproof 8-inch-square or 9 by 12-inch baking pan, or in a deep pie pan. Place the oysters on the half-shell on a small grill rack and place the rack over the ice-filled baking pan.

5. Place the oysters over ice in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook for about 40 minutes, drizzling with the mop once or twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. The oysters are done when slightly firm but still plump and juicy. Swab them with the mop when they come off the smoker. Serve the oysters warm with lemon wedges and more pepper.

Serving Suggestion Serve as many oysters as you can afford—don't worry, you'll never have any left—with Hand Salad (page 397) and a lot of Cracklin' Cornbread (page 387).



Brined Bluepoints

In contrast to the previous recipe, these firm-textured oysters should dry out during their cooking. Atlantic bluepoints work great this way, but another cold-water oyster can be substituted. The oysters are best smoked a day ahead of serving and their preparation can be spread over two days. They take a bit of fiddling, but the result is worth the time.

MAKES 12 TO 18 OYSTERS

BROWN SUGAR BRINE

- 1/4 cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt**
- 3 tablespoons minced onion**
- 3 tablespoons packed brown sugar**
- 1 teaspoon ground oregano**
- 12 to 18 shucked plump oysters**

BROWN SUGAR RUB

- 1/4 cup coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt**
- 2 tablespoons packed brown sugar**
- 1 teaspoon onion powder**
- 1/2 teaspoon ground oregano**
- Extra-virgin olive oil**

1. At least 4 hours before you plan to barbecue, begin preparations. Mix the brine ingredients with 3/4 cup of water in a large nonreactive bowl, stirring to dissolve. Add the oysters to the liquid and place a plate over them to keep them submerged. Marinate the oysters at room temperature for about 30 minutes.

2. Rinse the oysters and pat them dry. Transfer them to a platter lined with several thicknesses of paper towels. Allow

the oysters to air dry for 1 hour, changing the towels if they become soaked with liquid given off by the oysters.

3. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Dunk each oyster lightly in the mixture.

4. Line the platter with a new batch of paper towels. Return the oysters to the platter. Allow them to air dry for 1 more hour. Rinse the oysters again and pat them dry. Change the paper toweling on the platter and return the oysters to the platter. Allow the oysters to air dry for 1 more hour. The oysters should have a glossy-looking surface. (The oysters can be covered and refrigerated overnight at this point. Bring them back to room temperature before proceeding.)

5. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

6. Transfer the oysters to a small grill rack and place them in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook them until somewhat shrunken and dried, yet short of shriveled and toughened, 45 to 55 min-

utes. Place the oysters in a small bowl and cover them with the oil. Refrigerate overnight or for up to 2 days. Serve at room temperature.

Serving Suggestion *We prefer the oysters as an appetizer, accompanied by bread or crackers.*

EUREKA!

The immodest sign out front says it all at Bubba's barbecue joint in Eureka Springs, Arkansas: "It may not look famous, but it is." Who cares what for?



A Honey of a Lobster Tail

Honey enhances the already sweet flavor of a juicy Maine lobster tail. In this dish, the smoke is deliciously subtle and light.

SERVES 4

A HONEY OF A MARINADE AND OPTIONAL MOP

2 cups seafood stock

1 cup dry white wine

½ cup honey

¼ cup extra-virgin olive oil

2 tablespoons white vinegar

2 tablespoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2 bay leaves

2 teaspoons dried thyme

Four 6-ounce to 7-ounce Maine lobster tails

1. About 1½ to 2 hours before you plan to barbecue, mix together the marinade ingredients in a saucepan and bring to a boil over high heat. Stir, if needed, to dissolve the honey and salt. Remove the pan from the heat and let the mixture cool to room temperature.

2. Immerse the lobster tails in the cooled marinade and refrigerate them for 1 hour.

3. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

4. Drain the lobster, reserving the marinade if you plan to baste the tails (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”). To make the mop, bring the marinade back to a vigorous boil over high heat and boil for several minutes. Keep the liquid warm over low heat.

5. Transfer the lobster tails to the smoker, placing the lobster as far from the heat as possible. Smoke until just cooked through and tender, 35 to 40 minutes. Mop once or twice in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of smoker. Serve the lobster warm or chilled.

Serving Suggestion Start a special dinner with 007 Shrimp (page 339). Add a green

salad with a citrus vinaigrette and Maque Choux Peppers (page 268). For a delectable finale, top angel food cake with fresh fruit. To use the lobster in a luscious salad, slice chilled lobster and combine it with mixed greens tossed with a honey-based dressing.



BBQ TIP For barbecuing on a covered grill, we like to use a combination of wood chips and chunks. The chips produce more initial smoke but the chunks last much longer. Be sure to replenish the wood as the vented smoke dies out, which may be as often as every 30 minutes if you’re using chips alone.

THE BIG PIG JIG

The American Bus Association regularly selects the annual Big Pig Jig in Vienna, Georgia, as one of the Top 100 Events in North America. Attendees who don’t want to participate in the big barbecue cook-off can try their legs, hands, or mouth at the 5K run, the golf tournament, or the hog-calling contest. Even people who aren’t feeling competitive have a wide choice of spectator activities, including an arts and crafts fair, a fun parade, and several evening concerts.



Jungle Prince Scallops

A Hawaiian Thai specialty, jungle prince curry tastes as intriguing as it sounds.

SERVES 4

1 pound bay scallops

Clam juice or seafood stock (optional)

2 tablespoons peanut oil

1 tablespoon chopped lemongrass, preferably fresh

2 teaspoons peeled and minced fresh ginger

2 garlic cloves, minced

2 teaspoons Thai green curry paste, or more to taste

1 cup canned unsweetened coconut milk (not cream of coconut)

1 tablespoon Asian fish sauce or 2 tablespoons soy sauce

1 cup shredded bok choy or napa cabbage

½ cup chopped fresh basil

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. If the scallops aren't moist and plump, soak them for about 10 minutes in enough clam juice or seafood stock to cover.

3. Arrange the scallops on a small grill rack or baking sheet. Smoke as far from the fire as possible until just barely cooked through and opaque, 10 to 15 minutes. Remove the scallops from the smoker.

4. Warm the oil in a skillet over medium heat. Stir in the lemongrass, ginger, garlic, and curry paste and cook for 2 to 3 minutes. Pour in the coconut milk and fish sauce and simmer until reduced by about one-third. Stir in the bok choy and cook for an additional 2 to 3 minutes. Mix in the scallops and the basil, remove from the heat, and serve immediately.

Serving Suggestion *Serve over white rice. Add a cool dessert such as Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream (page 443) or Mojito Sorbet (page 444).*

CLEVER COOKS

Barbecue contest teams compete against each other on all levels, including their names. Some of the winners over the years include Pork, Sweat & Beers (Cordova, Tennessee), ZZ Chop (Irving, Texas), Sow Luau (Memphis), Great Boars of Fire (Cobden, Illinois), Pork Forkers (Columbus, Mississippi), and Hazardous Waist (Collierville, Tennessee).

Scallop and Snapper Ceviche

The citrus juice in traditional ceviche chemically “cooks” the seafood. In this version, we finish the process with smoke, adding another contrasting flavor.

SERVES 2 AS A MAIN COURSE OR 4 AS AN APPETIZER

2 oranges, peeled and sectioned

$\frac{1}{2}$ pound red snapper, yellowtail snapper, or other firm-fleshed white fish, cut into bite-size chunks

$\frac{1}{2}$ pound scallops (small bay scallops can be used as is, larger sea scallops should be halved)

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup freshly squeezed lime juice

1 ripe Haas avocado, peeled, pitted, and cubed

1 tomato, preferably Roma or Italian plum, chopped

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup finely diced red bell pepper

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup finely diced red onion

1 to 2 fresh serranos or about 1 fresh jalapeño, minced

1 to 2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

Diced yellow tomato or yellow bell pepper, optional, for more color

Lime wedges, for garnish

1. Squeeze enough orange sections to make 2 tablespoons of juice. Cut the remaining sections in halves or thirds and reserve.

2. Marinate the snapper and scallops in the lime and orange juices in a nonreactive bowl for 30 to 40 minutes.

3. While the seafood “cooks,” prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

4. Drain the seafood and arrange it on a small grill rack or in a pie pan. Cook it as far from the fire as possible until warmed through, about 15 minutes. Taste one morsel. If the smoke hasn’t yet gently soaked into the snapper and scallops, allow a few more minutes. Be careful to avoid drying out the seafood.

5. Lightly mix the fish with the orange sections and remaining ingredients in a medium bowl. Refrigerate for up to 30 minutes. Serve in parfait glasses, margarita glasses, or glass bowls to show off the ceviche’s colors. Garnish with the limes.

Cookin' Clams

Contrary to some claims, the New England clambake was not the first form of barbecue in the country. A traditional clambake uses a wood fire in a pit for cooking, like barbecue, but the clams are steamed with moisture from seaweed rather than smoked. If you would really rather have barbecue, just leave out the wet seaweed.

SERVES 6

4 to 5 dozen fresh clams, in their shells

About $\frac{1}{2}$ cup cornmeal

Melted garlic butter, Smoked Butter (page 352), or Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce (page 351) (optional)

1. Soak the clams in several changes of water, each containing 1 to 2 tablespoons cornmeal, which helps eliminate grit and impurities. This can be done over several hours or overnight. Discard any clams that aren't tightly closed.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Arrange the clams in a single layer on a small grill rack or baking sheet. Depending on the size of your smoker and cooking implements, this may require cooking in more than one batch. Place the clams as far

from the fire as possible. Cook them until the shells pop open, 10 to 15 minutes. Discard any clams that don't open within several minutes of the rest of the batch.

4. Serve the clams immediately, with garlic butter, Smoked Butter, or Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestions For a Fourth of July feast, complement the clams with Smoky Corn-on-the-Cob (page 266), Creamy Cole-slaw (page 369), and onions and red potatoes boiled with generous spoonfuls of Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26). Have at least two fruit desserts on hand, perhaps Long-on-Strawberries Shortcake (page 432) and Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble (page 424).



Smoked Mussels with Dill Mayonnaise

Despite an abundance of mussels in Atlantic and Pacific coastal waters, Americans have never eaten them to the extent that Europeans have for generations. They can be scrumptious, particularly, we think, in this preparation.

SERVES 4

DILL MAYONNAISE

- 1 cup mayonnaise
- 2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil
- 2 tablespoons minced fresh dill, preferably, or 1 tablespoon dried dill
- ¼ teaspoon freshly squeezed lemon juice or white vinegar

MUSSEL MOP

- ½ cup bottled clam juice
- 2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice
- 2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil
- 4 to 5 dozen mussels in their shells
- Fresh dill sprigs, for garnish (optional)

1. Prepare the mayonnaise, whisking together the ingredients in a small bowl. Cover and refrigerate.
2. Prepare the mop, combining the ingredients in a small bowl.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
4. Place the mussels in a shallow smoke-proof dish large enough to hold them in a single layer, more or less.
5. Place the mussels in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Plan on a total cooking time of about 25 to 30 minutes. If you plan to baste the mussels (see page 49, “To Mop or Not”), drizzle some of the mop into the mussels that have opened after 15 to 20 minutes. The mussels are done when all have opened and they are still plump and juicy. Drizzle the mop over all the mussels when they come off the smoker. Serve the mussels in large shallow bowls accompanied by the mayonnaise. Pop them from the shells with a fork, dunk into the mayonnaise, and savor.



Crab in Garlic Cream

This one is richer than the Rockefeller clan. Serve the crab over spinach fettuccine or other noodles, or spooned into golden puff pastry shells.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN COURSE OR 6 AS AN APPETIZER

GARLIC CREAM

1 tablespoon butter, preferably unsalted

3 garlic cloves, minced

1 tablespoon minced onion

1 cup heavy cream

12-ounce can evaporated milk

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon white pepper

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ pounds king crab legs

8 ounces seafood sausage, preferably a link style

Vegetable oil

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

2. In a large saucepan, melt the butter over medium heat. Add the garlic and onion and

sauté until softened. Add the cream and milk and stir in the salt and pepper. Simmer until reduced by one-third. Keep the sauce warm. Crack the crab legs at the joints and in several other spots. Oil the legs and the seafood sausage. Place the sausage on the smoker. After the sausage has cooked for about 45 minutes, add the crab to the smoker. Cook both for another 15 minutes. The sausage should be cooked through but still succulent and the exposed crab meat should flake easily. Both should have a gentle but distinct smoke taste.

3. Remove the crab from the shells and slice the sausage into thin rounds. Mix both with the sauce and heat through if needed. Serve hot.

RAIN OR SHINE

A barbecue competition team composed entirely of Post Office employees, the U.S. Porkmasters converted a mail jeep into their contest cooker. They put a charcoal oven under the hood and a smoker in the rear—vented, of course, through the exhaust pipe. You could always count on them to deliver the 'Q.'

Katzen Dawgs

The name is clever and so is the idea—smoked catfish hushpuppies that are superb for appetizers or a main course. Offer a tip of your gimme cap to John Wysor, from the Spoon River Charcuterie in Charlotte, North Carolina, for concocting the original recipe, and another nod to Donna Ellis at Cook-shack for making it available. Use your own smoked catfish, which can be cooked up to a couple of days in advance, or buy some from the store.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH OR 6 TO 8 AS AN APPETIZER

$\frac{3}{4}$ pound smoked catfish (such as Peppered Catfish, page 223)

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup buttermilk

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup minced onion

2 tablespoons minced scallion tops

2 large eggs

1 tablespoon melted bacon drippings or butter

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

1 teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce, or more to taste

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup yellow cornmeal, preferably stone-ground

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup all-purpose flour

1 tablespoon baking powder

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon baking soda

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

Vegetable oil for deep-frying

Tartar sauce or Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce (page 358) (optional)

1. Remove the bones from the catfish, if necessary, and chop the fish coarsely. In a bowl, mix the fish, buttermilk, onion,

scallions, eggs, bacon drippings, lemon juice, and Tabasco.

2. Combine the cornmeal, flour, baking powder, baking soda, pepper, and salt in a large bowl. Pour the liquid ingredients into the dry ones. Stir just to blend.

3. In a heavy skillet, heat 3 inches of oil to 365°F. Drop heaping tablespoons of the batter into the oil, a few at a time. Don't overcrowd. The hushpuppies will rise to the surface as they cook, so turn them if they are browning unevenly. Fry until golden brown on all sides, about 3 minutes. Drain. Serve immediately with tartar sauce or Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce, if you wish.

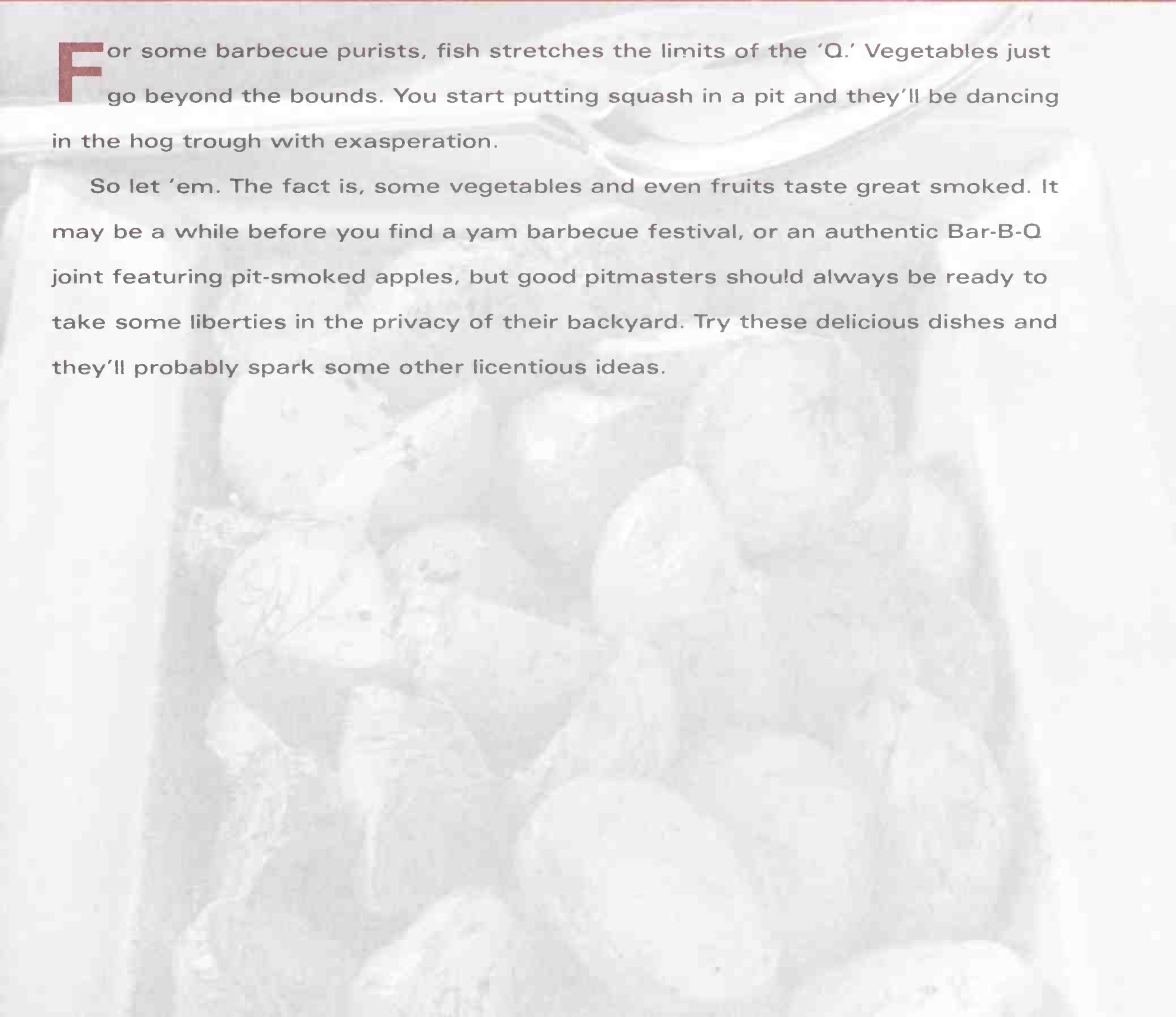
Serving Suggestion For supper, match the Dawgs with Sweet and Sour Cukes (page 398) and 'Nana Nut Salad (page 407). When you want a hearty appetizer, serve the Dawgs as finger food, like Caribbean accras (cod fritters), accompanied by icy drinks such as Cham-gria (page 459), Apricoritas (page 456), or Derby Day Mint Juleps (page 452).



Garden of Eatin'

For some barbecue purists, fish stretches the limits of the 'Q.' Vegetables just go beyond the bounds. You start putting squash in a pit and they'll be dancing in the hog trough with exasperation.

So let 'em. The fact is, some vegetables and even fruits taste great smoked. It may be a while before you find a yam barbecue festival, or an authentic Bar-B-Q joint featuring pit-smoked apples, but good pitmasters should always be ready to take some liberties in the privacy of their backyard. Try these delicious dishes and they'll probably spark some other licentious ideas.



Vidalias 'n' Georgia BBQ Sauce	253	Down-Home Ratatouille	267
Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions	254	Maque Choux Peppers	268
Better-Than-French Onion Soup	256	Hominy and Summer Squash Nuggets	270
Smoked Onion Rings	257	Zooks and Cilantro Sauce	271
Sweet Potatoes with Orange-Pecan Butter	258	Cinnamon-Scented Acorn Squash	272
Drunken Sweet Potatoes	259	Sausage and Wild Rice Butternut Squash	272
Scalloped Green Chile Potatoes	260	Cheese-Stuffed Tomatoes	273
Smoked Spud Skins	261	Barbecued Rice	274
Simple 'Shrooms	261	Garlic Cheese Grits	275
'Bello Burger	262	Peaches Keen	276
South-of-the-Border Garlic Soup	263	Smokin' Waldorf	276
Bronzed Artichokes	264	Perky Pineapple Relish	277
Black-Eyed Pea Cakes	265	Barbecued Bananas	278
Smoky Corn-on-the-Cob	266		



Vidalias 'n' Georgia BBQ Sauce

Almost the size of footballs, Georgia's famous Vidalia onions are available only in the late spring and early summer, just in time to kick off the barbecue season. When slathered with a mustardy sauce from the same state, smoked Vidalias and other sweet onions become golden orbs of succulence.

SERVES 6 AS A SIDE DISH

3 Vidalia or other large sweet onions

Vegetable oil

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) or other mustard-based barbecue sauce

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Slice each onion in half and peel the outer layer. Cut down to, but not through, the base of each onion half in crisscross directions to make an onion "flower." Rub or spray a thin coat of oil over the onions and wrap each half in foil.
3. Transfer the onions to the smoker and cook for 30 to 35 minutes. Remove the foil or peel it back to form a flat base and

brush the onions with a thick coating of barbecue sauce. Continue cooking for an additional 35 to 45 minutes, until the onion is tender. Remove the onions from the smoker and brush with additional barbecue sauce before serving.

Serving Suggestion Try these with traditional barbecued pork, such as *The Renowned Mr. Brown* (page 53), *A Perfect Picnic* (page 58), or *Going Whole Hog* (page 61). They'd be a proud accompaniment to *Ginger-Glazed Ham* (page 77), too.

Variation: Pop-Top Vidalias Instead of topping the onions with a mustard-based barbecue sauce, substitute Pop Mop (page 48)

THE RUBAPHOBIA AFFLICTION

Food like barbecue and chili remains an embarrassment to people who want to think of themselves as living in a big-league city that is sophisticated enough to have an array of Continental restaurants—Continental restaurants that are modeled, an unwary traveler can discover, on the continent of Antarctica, where everything starts out frozen. . . . [These city dwellers are] afflicted with a disease of the American provinces I have managed to isolate and identify as rubaphobia—not the fear of rubes but the fear of being thought of as a rube." Calvin Trillin, *Alice, Let's Eat* (1978, Random House).

using Dr Pepper, R.C. Cola, or Coke. It does double duty as a mop and sauce, and you'll end up with a sweet caramelized flavor.



BBQ TIP If you want to experiment with vegetables, keep a couple of general principles in mind. Usually you coat vegetables

with oil before putting them in the smoker, to keep them from drying out. You can do this by hand or by spritzing them with a spray oil. That may be all you do, because simple preparations are often the best. You may want to play creatively with dry rubs, pastes, marinades, or mops, but you are less likely to need them than when you barbecue meat.



Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions

Best known for the ducks that parade and swim in its lobby, the Peabody Hotel in Memphis also earns lesser kudos for its stuffed onions. If the kitchen smoked them—the dish, not the ducks—the onions might rival the quackers in acclaim.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN COURSE OR 8 AS A SIDE DISH

4 medium onions

1 tablespoon butter, preferably unsalted

2 garlic cloves, minced

12 ounces fresh spinach, chopped

1½ cups cooked rice

1 cup ground ham (leftovers from Ginger-Glazed Ham, page 77, or Maple-Bourbon Ham, page 78, are especially flavorful)

1 cup dry cornbread crumbs or other bread crumbs

Vegetable oil

6 tablespoons grated Romano or Parmesan cheese, plus additional for sprinkling over the onions

½ teaspoon dried sage

¼ teaspoon dried thyme

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

¾ cup chicken stock

1 egg, beaten lightly

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Slice the ends off the onions and cut them in half horizontally, but don't remove the skins. Carefully scoop out the centers of the onion halves with a melon baller or spoon, leaving a shell about ⅓ inch to ½ inch thick. Coat the onions with oil.

3. Transfer the onions to the smoker and cook for 30 to 35 minutes, until softened but not yet tender.

4. While the onions are cooking, prepare the stuffing. Chop half of the onion center pieces and set them aside. Save the other half for another use.

5. In a skillet, warm the butter over medium heat. Add the chopped onion and the garlic and sauté for 1 to 2 minutes. Stir in the spinach and cook until limp, adding a tablespoon of water if the mixture begins to stick. Stir in the rice, ham, bread crumbs, cheese, sage, thyme, salt, and pepper, and add as much of the stock as needed to bind the mixture together. It should be moist but not soupy. Mix in the egg.

6. Remove the onions from the smoker and, when cool enough to handle, peel them. Spoon the stuffing into the onions and sprinkle a bit of Romano or Parmesan over the top of each. Return the onions to the smoker and cook them until they are tender and the stuffing is lightly browned, an additional 20 to 25 minutes. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion *These make a good lunch entrée accompanied by a fruit salad, perhaps Mango and Avocado Salad (page 406). Serve slices of South Georgia Pound Cake (page 435) for dessert and, if you like, Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream (page 443).*

FROM BORSCHT TO BARBECUE

The showmanship awards at the Memphis in May cook-off are always great fun. One year we attended, the AutoZone barbecue team staged an elaborate skit about Boris Borscht, a Russian ballet dancer who gets fed up with the food at home and sets out to find real flavor. Boris samples and rejects the cooking of France, Italy, and Mexico. Discouraged, he pins his last hopes on Memphis, where he blows his tutu eating barbecue. Too fat to dance any longer, he starts a new life as Boris Barbecue, "the 'Q' man."



Better-Than-French Onion Soup

This gutsy, deeply flavored soup is a gem. It's particularly splendid when you make its beef stock with barbecued brisket trimmings. Smoke the onions ahead if you like, for easier preparation.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN COURSE OR 6 AS AN APPETIZER

4 medium onions

Vegetable oil

6 cups beef stock, preferably homemade

¼ cup dry red wine

1 tablespoon Memphis Magic (page 353) or other not-too-sweet tomato-based barbecue sauce

1 teaspoon dried thyme

Salt to taste

¼ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

4 slices crusty country-style white bread

1 cup shredded Gruyère cheese

1. About 3 hours before you plan to eat the soup, prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the onions with a thin coating of oil and place them in the smoker. Cook until the skins are well browned and the onions feel soft, about 1½ hours. When the onions are cool enough to handle, peel them and slice them thin.

3. Place the onions in a saucepan and add the stock, wine, barbecue sauce, thyme, salt, and pepper. Simmer the soup for 45 minutes.

4. Preheat the broiler. Toast the bread.

5. Spoon the hot soup into 4 ovenproof bowls. Top each portion of soup with a piece of toast and some of the cheese. Broil briefly until the cheese is melted. Serve immediately.



BBQ TIP Homemade stock makes an enormous difference in the flavor of soups, and it's simple to prepare. Start by saving trimmings and bones from raw or cooked poultry and beef—separate from each other, for their different stocks—and collect carrot peels, celery tops, and onion skins together to use in both stocks. Stash the ingredients in the freezer in plastic bags until you've got several pounds. To make a stock, put the ingredients into a stockpot or large saucepan with a little garlic, a few peppercorns, and, if you have it, some parsley. Don't add salt, which can make it difficult to control the saltiness of dishes that use the stock. Cover everything with twice as much water, bring the pot to a boil, and then reduce the heat to low. Simmer slowly for several hours. Leave the pot

uncovered, evaporating the liquid and intensifying the taste. We usually cook the stock until about one-third of the original liquid remains, but you can reduce it further

for greater richness and simpler storage. When the stock is ready, strain it and freeze it in multiple batches, for easy use later as needed.



Smoked Onion Rings

These are basic yet scrumptious, a perfect stovetop-smoker side dish for a winter evening. For a more festive appearance, sprinkle the onion rings with chopped chives, parsley, or other compatible herbs after cooking, or drizzle with your favorite barbecue sauce.

SERVES 4 TO 6 AS A SIDE DISH

2 large onions, sliced into $\frac{1}{3}$ -inch-thick rings

2 tablespoons vegetable oil

2 tablespoons balsamic vinegar or pepper vinegar

Salt and freshly ground black pepper

1. If you want to keep the onions in neat concentric rings, run a soaked bamboo skewer through each slice. Arrange the onions in a shallow dish. Whisk together the oil and vinegar together and splash

over the onions. Turn the slices as needed to coat both sides lightly. Sprinkle with salt and pepper.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Skewered onions can go directly onto the cooking grate. Otherwise, arrange the slices on a small grill rack or shallow smokeproof pan. Cook until tender, about 20 to 30 minutes. Serve warm.

Sweet Potatoes with Orange-Pecan Butter

Like onions, sweet potatoes have a natural affinity for smoke. The deep caramel flavor needs no garnish, but we like to gild the lily with the addition of a simple butter sauce.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN OR SIDE DISH

4 small sweet potatoes

Vegetable oil

ORANGE-PECAN BUTTER

4 to 6 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1 teaspoon honey

Juice and zest of 1 orange

2 tablespoons chopped pecans

¼ teaspoon dry mustard

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Scrub the potatoes well, prick them in several spots, and rub a light film of oil over them. Transfer the potatoes to the smoker and cook them until they are soft, about 2 hours. The potatoes can sit for 15 minutes before serving, or you can wrap

them in foil to keep warm for up to an hour.

3. While the potatoes cook, prepare the orange-pecan butter. Melt the butter and honey together in a small saucepan over low heat. Add the remaining ingredients and stir together. Reheat the butter, if necessary, just before serving.

4. To serve, slit open the top of each of the sweet potatoes and drizzle with the orange-pecan butter. Serve hot.



BBQ TIP Try Candied Sweet Potatoes or any favorite sweet potato recipe using smoked spuds. They add a delicious depth to the flavor of most dishes.

A SWEET VEGGIE FINALE

Southern Arizona is better known for cactus than ribs, but Jack's Original Barbecue in Tucson has been serving an authentic version of its specialty since the 1950s. The restaurant offers it all, from peppery links to blackened brisket. For vegetable lovers, there's sweet potato pie for dessert.

Drunken Sweet Potatoes

Tipsy from tequila, these potatoes enhance any Southwest barbecue spread.

SERVES 4 AS A SIDE DISH

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup butter, preferably unsalted

$1\frac{1}{4}$ pounds (about 1 large) grated sweet potato

$2\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons packed brown sugar

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup tequila

Juice of 2 limes

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. In a cast-iron skillet or smokeproof baking dish, melt the butter. Stir in the sweet potatoes and then pat the potatoes down into a thick, even layer. Sprinkle the brown sugar and the salt over the potatoes.

3. Transfer the potatoes to the smoker and cook for 1 hour. Stir in 3 tablespoons of the tequila and half of the lime juice, pat the potatoes back down again, and continue cooking the potatoes another 50 to 60 minutes, until they are quite tender but crisped a bit around the edges. Remove the potatoes from the smoker and stir in the remaining tequila and lime juice. Serve warm.

Serving Suggestion Pair the potatoes with *Bona Fide Fajitas* (page 112) and *Texas Peach Cobbler* (page 431).

THE GLOBALIZATION OF BBQ

The Memphis in May World Championship Barbecue Cooking Contest brags of being the biggest event of its kind in the country. Since the first cook-off in 1978, the annual affair has attracted teams from all corners of the globe, including Ireland, France, Estonia, Thailand, and New Zealand. Senator Bob Kerrey of Nebraska took a shot at the title once and former Vice President Al Gore has competed regularly.



Scalloped Green Chile Potatoes

A touch of smoke and a kiss of green chile wake up sleepy scalloped potatoes. Use fresh or frozen chile, because the canned version is pretty drowsy itself.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH OR 6 AS A SIDE DISH

3 baking potatoes

Vegetable oil

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup chopped roasted green chiles,
preferably New Mexican, Anaheim, or
poblano, fresh or frozen

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup (3 ounces) grated Monterey jack cheese

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup chopped red onion

1 cup half-and-half

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

Nutmeg to taste

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Slice the potatoes into chunks about 1 inch thick. Coat each chunk with oil.
3. Place the potatoes on a small grill rack, transfer them to the smoker, and smoke

for 50 to 75 minutes, or until they are partially cooked and well perfumed with smoke. When the potatoes are cool enough to handle, slice them thinly.

4. Preheat the oven to 350°F and grease a baking dish. Layer one-third of the potatoes with about one-third of the chile, cheese, onion, half-and-half, salt, and pepper. Repeat the layers until all the ingredients are used. Dust liberally with nutmeg.

5. Bake, covered, for 40 minutes. Uncover the dish and bake for an additional 10 minutes, or until the potatoes are melt-ingly tender. Serve warm.

LONE STAR LEGENDS

Two renowned Texas pitmasters died in the 1990s, but both mentored enough younger cooks to keep their influence alive for many years. Sonny Bryan attracted all of Dallas to his Smokehouse shack for three decades. You never knew who you would see eating one of the magnificent brisket sandwiches in his parking lot, dribbling sauce on anything from overalls to designer dresses. "Stubbs" Stubblefield, of Lubbock fame, became the caterer of choice for West Texas musicians and artists. When Jo Harvey and Terry Allen celebrated a big wedding anniversary in Santa Fe, they trucked Stubbs and his pit hundreds of miles to cook the 'Q' and join the fun. Both men made memories.

Smoked Spud Skins

As potatoes themselves do, the skins step lively after a barbecue bath.

SERVES 4 TO 6 AS AN APPETIZER

8 baking potatoes

Butter or olive oil

1 to 2 tablespoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26), Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29), or other savory seasoning blend

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup grated Monterey jack or Cheddar cheese

Sliced scallions, for garnish

Alabama Great White (page 362), Sauce Olé (page 354), or Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce (page 358), optional

1. Bake or boil the potatoes until tender. Then cut in halves or quarters and scoop out to leave a $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch to $\frac{1}{2}$ -inch shell. (Reserve the scooped-out portions for mashed potatoes or another use.)

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Rub the potato skins with a thin coat of butter or oil. Sprinkle the skins, inside and out, with the rub or other dry spice mixture.

4. Transfer the skins to the smoker and cook for 55 to 65 minutes, until they are browned and crispy. Sprinkle the cheese over the skins and cook for an additional couple of minutes, until the cheese melts. Top with the scallions. Serve piping hot, with Alabama Great White, Sauce Olé, or Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce, if you wish.



Simple 'Shrooms

Mushrooms make one of the most impressive smoked vegetables to serve sliced as a side dish without further embellishment.

SERVES 4 AS A SIDE DISH

16 to 18 large button mushrooms or 8 portobello mushrooms, sliced $\frac{1}{3}$ inch thick

Olive oil

Salt and freshly ground black pepper

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Brush the mushroom slices with enough oil to coat, then sprinkle them

generously with salt and pepper. Arrange the mushrooms on a small grill rack or a piece of heavy-duty foil.

3. Place the mushrooms in the smoker and cook for 20 to 25 minutes, until they ooze liquid and are cooked through and tender. Serve warm.

Serving Suggestions *Top a steak or burger with the mushrooms, toss them with a warm spinach salad, or chop them to use as an omelet or calzone filling.*



'Bello Burger

This is a smoked adaptation of one of our favorite grilled veggie sandwiches, hearty enough to satisfy most avowed carnivores.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH

4 portobello mushroom caps (stems reserved for another purpose), each about 5 inches in diameter

Olive oil

4 thin slices provolone cheese, each large enough to cover a mushroom cap, at room temperature

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup mayonnaise

3 tablespoons prepared pesto

4 red-ripe tomato slices

4 large squares focaccia bread, split and toasted, or **4** large crusty rolls, split

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Brush the mushrooms lightly with oil and sprinkle them with salt.

3. Place the mushrooms in the smoker and cook for 20 to 25 minutes, until they ooze liquid and are cooked through. Cover the mushrooms with cheese shortly before removing them from the smoker.

4. Stir together the mayonnaise and pesto and spread the mixture over the bread slices. Place a tomato on four of the slices, then top with a mushroom, and the remaining pieces of bread. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the burgers with Smoked Spud Skins (page 261) for a casual chow-down, or dress them up a bit with Southern Caesar Salad (page 393).*

South-of-the-Border Garlic Soup

Some of the finest Mexican dishes are soups that feature *ajo*, or garlic. We drew on that tradition in developing this preparation, where the garlic is mel-
lowed dramatically by smoking. For maximum flavor, make it with homemade
stock (see page 256).

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH OR 6 AS AN APPETIZER

2 whole heads of garlic

Vegetable oil

1½ tablespoons vegetable oil

1 medium onion, sliced thin

1 medium tomato, chopped

8 cups chicken stock, preferably homemade

1 to 2 dried chipotle chiles

Juice of 1 lime

1 ripe Haas avocado, peeled, pitted, and
cubed

1 tablespoon minced cilantro, or more to
taste

2 corn tortillas, cut into matchsticks

Lime slices, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the unpeeled garlic bulbs with a thin coating of oil and transfer them to the smoker. Cook the garlic until the peel is well browned and the cloves feel quite soft, about 1 hour. When the garlic is cool enough to handle, peel all the cloves and reserve them.

3. Heat 1 tablespoon of the oil in a large saucepan over medium-low heat. Add the onion to the oil and sauté until it's softened and lightly colored. Spoon the mixture into a blender and add the tomato and reserved garlic. Purée.

4. Add the remaining ½ tablespoon oil to the saucepan and heat it over medium-high heat. Pour in the blender mixture and sauté it until it begins to dry out and the tomato darkens a shade or two. Add the chicken stock and the chipotle, and reduce the heat to medium. Simmer the mixture for 25 to 30 minutes, remove it from the heat, and add the lime juice.

5. Divide the avocado, cilantro, and tortillas among individual bowls and pour the hot soup over them. Garnish each bowl with a slice of lime and serve.

Serving Suggestion For a light supper, pair the soup with *Can't Wait Queso* (page 315).

Bronzed Artichokes

This two-step preparation yields exceptionally tender artichokes. You can do the smoking several days in advance of the steaming and serving.

SERVES 2 AS A MAIN DISH OR 4 AS AN APPETIZER OR SIDE DISH

2 medium artichokes

Juice of 1 lemon

2 teaspoons olive oil

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) or vinaigrette dressing (optional)

1. At least 3 hours before you plan to eat the artichokes, trim them, cutting off all tough leaf tips. Spread the leaves slightly. Place the artichokes in a bowl and add the lemon juice and olive oil. Pour enough water over the artichokes to submerge them. Soak the artichokes for at least 30 minutes, and up to 2 hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Drain the artichokes. Place the artichokes in the smoker and cook for 1½ to 1¾ hours, until the leaves are deeply bronzed and have loosened somewhat.

4. Remove the artichokes from the smoker and steam them over boiling water until very tender, 25 to 30 minutes. The artichokes can be eaten warm or chilled. Serve whole, accompanied by Golden Mustard Barbecue sauce or vinaigrette dressing, if you wish.

DELTA BARBECUE AND BLUES

Abe Davis, a Lebanese immigrant, started selling his barbecue in 1924 at a streetside stand in Clarksdale, Mississippi, heart of the Delta country. Abe's still thrives in a new, modern building, and the cooks still prepare their pork sandwiches in their own distinctive way, smoking the meat first and then grilling it for a crusty finish. The business is at the intersection of U.S. highways 61 and 49, touted locally as the spot blues maestro Robert Johnson sang about in "Cross Road Blues."

Black-Eyed Pea Cakes

Almost anything flat and porous, from hamburgers to vegetable cakes, is well suited to barbecue.

SERVES 2 TO 3 AS A MAIN DISH OR 4 TO 6 AS A SIDE DISH

CAKES

2 cups cooked black-eyed peas, well-drained

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup saltine-style cracker crumbs

2 tablespoons minced red bell pepper

2 tablespoons minced onion

1 tablespoon minced fresh parsley

1 egg yolk

2 teaspoons minced pickled jalapeño

2 teaspoons mayonnaise

1 teaspoon yellow mustard

1 garlic clove, minced

Approximately $\frac{1}{2}$ cup saltine-style cracker crumbs

1 tablespoon butter, preferably unsalted

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce (page 350) or Carolina Red (page 350)

1. In a food processor, purée 1 cup of the peas. Place the puréed peas and whole peas

in a bowl and add the remaining cake ingredients. Refrigerate the mixture for at least 1 hour, and up to 24 hours.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Grease a smokeproof baking dish.

3. Remove the mixture from the refrigerator. It should be moist, but stiff enough to form loose cakes. Place the additional cracker crumbs on a small plate. Make 6 to 8 cakes, dipping each in the cracker crumbs and coating well.

4. Warm the butter and oil in a skillet over medium-high heat. Fry the cakes for about 30 seconds per side, just long enough to crisp their surfaces.

5. Transfer the cakes to the smoker and cook for 20 to 30 minutes, until they are firm and heated through. Remove the cakes from the smoker and serve hot, with

'Q' IN THE TWO-Q CITY

New Mexico may not be in the South, but it does enjoy true southern 'Q' at Mr. Powdrell's Barbeque House in Albuquerque. The Powdrell family, pit-masters for generations, left Louisiana during the Great Depression to seek a better life farther west. The current clan landed in Albuquerque decades ago and has been smoking ever since. If you go, ask if they are serving a side dish of roasted chiles, sometimes available and always popular locally with barbecue.

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce or Carolina Red, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *The cakes make a*

satisfying main dish enhanced by a side of Sweet and Sour Cukes (page 398). You'll still have room for Black Walnut Cake (page 437) afterwards.

Smoky Corn-on-the-Cob

Putting bacon in the husk adds resonant flavor to slow-smoked corn.

SERVES 6 AS A SIDE DISH

6 ears of corn, with husks

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

6 slices bacon

Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce (page 351) or melted butter (optional)

1. Pull back the corn husks enough to remove the silks. Place the corn in a large bowl and cover it with cold water. Soak the corn for at least 30 minutes, and up to 2 hours. Drain the corn.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Salt and pepper the corn and wrap a piece of bacon around each ear. Rearrange

the husks in their original position. Tear 1 or 2 husks into strips and use them to tie around the top of the ears to hold the husks in place.

4. Place the corn in the smoker and cook until tender, 1 to 1¼ hours. Remove the corn from the smoker and discard the husks and bacon. Serve hot.

Variation: Naked Corn-on-the-Cob Instead of wrapping the corn in bacon, try slathering the corn in extra-virgin olive oil, unrefined corn oil, or garlic-flavored oil. All add great taste, too.

A SERIOUS PIG PASSION

Roving food writers Jane and Michael Stern vividly remember their first visit to D & H Bar-B-Que in Manning, South Carolina. As they say in their wonderful *Roadfood* (1992, HarperCollins), "It was here, twenty years ago, that we detoured from writing a book about truck drivers and ate some of our first genuine southern barbecue. Since then we have spent our life looking for good food, barbecue foremost among our targets; and the hunger inspired by that first real Carolina pig-out has kept us on the road for a million miles."

Down-Home Ratatouille

We realized that ratatouille had been adopted as American fare a decade or so ago when a cowboy café in Cheyenne, Wyoming, offered it to us as the vegetable of the day. We knew the dish still had some territory to cover, though, because the waiter called it “rat tool.”

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH OR 6 AS A SIDE DISH

- 1 whole medium eggplant, sliced thick (do not peel)
- 2 leeks, halved
- 1 green bell pepper
- 1 red bell pepper
- 1 medium onion, sliced thick
- 3 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup canned crushed tomatoes
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup chicken stock
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup slivered cracked green Greek olives or other green olives with character

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Rub the eggplant, leeks, bell peppers, and onion with oil, reserving about 1 tablespoon of the oil. Place the vegetables in the smoker as far from the heat as possible. Cook for 35 to 45 minutes, until the vegetables are crisp-tender. Remove the vegetables from the smoker and, when cool enough to handle, chop into bite-size pieces.
3. In a heavy skillet, heat the remaining oil over medium heat. Add the garlic and

sauté for 1 minute. Stir in the smoked vegetables and any accumulated juice. Add the tomatoes and chicken stock and simmer the mixture until it's very thick and the vegetables are tender. Stir in the olives and heat through. Serve warm.

Variation: Ratatouille Soup Purée left-overs with chicken stock and half-and-half in equal parts, using just enough liquid to meld the mixture into a thick potage.



BBQ TIP Not all vegetables mate with serious smoke as well as the ones we've included in this chapter. Perhaps the biggest surprise to us was eggplant, because it grills wonderfully. It works in this ratatouille because it doesn't cook fully in the smoker, and is later mixed with other vegetables and flavorings. Other veggies that don't smoke well include turnips, broccoli, cabbage, Brussels sprouts, and asparagus. That still leaves a load of options from your farmers' market or produce department.

DOWNEAST DELIGHTS

Uncle Billy's barbecue restaurant in Portland, Maine, is about as far north as you find good barbecue. Nephew Jonny—also known as Jonathan St. Laurent, classically trained as a French chef—does the cooking. He describes his 'Q,' and offers recipes, in the witty and wise *Uncle Billy's Downeast Barbeque Book* (1991, Dancing Bear Books).



Maque Choux Peppers

An assertive Cajun corn dish, maque choux dances a *fais do do* on the tongue when combined with crimson peppers.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH

- 4 medium red bell peppers
- 3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil, preferably unrefined corn
- 2 cups corn kernels, fresh or frozen
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- ½ medium green bell pepper
- ½ teaspoon white pepper
- Salt to taste
- 1 cup chicken stock
- ¼ cup cream or half-and-half
- Several healthy splashes of Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce
- 2 cups dry cornbread crumbs or other bread crumbs
- 1 egg white, beaten

1. Slice off the tops of the peppers about ½ inch down from the stems. Remove the seeds and cores from the peppers. If any won't stand upright, slice a little off the bottom, being careful not to cut into the pepper's cavity. Reserve the peppers and their tops.

2. Melt the butter and oil in a medium skillet. Add the corn, onion, and green bell pepper and sauté over medium heat until fragrant. Add the white pepper and salt. Cover the pan and cook for about 10 minutes. Remove the lid, add the stock, cream, and Tabasco, and continue cooking, uncovered, until about half the liquid has

evaporated. Remove the filling from the heat and mix in the cornbread crumbs and egg white.

3. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
4. Grease a smokeproof baking dish that can hold the peppers snugly upright.
5. Stuff each bell pepper with a portion of the filling. Replace the tops of the peppers and secure with toothpicks. Arrange the peppers in the prepared dish.
6. Transfer the peppers to the smoker. Cook until they are tender but still hold their shape, 65 to 75 minutes. Remove the toothpicks and serve the peppers warm.

Serving Suggestion *The peppers make a hearty meatless main dish, accompanied by Buttermilk Biscuits (page 388) and a simple green salad. Finish with Peanuttty Pie (page 422).*



BBQ TIP Before you begin barbecuing, take a close look at your cooking grate. If you forgot to clean it the last time you used the smoker, scrape the grate thoroughly with a wire brush. Then always spray the surface with a vegetable oil cooking spray to prevent food from sticking to the grate.

THE KANSAS CITY LEGACY

American jazz and barbecue grew up together in the Kansas City ghettos of the 1920s and 1930s. African-American pacesetters, from Charlie Parker to Charlie Bryant, nourished both, often at the same speakeasies and clubs.



Hominy and Summer Squash Nuggets

Here's one example of how barbecue cooking can transform a familiar casserole dish into a new delight. Experiment with other favorite recipes.

SERVES 4 TO 6 AS A SIDE DISH

- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil
- $\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, chopped
- 1 pound yellow squash, diced
- 2 tablespoons diced red bell pepper or pimiento
- 1 to 2 pickled jalapeños, minced
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon dried oregano, preferably Mexican
- 2 tablespoons milk
- $1\frac{3}{4}$ cups hominy (1 can), drained
- 3 tablespoons sour cream
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup grated jalapeño jack or sharp Cheddar cheese (2 ounces)
- 3 to 4 tablespoons crushed corn or tortilla chips

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Grease a smokeproof baking dish.

2. In a skillet, warm the oil over medium heat. Add the onion and sauté until it is well softened but not browned. Mix in the squash, bell pepper, jalapeños, and oregano, and continue cooking until the vegetables are limp. Add the milk, reduce

the heat slightly, and cover the pan. Simmer the mixture for 15 to 20 minutes, or until the squash is very soft. Remove the pan from the heat and stir in the hominy and sour cream.

3. Layer half of the vegetable mixture into the prepared baking dish and sprinkle it with half of the cheese. Top with the remaining mixture and cheese. Sprinkle the crushed corn chips over the top. Transfer the dish to the smoker and cook for 40 to 50 minutes, until the mixture is hot, bubbly, and lightly smoky. Serve immediately.



BBQ TIP It's just as important to keep the inside of your smoker clean as it is the cooking grate. A good scrub after each use insures efficient operation and prevents residue from a previous barbecue from flavoring your next meal. Empty out ashes from the firebox and liquids left in a water pan or reservoir.



Zooks and Cilantro Sauce

If you have a garden, it probably overproduces zucchini around the height of the barbecue season. We use some of the largess this way.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH OR 8 AS A SIDE DISH

4 whole zucchini, 6 to 8 ounces each

Olive or vegetable oil

Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26) or other savory seasoning blend (optional)

SAUCE

1 cup chopped cilantro

½ cup chopped fresh parsley

2 scallions, chopped

1 garlic clove, minced

½ cup chicken or vegetable stock

¼ cup half-and-half

Juice of 1 lime

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the zucchini liberally with the oil. Sprinkle with the dry rub, if you wish.

3. Place the zucchini in the smoker and cook for about 1 hour, or until tender.

4. While the zucchini cooks, make the sauce. Combine the cilantro, parsley, scallions, and garlic in a food processor and process until smooth. Add the stock and half-and-half and process again until combined.

5. Pour the sauce mixture into a saucepan. Cook it over medium-low heat for about 10 minutes, reducing the liquid by one-quarter. Don't boil the sauce or it will lose the fresh cilantro punch. Remove the sauce from the heat, add the lime juice and salt and pepper to taste, and reserve.

6. When the zucchini are ready, slice each vegetable in half horizontally. Transfer the zucchini to a serving platter and spoon the sauce over. Serve warm.

IT'S THE FOOD, STUPID, NOT THE DECOR

Barbecue is a southern specialty even in a northern city like Chicago. The biggest concentration of Bar-B-Q joints is on the tough South Side, where even Al Capone wouldn't take a casual stroll. Stalwart rib lovers head to Lem's, a venerable neighborhood institution. The food's clearly the attraction because the most notable architectural accents are the bars on the windows.

Cinnamon-Scented Acorn Squash

This is the essence of fall distilled into one aromatic package.

SERVES 4 AS A SIDE DISH

1 good-size acorn squash

1 teaspoon vegetable oil

CINNAMON BUTTER

4 to 6 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

2 teaspoons packed brown sugar

1 teaspoon ground *canela* (Mexican cinnamon) or other cinnamon

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground red chiles, preferably New Mexican or ancho, or chili powder

2 tablespoons chopped walnuts, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Cut the squash in half but don't remove the seeds (they help to keep it moist while

cooking). Rub the oil over the cut surfaces of the squash and on the outside.

3. Place the squash in the smoker, cut side down, and cook for about 2 hours, or until tender.

4. While the squash cooks, melt the butter in a small pan or dish and stir in the sugar, *canela* or cinnamon, and chile. Keep the butter warm until needed.

5. Scrape the seeds out of each squash half and cut the halves into quarters. Spoon some of the melted cinnamon butter over each piece of squash and top with a sprinkling of chopped walnuts. Serve hot.

Sausage and Wild Rice Butternut Squash

If you want to win serious meat-eaters over to squash barbecue, tantalize them with a little pork, too.

SERVES 4 AS A MAIN DISH OR 6 AS A SIDE DISH

1 small butternut squash (under 2 pounds)

Vegetable oil

DRESSING

2 tablespoons dried currants

Juice of $\frac{1}{2}$ orange

1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

$\frac{1}{4}$ pound bulk breakfast-style sausage

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, chopped

1 celery rib, chopped

1 cup cooked wild rice

2 teaspoons minced fresh sage or 1 teaspoon dried sage

Pinch of nutmeg

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

Black Sauce (page 355), optional

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Cut the squash in half but don't remove the seeds (they help to keep it moist while cooking). Rub the oil over the cut surfaces of the squash and on the outside.
3. Place the squash in the smoker, cut side down, and cook for about 1½ hours, until the squash is softened but not yet tender.
4. While the squash cooks, make the dressing. In a small bowl, combine the currants

with the orange juice and Worcestershire and let them steep. Fry the sausage in a heavy skillet, adding the onion and celery after some of the fat has been rendered. Sauté until the sausage is cooked through and the vegetables softened. Mix in the currants with any remaining liquid and the rest of the ingredients.

5. Remove the squash from the smoker and, as soon as the halves are cool enough to handle, scrape the seeds out of each half. Slice each piece in half again for main-dish servings, in thirds for side-dish portions. Mound the hot dressing over the squash and serve, with Black Sauce if you wish.

Cheese-Stuffed Tomatoes

These summer beauties brighten even a sunny day.

SERVES 6 AS A LIGHT MAIN DISH OR SIDE DISH

6 ripe medium tomatoes

1 cup grated Gouda or Monterey jack cheese

1 cup rye bread cubes

½ teaspoon caraway seeds

Paprika to taste

1. Slice the tops off the tomatoes and with a spoon, scoop out the seeds, leaving a thick shell. Turn the tomatoes upside-down to drain for 5 minutes.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Mix together the cheese, bread, and caraway. Stuff the mixture into each of the tomatoes and top each with a liberal dusting of paprika.

4. Transfer the tomatoes to the smoker and cook for 20 to 30 minutes, until the cheese is melted and the tomatoes are warmed through. Remove the tomatoes from the smoker and serve immediately.

Serving Suggestion *Serve these on the side with mixed sausages and spicy brown mustard.*

Barbecued Rice

Baking vegetable-flecked rice in a smoker absorbs an enticing hint of the outdoors.

SERVES 6 AS A SIDE DISH

- 1 cup uncooked white rice
- 1 small green bell pepper, chopped
- 2 celery ribs, chopped
- 1 small onion, chopped
- 2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- Salt to taste
- 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups chicken or beef stock

1 cup canned French-fried onion rings, optional

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. In a smokeproof dish, combine the rice with the bell pepper, celery, onion, Worcestershire sauce, pepper, and salt. Pour the

stock over the rice and cover the dish with foil.

3. Place the dish in the smoker and cook for about 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ hours, until most of the liquid is absorbed. Uncover the rice and cook for an additional 15 to 25 minutes, or until the rice is tender and all the liquid is absorbed.

4. Serve immediately, or cover again and keep warm for up to 1 hour. Stir in the onion rings just before serving, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion We like to serve this rice alongside enchiladas or tacos. Try Mojito Sorbet (page 444) for dessert.



PLEASE DON'T GNAW ON THE BONES

One of the biggest barbecue events of the year, Kansas City's American Royal cooking contest, got off to a slow start in 1979, when it drew 25 competitors and maybe 2,000 spectators. Today the event is so large that the judges alone number 1,000, some of whom are assigned to non-barbecue categories such as side dishes and bone art.

Garlic Cheese Grits

This is an old Southern favorite, reworked for the smoker.

SERVES 6 AS A SIDE DISH

- 1 cup grits (not instant)
- 1 teaspoon salt
- 2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
- ½ medium onion, minced
- 4 garlic cloves, minced
- 2 cups grated sharp Cheddar cheese (about 8 ounces)
- 2 large eggs, lightly beaten
- 1 teaspoon paprika
- ¼ teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Grease a 9 by 11-inch smokeproof pan.

2. In a large saucepan (grits will expand in volume during the cooking), bring 5 cups of water to a boil. Sprinkle in the salt, then the grits, a handful at a time, stirring constantly. Reduce the heat to a simmer and cook for about 20 minutes, until thickened and soft in texture. Stir the grits occasionally as they cook.

3. In a small skillet, warm the butter over medium heat. When it is melted, add the

onion and garlic and cook until they are well softened. Remove from the heat and reserve.

4. Remove the grits from the heat and stir in the onion-garlic mixture, cheese, eggs, paprika, and Tabasco. Pour the grits into the prepared pan.

5. Place the grits in the smoker and cook for 1½ to 1¾ hours, until the mixture is lightly firm and somewhat browned. Remove the grits from the smoker and let sit at room temperature for at least 5 to 10 minutes. Cut into squares or wedges and serve warm or at room temperature.

Serving Suggestion *Top the grits with Warm Mushroom Salad (page 282) or Down-Home Ratatouille (page 267) and serve with mixed greens. For heartier appetites, use the grits as a base for pulled-pork leftovers tossed with your favorite tomato-flavored barbecue sauce; serve with Creamy Coleslaw (page 369) or Lexington Red Slaw (page 370) on the side.*

ROOT, ROOT, ROOT FOR 'Q!'

Barbecuers with bicycles might want to enter the Tour de Pig at the Lexington, North Carolina, Barbecue Festival, held each October. If that doesn't wear you out, you can also compete in the Hawg Run, enter the golf tournament, or try to win the annual cheerleading competition by coming up with an exciting new way to root for barbecue.

Peaches Keen

Some fruits are delicious smoked, particularly peaches, pineapples, bananas, and apples. We usually cook bananas and apples whole, but prefer peaches and pineapples cut into pieces first. In this case, peaches are halved and flavored with a fruity vinegar.

SERVES 6 AS SIDE DISH OR DESSERT

6 ripe but firm peaches, halved but with peel left on

Oil, preferably walnut

2 tablespoons raspberry or other fruit vinegar, or more to taste

Crème fraîche or mascarpone cheese, thinned with a bit of milk, if desired

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the peaches liberally with the oil.

3. Spoon a teaspoon of vinegar into the cavity of each peach half and transfer them to the smoker. Cook for 35 to 45 minutes, until the peaches are heated through and softened. Remove them from the smoker and serve warm, with a bit more vinegar, if you wish, or little dabs of crème fraîche.



Smokin' Waldorf

New York's Waldorf-Astoria Hotel not only created the original Waldorf salad but invented room service to deliver it. Here's a twist, using smoked apples and the tang of lime juice. You can smoke the fruit a day ahead of the salad's preparation if you wish.

SERVES 2 AS A MAIN DISH OR 4 AS A SIDE DISH

2 unpeeled apples

Oil, preferably walnut

2 celery ribs, chopped

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup raisins

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup chopped walnuts

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup mayonnaise

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup plain yogurt

Juice of 2 limes

1 to 2 teaspoons sugar

Lettuce leaves, for garnish (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Coat the apples liberally with the oil and place them in the smoker. Cook for about 1 hour, until the apples are deeply browned and softened. Remove from the smoker and set aside until cool enough to handle. Peel the apples and slice them into bite-size chunks. Combine the apples in a bowl with the celery, raisins, and walnuts.

3. In a small lidded jar, combine the mayonnaise, yogurt, lime juice, and sugar. Pour over the apple mixture. Mix well and refrigerate for at least 30 minutes.

4. Serve cool, on top of lettuce leaves if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *The salad is filling enough for a main course at lunch. Try it with Blue Corn Muffins (page 390).*

A KENTUCKY CRAFTSMAN

In 1918, Charles “Pappy” Foreman gave up blacksmithing to start barbecuing mutton for the folks of Owensboro, Kentucky. Five generations later the Foreman family continues to serve some of the finest mutton in the country at Old Hickory Bar-B-Q, still located near the site of Pappy’s original pit.



Perky Pineapple Relish

Lime, mint, and chile help give this chunky relish a hint of the Southeast—Asia, that is. To speed up the preparation, you can often find already-peeled fresh pineapples with their juice in supermarket produce sections.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS, ENOUGH FOR 4 TO 6 SIDE-DISH SERVINGS

1 medium whole pineapple, peeled and cut lengthwise into spears about 1 inch thick at their widest side (any juice reserved)

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium red onion, minced

2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon soy sauce or Asian fish sauce

2 tablespoons minced fresh mint

$\frac{1}{8}$ teaspoon crushed red chile flakes, or more to taste

1 teaspoon sugar (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Place the pineapple spears in the smoker and cook for 40 to 50 minutes, until lightly smoky and soft. Remove from the smoker and set aside until cool enough to handle. Cut into small, even chunks, and transfer to a bowl. Stir in the remaining

ingredients, adding sugar at the end if needed to balance the flavors. Chill for at least 30 minutes before serving.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the relish alongside grilled or smoked chicken or pork chops or tenderloin, or over rice or couscous.*



Barbecued Bananas

You just might go bananas over these.

SERVES 4 AS A SIDE DISH OR DESSERT

4 unpeeled bananas

Vegetable oil

Brown sugar and ground cinnamon or
caramel sauce, for garnish (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Rub the bananas with a thin coating of oil.
3. Place the bananas in the smoker and cook for 50 to 60 minutes, until the bananas are deeply browned and soft. Remove from the smoker and set aside until cool enough to handle. Peel the bananas and slice them. Serve them warm, topped with a simple sprinkling of brown sugar

and cinnamon or spoonfuls of your favorite caramel sauce.



BBQ TIP Weather can affect not only whether you barbecue but also how you do it. A hot sun increases the cooking temperature inside a smoker and a cold, cloudy day decreases it, requiring adjustments in the amount of fuel used or the time allowed for cooking. Wind is also a factor because of the air circulation inside most smokers. On a blustery day, you have to watch the vents and other draft controls carefully to prevent the wind from causing major fluctuations in the cooking temperature.

Smoke-Scented Salads, Pastas, and Pizzas



It makes no sense to us to spend hours barbecuing for just one meal. You might as well buy socks one at a time. With hardly any more expenditure of effort, time, or beer, you can easily smoke food for several meals at once. There may not be any free lunches on earth, but this two-for comes close.

Typically, when we fire up our big barbecue pit, we cook enough pork butt, beef brisket, and other freezer-friendly goodies to last us for months of sandwiches, salads, hashes, pastas, and the like—and that's what's left after an initial feeding frenzy with friends. Even when we're barbecuing in an outdoor smoker with a smaller capacity, we fill it with sausages, fish fillets, peppers, and other tuck-away items for deliberate leftovers in the days ahead. We don't usually bother with additional ingredients when we're stovetop smoking inside, but that's because the cooking is so simple and quick you can do it every day. We give instructions for making everything from scratch in case you want to prepare the dish on the day of a meal, but we usually try to work ahead of the curve ourselves.

This chapter covers some of the dishes we make with the extra food, each suitable for serving as a main course. Other possibilities such as sandwiches appear frequently in other chapters. Consider all the options as little light bulbs popping up over your head, inspirations to combine all sorts of ingredients in ways of your own. If you're going to earn your stripes as a pitmaster, you need to learn to love your leftovers.

Calico Pepper Salad	281	Smoky Summer Spaghetti	297
Warm Mushroom Salad	282	Robust Chicken-Thyme Ravioli	298
Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter	283	Smoke Stickers	300
Curried Turkey Salad	285	Priest Stranglers with Sausage and Sage	301
Chicken Salad with Sizzling Salsa Vinaigrette	286	Salmon and Basil Lasagna	303
Chicken Salad Supreme	287	Just About Perfect Pizza Crust	304
Port-Glazed Duck Salad	288	White Pizza with Vegetable Confetti	305
Smoked Albacore-Potato Salad	289	Smoked Duck Pizza	306
North Woods Whitefish Salad	291	Smoked Sausage Pizza	307
Chunky Trout Salad	292	Wild Mushroom Calzone	308
A Blast of a BLT Salad	293	Deep-Dish Smoked Mozzarella Pizza	309
Spicy Asian Flank Steak Salad	294	Easy Mexican Pizza	311
Black-Eyed Pea and Ham Macaroni Salad	296		



Calico Pepper Salad

On a long day of barbecuing, nothing is better for lunch than this colorful salad. Like many other dishes in the chapter, it also makes a fine supper prepared in a stovetop smoker.

SERVES 4

3 large bell peppers, preferably 1 each of red, yellow, and green

1 small onion

1 fresh green chile, preferably New Mexican, Anaheim, or poblano (optional)

1 fresh jalapeño or 1 to 2 fresh serranos

3 garlic cloves

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

1 tablespoon garlic-flavored oil

1 tablespoon minced cilantro

½ teaspoon ground cumin

Dashes of red wine vinegar

Salt

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the bell peppers, onion, green chile, jalapeño, and garlic with enough vegetable oil to coat their surfaces lightly.

3. Transfer the vegetables to the smoker, as far from the heat as possible. Cook until they are well softened, 25 to 30 minutes

for the garlic and 65 to 75 minutes for everything else. Remove each of the vegetables as it is done.

4. Place the bell peppers, the green chile, and the jalapeño in a plastic bag to steam. Chop the garlic and onion finely and transfer them to a bowl. Remove the peppers from the bag and pull the skin off of each. Slice the bell peppers and green chile into thin ribbons and add them to the garlic and onion. Mince the jalapeño and add about half of it to the bowl.

5. Stir in the garlic-flavored oil, cilantro, cumin, and a bit of vinegar and salt, and taste. Add more jalapeño or the other seasonings as desired. Serve warm or chilled.

Serving Suggestion Pair this with spaghetti tossed with olive oil, garlic, and fresh chopped tomatoes. Round out the meal with Parmesan-topped crusty bread.

AMAZING GRACE

Barbecue, beer, and blues form a soulful trio at Kansas City's Grand Emporium, which occupies a building that has housed various taverns, a poker room, and a brothel since 1912. It's the only place in the country twice honored by the Blues Foundation as the "Best Blues Club in America." "Amazing" Grace Harris cooks the 'Q' and serves it nightly with some of the hottest licks in town.

Warm Mushroom Salad

Great ideas travel faster than gossip at a church picnic. Pat Wilson, the maker of the Camerons Stovetop Smoker, passed this on to us after picking it up from Allen Frey, a Vermont restaurateur.

SERVES 4 TO 6

12 ounces portobello mushrooms

Coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

DRESSING

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup chopped tomatoes, preferably Roma or Italian plum, or canned crushed tomatoes

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup extra-virgin olive oil

1 tablespoon balsamic vinegar

1 tablespoon chopped fresh basil

1 tablespoon minced fresh parsley

3 garlic cloves, minced

2 scallions, sliced

Salt and coarsely ground black pepper to taste

Lettuce leaves, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Slice the mushrooms into large bite-size pieces and salt them lightly. Arrange the mushrooms on a small grill rack or a piece of heavy-duty foil.

3. Place the mushrooms in the smoker and cook for 15 to 20 minutes, until they ooze liquid and are cooked through.

4. While the mushrooms cook, mix together the dressing ingredients. Add the mushrooms and mix again lightly. Mound on the lettuce leaves and serve warm.

Variation: Southwestern Mushroom-Corn Salad Switch the oil in the dressing to corn or another milder oil, and the vinegar to sherry vinegar. Add $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground cumin or chili powder, if you like. Replace the basil and parsley with the same amount of cilantro. Mix in $\frac{1}{2}$ cup cooked corn kernels with the mushrooms.



BBQ TIP Stovetop smokers cook at a higher temperature than you ordinarily want for barbecue, but they still impart plenty of smoke flavor to porous foods such as vegetables and fish. If you're cooking chicken in this style of smoker, remove the skin and cut the meat into thick strips. For a steak or a similar cut of red meat, smoke it for 15 to 20 minutes and then finish it with high heat over a grill or in a skillet.

BIG TIMES IN A SMALL TOWN

The little Texas town of Meridian (population 1,300) hosts one of the country's biggest invitational cook-offs, the National Championship Barbecue Cook-Off. To qualify for the August contest, you must come in first or second in another major competition during the previous year. Virtually everyone in Meridian, as well as folks nearby, gets involved in the preparations and activities, which also include a car show and a carnival.



Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter

Here's a versatile way to show off your prowess with barbecued vegetables. Serve the platter hot or chilled, use it as a light main dish or a starter for a party, and feel free to vary the mix of veggies and herbs. Experiment with other sauces, too, but do use fresh herbs rather than dried in any that feature the herbs as a main flavor.

SERVES 6 TO 8

SALSA VERDE

- ½ cup chopped fresh parsley
- ¼ cup chopped shallots
- 2 tablespoons chopped fresh mint
- 2 teaspoons chopped fresh rosemary
- 1 cup extra-virgin olive oil
- 1 to 2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice
- 1 to 2 tablespoons chopped capers
- ½ teaspoon anchovy paste (optional)
- Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

- 1 medium to large red bell pepper
- 1 medium to large yellow bell pepper
- 1 large red onion, halved
- 1 medium zucchini
- 6 small red-ripe tomatoes, preferably Roma or Italian plum, halved vertically
- Olive oil
- Coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- Shavings of fresh Parmesan cheese (made with a vegetable peeler) (optional)
- Fresh herb sprigs, for garnish

1. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Mix the sauce ingredients together in a small bowl and reserve at room temperature.
3. Prepare the vegetables. Coat all the vegetables with oil and sprinkle them with salt.
4. Transfer the vegetables to the smoker and cook the tomatoes for about 30 minutes, then remove them. Continue smoking the other vegetables until soft, about 30 more minutes. Slice the peppers into rings or long slices, as you wish, discarding seeds and veins. Remove any papery skins from the onion halves and slice into thin rings. Cut the zucchini into thin rings or long slices.
5. Arrange the vegetables on a large, pretty platter. Drizzle about one-half of the sauce

lightly over the vegetables. Top with a few curls of Parmesan cheese, and tuck in some herb sprigs. Serve at room temperature, or chilled, with the remaining sauce.

Variation: Smoldering Vegetable Pasta

Chop the vegetables and toss with a chunky pasta like penne or rigatoni and mix in enough of the salsa verde to moisten the mixture. Serve warm or at room temperature.



BBQ TIP When making antipasto combinations, or other smoked vegetable dishes, keep in mind that their outdoorsy character is usually enhanced by a bit of an acid—vinegar, lemon juice, salsa, capers—as a tangy counterpoint. It can be added before, during, or after cooking.

ALL IN THE FAMILY

Two cousins from Louisiana—Foster and Woody Phillips—opened competing barbecue stands in the same area of Los Angeles years ago. The cousins remained close friends, but the patrons at Phillips—Foster's place—were known to argue barbecue all night with a loyal customer of Woody's. It's all in the family when it comes to barbecue.

Curried Turkey Salad

Both of us love this sweet-tangy hot-cool explosion of flavors. If you don't have turkey leftovers for this, or a way to smoke the turkey quickly and easily, you should even consider sneaking in a good supermarket version.

SERVES 6

Three 7-ounce to 8-ounce boneless turkey breast fillet sections

1 tablespoon curry powder

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 cup minced red onion

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup flaked coconut

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup chopped dried apricots or yellow raisins

CURRIED SALAD DRESSING

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup mayonnaise

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup plain yogurt, or additional mayonnaise

2 tablespoons honey

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons curry powder

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup salted roasted cashews

Mixed salad greens, for garnish

1. At least 3 hours and up to the night before you plan to serve the salad, mix the curry powder together with the salt. Rub the mixture on the turkey breast sections, and refrigerate covered for at least 1 hour.

2. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the turkey from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. Transfer the turkey to the smoker. Smoke until cooked through, with clear juices when a skewer is inserted, about 50 to 60 minutes.

5. When the turkey is cool enough to handle, pull the meat into shreds or cut it into bite-size chunks. Discard the skin and bones, or better yet, save them for stock. Combine the turkey in a large bowl with the onion, coconut, and raisins.

6. In a small bowl, stir together the mayonnaise, yogurt, honey, lemon juice, and curry powder. Mix the dressing into the turkey mixture. Refrigerate the salad for at least 1 hour and up to overnight. Shortly before serving time, add the cashews to the salad.

7. Mound the salad on a bed of greens and serve chilled.

Chicken Salad with Sizzling Salsa Vinaigrette

If this zippy salad could sing, it would choose a mariachi tune.

SERVES 4

4 boneless skinless chicken breast halves,
pounded to 1/2-inch thickness

Olive oil

Juice of 2 limes

Salt

SIZZLING SALSA VINAIGRETTE

1/4 cup plus 2 tablespoons of your favorite
spicy salsa

1/4 cup plus 2 tablespoons olive oil

2 to 3 tablespoons white vinegar

Salt to taste

1/4 cup minced mild onion

1/4 cup chopped celery

3 tablespoons minced cilantro

Romaine or other crisp lettuce, shredded

Tortilla chips (optional)

1. Rub the breasts with enough oil to coat well, then spoon lime juice over them and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Whisk together the vinaigrette ingredients in a small bowl, adding vinegar to taste, and then salt if needed.

4. If you want to baste the chicken (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), set aside sev-

eral tablespoons of the dressing for that purpose.

5. Drain the chicken and salt it lightly. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 25 to 30 minutes, or until cooked through. In a wood-burning pit, turn the breasts after 15 minutes and mop with the reserved dressing. With other smokers, don't worry about turning the breasts or mopping while cooking. When done, set the breasts aside briefly, until cool enough to handle, then tear into bite-size shreds. (The chicken can be prepared to this point a day ahead, covered, and refrigerated.)

6. Combine the chicken in a bowl with onion, celery, and cilantro. Add as much of the vinaigrette as needed to bind the salad. Pile the salad on romaine, garnish with chips around the edges, if you wish, and serve.



BBQ TIP The kind of sawdust or chips you use in a stovetop smoker makes a noticeable difference in the level of smoky flavor you get. Use alder for the lightest touch and pecan or mesquite for the heaviest dose.

Chicken Salad Supreme

This salad is a veritable feast of fruit and poultry. Smoke the chicken as described in the previous recipe if you wish to prepare it from scratch for the dish.

SERVES 4 TO 6

DRESSING

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup honey

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup white vinegar

2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice

1 tablespoon poppy seeds

1 teaspoon dry mustard

1 teaspoon grated onion

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt

1 cup vegetable oil

$1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds chilled smoked chicken, chunked

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup diced cantaloupe

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup diced honeydew melon

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup scallions, sliced

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon minced lemon zest

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup sliced almonds, toasted

Lettuce leaves

Fresh strawberries and lemon wedges, for garnish

1. In a food processor, briefly process the dressing ingredients, except the oil, until combined. Pour in the oil and continue processing until thick.

2. In a medium-size bowl, mix the chicken, melons, scallions, and lemon zest with about two-thirds of the dressing. Refrigerate if desired.

3. Stir the almonds into the salad shortly before serving. Mound the salad on the lettuce leaves and garnish with strawberries and lemons. Spoon additional dressing over the top, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion Impress your mom when she comes to visit. Serve Bronzed Artichokes (page 264) first, followed by this salad and Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389). She'll be dazzled.

ROCKET SCIENCE

Some of the big barbecue competitions are international in scope. That wasn't enough for Perry, Oklahoma, which used to host Oklahoma Joe's Interplanetary B-B-Q Cook-Off each May. The grand champion team of the galactic event in the year we attended was Tim & Todd's Most Excellent Adventure, a crew that spent its spare time launching water balloons into space.

Port-Glazed Duck Salad

This little gem of a salad requires a few steps, but each is easy, and can be spread over a couple of days if you wish.

SERVES 4 TO 6

4 individual skin-on duck breasts, about 5 ounces each

1 cup port

½ cup cider vinegar or red wine vinegar

2 tablespoons Dijon mustard

PORT SAUCE

Juice and zest from 1 orange

Juice and zest from ½ lemon

7 tablespoons port

7 tablespoons cherry jelly or jam

2 tablespoons minced shallots

1 teaspoon Dijon mustard

SALAD

½ small red cabbage, shredded

2 tablespoons sherry vinegar

¼ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

1. At least 4 hours and up to the night before you plan to serve the salad, place the duck breasts in a steamer and steam them for 25 to 30 minutes.

2. While the breasts steam, prepare the marinade, mixing the port, vinegar, and mustard in a plastic bag or shallow, non-reactive dish.

3. Remove the breasts from the steamer and let them cool briefly to room temperature. Add the breasts to the marinade and refrigerate for at least 2 hours.

4. In a small saucepan, combine the sauce ingredients and simmer over medium-low heat for 15 minutes. Remove the sauce from the heat, strain it, and reserve at room temperature.

5. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

6. Remove the duck from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

7. Drain the breasts and put them in the smoker, skin sides up. Brush the

MEMPHIS MEMORIES

One of the most legendary Bar-B-Q joints in the country, Leonard's in Memphis got its start in 1922 when Leonard Heuberger opened a small stand and delivered barbecue by bicycle. Heuberger usually gets the credit for inventing the Memphis barbecue sandwich—pork, coleslaw, and red sauce served in a bun—and the Leonard's of today still features a good version of the original.

breasts with a little of the sauce. Cook the duck until it's well-done and smoky, but still moist, about 65 to 75 minutes. Cool the duck to room temperature, then refrigerate for at least 1 hour and up to overnight.

8. In a bowl, combine the cabbage, vinegar, and salt with 2 teaspoons of the sauce.

Refrigerate the mixture until you are ready to serve the duck.

9. Arrange equal portions of the cabbage on individual plates. Slice the duck breasts thin and arrange fanned slices of the meat over the cabbage. Drizzle the sauce over the meat, reserving some to pass on the side if you wish.

Smoked Albacore-Potato Salad

A West Coast favorite for smoking, albacore brims with fish oils that flavor it richly. We use it more frequently for smoking than the more delicate yellowfin tuna.

SERVES 4

10-ounce albacore steak or other tuna steak

ROASTED GARLIC MASH

1 whole head of garlic

1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1 teaspoon olive oil or vegetable oil

White wine vinegar

DILL VINAIGRETTE

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup extra-virgin olive oil

2 tablespoons white wine vinegar

2 to 3 tablespoons minced fresh dill

2 teaspoons Dijon mustard

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

$1\frac{1}{2}$ pounds small potatoes, halved or neatly chunked if larger than bite-size, steamed until tender

4 lightly packed cups crisp greens, like shredded romaine

Briny black or green olives

1. Break the garlic head apart into individual cloves, but don't peel them. Place them in a cast-iron or other heavy skillet and dry-roast over medium heat until soft and brown, about 6 to 8 minutes, shaking or stirring as needed to color evenly. Peel the garlic (a quick task once roasted) and transfer to a small bowl. Using the back of a large fork, mash the garlic lightly. Add the salt and oil and continue mashing until you have a rough purée.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Place the albacore steak in a shallow, nonreactive dish and rub it with the paste. Cover the steak and allow it to sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

4. Heat a skillet over high heat with a thin film of oil. Sear the steak quickly on both sides. Give the steak a healthy splash of vinegar, in place of a mop.

5. Transfer the steak to the smoker. Cook the tuna to desired doneness, 20 to 25 minutes for medium-rare. Avoid overcooking the tuna. When cool enough to handle, cut into thin slices or bite-size pieces.

6. Place the potatoes in a large bowl. In a small bowl, whisk together the vinaigrette ingredients and toss about two-thirds of it with the potatoes. Arrange the greens on a platter and top with the potatoes and then the tuna. Drizzle the remaining vinaigrette over the tuna and greens. Tuck olives in and around, and serve.

Variation: Flank Steak-Potato Salad
Substitute simply seasoned smoked flank steak for the albacore, then leave the dill out of the dressing.

TAYLOR-MADE BARBECUE

Louie Mueller's in Taylor, Texas, looks and smells barbecue. Almost a century old now, the barn-like building features a huge brick pit with a two-story chimney poking out of the ceiling. You line up at the pit, place your order, and carry your 'Q,' wrapped in butcher paper, to a table. Dining room renovations have spoiled some of the old atmosphere, but you certainly won't mistake this place for a fast-food joint.



North Woods Whitefish Salad

If you like smoked Great Lakes whitefish from the deli, as almost everyone does, you'll really relish your own home-smoked version.

SERVES 4

WHITEFISH BRINE

- ½ cup kosher salt
- ¼ cup packed brown sugar
- 2 teaspoons freshly ground black pepper
- 1½-pound chunk whitefish, sablefish, sea bass, or pike

SALAD

- ½ cup mayonnaise
- 6 tablespoons sour cream
- 1 medium celery stalk, chopped fine
- 2 tablespoons minced dill pickle
- 2 tablespoons minced red onion
- ½ teaspoon prepared horseradish
- Freshly ground black pepper to taste
- Watercress or mixed greens (optional)

1. Prepare the brine, stirring together the ingredients in a medium bowl, and pour in 1½ cups of water. Stir to dissolve. Place the whitefish in a zipper-lock plastic bag and pour the brine over the fish. Refrigerate it for at least 2 hours and up to 8 hours. (The saltiness and sweetness will become more pronounced the longer the fish marinates in the brine.)

2. Drain the fish and let it sit uncovered at room temperature for 15 to 30 minutes.
3. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F. Place the fish on the cooking grate as far from the fire as possible. Cook for 40 to 50 minutes, until the fish flakes throughout.
4. When cool enough to handle, flake the fish into a bowl, discarding the skin and the many bones. Stir in the salad ingredients. Chill for at least an hour and up to a couple of days. Serve mounded onto plates, surrounded by watercress, if you wish.

Variation: North Woods Whitefish Salad Platter Make a hearty deli platter for a lazy Sunday by arranging the salad with store-bought lox or nova, bagels, rye bread, tomato and onion slices, lemon chunks, capers, and fresh dill sprigs, if available. If you need dessert, rugalach cookies are just the ticket.

Chunky Trout Salad

Our favorite freshwater fish for smoking, trout struts its stuff in this simple salad, enlivened by a tangy horseradish vinaigrette and colorful bits of fruit.

SERVES 4

DRESSING

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup olive oil

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil

$2\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons white wine vinegar

2 tablespoons minced shallots

1 teaspoon prepared horseradish

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon Dijon mustard

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon Worcestershire sauce

$\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Pinch of ground white pepper

Four 8-ounce butterflied boned trout

7 to 8 cups mixed salad greens

1 small red-skinned apple, cut into bite-size chunks

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup halved seedless grapes, green, red, or a combination

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup chopped pecans, toasted, or chile-coated pecans

2 tablespoons minced shallots

Freshly ground black pepper to taste

1. About 2 hours before you plan to smoke the trout, combine the dressing ingredients

in a blender and purée until smooth.

2. Place the trout, lying open, in a shallow, nonreactive dish. Drizzle each fish with about 1 tablespoon of the dressing. Cover the trout and refrigerate about $1\frac{1}{2}$ hours.

3. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the trout from the refrigerator and let them sit covered at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

5. Transfer the fish to the smoker, skin side down. Cook the trout until opaque and easily flaked, about 35 to 45 minutes. When the fish is cool enough to handle, break it into uniform chunks or chill it in the refrigerator for at least 1 hour if you wish to serve it cold.

6. Toss the greens with enough dressing to coat the leaves lightly. Arrange the greens evenly among four plates. Place equal portions of the trout over the greens. Top the salad with a scattering of apples, grapes, pecans, shallots, and pepper, drizzle with any remaining dressing, and serve.



A TWO-STEPPING EVENING

Fort Worth is a Texas-size party town. If you're visiting, head first to Angelo's, a barn of a joint where the barbecue, beer, and brouhaha seem as natural together as a pig and a pit. When your belly is brimming, move along to Billy Bob's Texas, "the world's largest honky tonk," a 127,000-square-foot entertainment arena with 32 bar stations.



A Blast of a BLT Salad

When tomatoes are ripe and juicy in late summer, and you've got good smokehouse bacon in the fridge, few foods match a BLT in bold flavor. This salad is in the limited competition.

SERVES 4

1 large mild onion

Vegetable oil

6 slices smoky slab bacon

2 large thick slices French or sourdough bread, in ½-inch cubes

6 tablespoons mayonnaise

2 tablespoons buttermilk or plain yogurt

1 teaspoon good quality lemon-pepper seasoning

Salt and freshly cracked black pepper (optional)

2 medium red-ripe tomatoes, chopped in ½-inch cubes

5 cups torn iceberg lettuce, well-chilled

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Slice the onion in half and rub or spray a thin coat of oil over the halves.

3. Transfer the onion to the smoker and cook for 45 to 55 minutes, until tender. Remove the onion halves from the smoker and chop them neatly in small bite-size bits. (The onion can be smoked a day or two ahead, covered and refrigerated until you need it.)

4. Slice the bacon into 1-inch pieces and fry in a large heavy skillet over medium heat until crisp. Remove with a slotted spoon. Pour off bacon drippings as needed until just a thick coating remains in the skillet. Stir in the bread cubes, coating

them evenly with the drippings and sauté them over medium heat until lightly browned and crisp. Reserve the bread cubes.

5. For the dressing, stir together the mayonnaise, buttermilk, and lemon-pepper seasoning. Taste, and add salt and pepper if needed.

6. Toss about $\frac{1}{4}$ cup of the dressing with the lettuce and the smoked onion and arrange it on a platter. Top with tomatoes, bread cubes, and bacon, and toss again lightly. Serve immediately with the remaining dressing on the side.

Spicy Asian Flank Steak Salad

This is a salad a carnivore can love.

SERVES 4

PAN-ASIAN PANDEMONIUM

- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup roughly chopped scallions
- 2 walnut-size chunks fresh ginger, peeled
- $\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 tablespoon Asian chile-garlic paste
- 3 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
- 2 tablespoons soy sauce
- 1 tablespoon Asian fish sauce

1 flank steak, about $1\frac{1}{4}$ pounds

LIME-SOY MOP (OPTIONAL)

- 2 tablespoons Pan-Asian Pandemonium
- 2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
- 2 tablespoons soy sauce
- 5 cups mixed greens
- 2 medium carrots, shredded
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup lightly packed fresh mint leaves
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup lightly packed cilantro leaves

QUICK THAI DRESSING

- 2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
- 1 tablespoon Asian fish sauce
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons sugar

1. The night before you plan to barbecue, prepare the Pan-Asian seasoning paste. Place the ingredients in a blender or food processor and process until a smooth thick purée is formed. If you plan to baste the meat (see page 49, "To Mop or Not"), set aside 2 tablespoons of the paste for the mop. Rub the flank steak with the remaining paste. Place the flank steak in a plastic bag or shallow dish and refrigerate overnight.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Remove the steak from the refrigerator and let it sit at room temperature for 25 minutes.

4. If you are using the mop, combine the reserved seasoning paste with the lime juice, soy sauce, and $\frac{1}{2}$ cup water in a small saucepan over low heat.

5. Transfer the steak to the smoker. Mop once before closing the smoker and again after 25 to 30 minutes in a wood-burning pit, or as appropriate for your style of

smoker. Cook for a total of 45 to 55 minutes, until the meat is rare to medium-rare. Let the steak rest for 5 or 10 minutes before cutting.

6. While the steak is resting, combine the greens, carrots, mint, and cilantro on a platter. Stir together the dressing ingredients and toss with the greens mixture. Slice the steak thinly, across the grain, arrange over the greens mixture, and serve.

NO PITFALLS HERE

One of the best pits in Virginia is called a “pitt” because the sign painter couldn’t spell. You may wonder at first if the same fellow painted the orange and yellow building at Pierce’s Pitt Bar-B-Que in Lightfoot, but after one of the succulent pork sandwiches, you’ll be an empathetic shade of Day-Glo yourself.



Black-Eyed Pea and Ham Macaroni Salad

Got a potluck dinner coming up? Impress your friends with this.

SERVES 4

One 12-ounce fully cooked ham steak, about 1/2 inch thick

1 teaspoon yellow mustard

1 tablespoon packed brown sugar or Sweet Sensation (page 30)

Freshly cracked black pepper to taste

12 ounces small shell macaroni, cooked according to package directions

1 1/2 to 2 cups fresh-cooked or canned black-eyed peas, drained

3/4 cup chopped celery

1/2 cup chopped sweet or other mild onion

1/2 cup chopped red bell pepper

6 tablespoons corn oil, preferably refined, or vegetable oil

3 tablespoons cider vinegar

A few splashes of pepper vinegar or Tabasco or other hot sauce

1/4 cup minced fresh parsley

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the ham steak with mustard, and then with brown sugar and pepper. Let sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

3. Transfer the ham to the smoker. Cook until the sugar has melted onto the surface

and the ham is heated through and well-perfumed with smoke, about 25 to 35 minutes.

4. Stir together in a large bowl the macaroni, black-eyed peas, celery, onion, and bell pepper. When the ham steak is ready, cut it into 1/4-inch cubes, discarding fat and any bone. Add the ham to the macaroni mixture.

5. In a small bowl, whisk together the oil, vinegar, and a little pepper vinegar, and pour over the salad. Toss to combine. Chill for 30 minutes or up to overnight. Stir the parsley into the salad shortly before serving chilled.



BBQ TIP With fully cooked meats, like Canadian bacon or ham steak, you're just adding extra flavor with the smoke. The process goes quickly when the cuts are thin and small, eliminating any need for basting.

Smoky Summer Spaghetti

With their deeply flavored resonance, smoked ingredients often combine wonderfully with pasta. Here's a simple but soulful vegetable spaghetti where the tomato and bell pepper can be smoked in about the time it takes to get the noodles ready.

SERVES 4 OR MORE

2 large red-ripe tomatoes, halved
2 red bell peppers, halved and seeded
¼ cup olive oil
1½ tablespoons lemon juice
1 small bread slice
1 pound spaghetti or bucatini
Dried red pepper flakes (optional)
¾ teaspoon salt, or more to taste
Several tablespoons minced fresh herbs, such as basil, Italian parsley, oregano, thyme, or a combination
Several tablespoons freshly grated Pecorino Romano or Parmesan cheese

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Rub the tomatoes and bell peppers with enough oil to coat their surfaces lightly. Place the tomatoes in a smokeproof dish, or make a little tray for them out of doubled heavy-duty aluminum foil.

3. Transfer the vegetables to the smoker. Cook until they are softened but the bell peppers still have a bit of toothsome bite, 20 to 25 minutes.

4. While the vegetables smoke, heat water for the pasta and cook it according to the package directions.

5. When the vegetables are ready, plop them into a blender, add the remaining oil, the lemon juice, and bread, and purée. Stir in the chile flakes and salt. Toss with the pasta in a large bowl, and scatter herbs and cheese over. Serve warm or at room temperature.

Variation: Faux Bolognese Spaghetti For a heartier rendition, add ½ pound or more browned ground pork, or a mixture of ground pork and bulk Italian sausage, to the vegetable sauce before serving.

READ ALL ABOUT IT

Published in Douglas, Georgia, the National Barbecue News (800-385-0002, www.barbecuenews.com) is a newspaper-style monthly that covers the whole country. Readers get news and views on cook-offs, recipes, restaurants, smokers, and more, including a few barbecue jokes.

Robust Chicken-Thyme Ravioli

Stuffing pasta with your own mix of lightly smoked chicken and fresh herbs will blow away any version you can buy ready-made. Plus, it's easy to make your own ravioli from wonton wrappers available in nearly every supermarket today.

SERVES 4

ROASTED GARLIC MASH

- 1 head of garlic
- 1 tablespoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- 1 teaspoon olive oil or vegetable oil
- 2 boneless, skinless chicken breast halves, about 5 to 6 ounces each, pounded lightly

RAVIOLI SAUCE

- 1 teaspoon Roasted Garlic Mash
- 2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup chicken stock
- 1 tablespoon minced fresh thyme or lemon thyme
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup ricotta cheese
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup chicken stock
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup coarsely chopped walnuts
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup grated Pecorino Romano cheese
- 2 tablespoons heavy cream
- 1 tablespoon minced fresh thyme or lemon thyme
- Salt to taste
- 32 wonton wrappers
- Grated Pecorino Romano cheese and toasted walnut pieces or halves, for garnish
- Sprigs of fresh thyme or lemon thyme (optional), for garnish

1. Break the garlic head apart into individual cloves, but don't peel them. Place them in a cast-iron or other heavy skillet and dry-roast over medium heat until soft and brown, about 6 to 8 minutes, shaking or stirring as needed to color evenly. Peel the garlic (a quick task once roasted) and transfer to a small bowl. Using the back of a large fork, mash the garlic lightly. Add the salt and oil and continue mashing until you have a rough purée. Reserve 1 teaspoon of the paste for the sauce. Coat the chicken breasts with the remaining paste, wrap them in plastic, and let them sit at room temperature for 20 minutes.

2. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook it until firm and the juices run clear, about 30 to 35 minutes.

4. While the chicken cooks, make the sauce. Heat the oil in a small skillet over medium heat. Add the remaining sauce ingredients and the reserved paste and simmer the mixture for several minutes to combine the flavors. Reserve the sauce.

5. When the chicken is cool enough to handle, tear each breast into several pieces and place it in a food processor. Pulse lightly, until the chicken is in fine shreds. You should have about 1½ cups of chicken.

6. Transfer the chicken to a bowl and mix in the ricotta cheese, chicken stock, walnuts, Romano cheese, cream, thyme, and salt.

7. Spoon 2 tablespoons of filling onto a wonton wrapper. Wet the edges of that wrapper and those of a second wrapper. Top the filling with the second wrapper and press down firmly on each side to make a tight seal. If available, use a ravioli crimper or other dough trimmer to help seal the edges. Set the ravioli on a platter to

partially dry while you form the remaining pasta. Repeat with the remaining filling and wonton wrappers. You should end up with about 16 large ravioli. (The ravioli can be cooked immediately or made one day ahead and refrigerated.)

8. Heat several quarts of salted water in a large saucepan. When the water comes to a rolling boil, gently slide in the ravioli. Cook just 3 to 5 minutes, until the dough is tender and no longer gummy. Drain the ravioli and transfer them to individual plates or shallow bowls.

9. Quickly reheat the sauce and spoon it equally over the ravioli. Garnish each serving with cheese, a sprinkling of walnuts, and if you wish, thyme sprigs. Serve hot.



THE RIGHT PERSPECTIVE

Gary Wells, one of the founders of the Kansas City Barbeque Society, has always insisted that no one should take the organization too seriously. His intent is having fun. You would know people were getting overly earnest, he once said, when membership is noted in obituaries.

Smoke Stickers

Our favorite way to use barbecued poultry leftovers is in Asian stuffed dumplings called pot stickers. Restaurants usually serve them as an appetizer, but we often have them as a light main course with a salad, perhaps Asian Vegetable Slaw.

SERVES 2 AS A MAIN COURSE OR 4 OR MORE AS AN APPETIZER

SIMPLE CHINESE FIVE-SPICE MEDLEY

- 2 tablespoons five-spice powder
- 2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 2 boneless, skinless chicken breast halves, about 5 ounces each, pounded lightly
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup rice vinegar or white vinegar

SMOKE-STICKER SAUCE

- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon cornstarch
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup chicken stock
- 2 tablespoons dry sherry
- 1 tablespoon Simple Chinese Five-Spice Medley
- 2 teaspoons soy sauce
- 1 teaspoon hoisin sauce or Hoisin BBQ Sauce (page 364)
- 1 teaspoon rice vinegar or white vinegar
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup chopped bok choy, napa cabbage, or spinach
- 2 scallions, chopped
- 2 teaspoons minced fresh ginger
- 1 garlic clove, minced
- 1 tablespoon soy sauce
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon to $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon Chinese chile paste
- 1 egg white
- 2 dozen wonton wrappers, preferably round
- 2 tablespoons peanut oil
- Thin sliced scallion rings (optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Combine the rub ingredients in a small bowl. Rub the breasts with the mixture and let them sit at room temperature for about 20 minutes.
3. Drizzle the breasts with about one-third of the vinegar. Transfer the chicken to the smoker and cook for 25 to 30 minutes, or until cooked through. In a wood-burning pit, turn the breasts after 15 minutes and mop again. With other smokers, don't worry about turning the breasts or mopping while cooking—just drizzle the breasts with more vinegar as soon as you remove them from the smoker.
4. While the chicken smokes, prepare the sauce. Combine the cornstarch in a medium bowl with a tablespoon of the stock. When combined, add the remaining stock and rest of the sauce ingredients, and reserve.
5. When cool enough to handle, pull the chicken into large shreds and transfer to a food processor. Add the bok choy, scallions, ginger, garlic, soy, chile paste, and egg white. Process until well combined.

(The filling can be made a day ahead to this point, covered and chilled. Return it to room temperature before proceeding.)

6. Place a heaping teaspoon of the filling in the center of a wonton wrapper, moisten the edges, and seal it in a half-moon shape. (Square wrappers can be folded into triangles.) Repeat with remaining filling and wrappers.

7. Warm the oil in a 12-inch skillet over high heat. When very hot, add the pot stickers and fry them on one side for 2 minutes, or until the bottoms are deep golden brown. Give the sauce a stir and pour it over the pot stickers. Immediately

cover the skillet and reduce the heat to medium-low. Cook for 2 more minutes, then uncover again, and raise the heat to high. Cook another minute or 2, until the sauce is thick and clings to the pot stickers. Serve immediately, sprinkled with the scallions, if you wish.



BBQ TIP If you're also a big fan of pot stickers, invest in an inexpensive dumpling press, available in many cookstores and Asian markets. We're not usually enamored of gadgets, but this one earns its keep.

Priest Stranglers with Sausage and Sage

Italians have memorable names for many dishes and ingredients. One that certainly makes the cut is “priest stranglers,” the common name for a pasta known more formally as *strozzapreti*. The long, toothsome, twisted shape makes it difficult to eat and talk at the same time without choking, foiling preachers and lecturers of all kinds.

SERVES 4 OR MORE

4 Italian sausages, approximately 4 ounces each

3 tablespoons olive oil, plus additional for coating the sausages

12 ounces *strozzapreti* or penne or rotini pasta

1 to 2 tablespoons minced fresh sage

Salt (optional)

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup grated Parmesan or Pecorino Romano cheese

Fresh sage sprigs (optional)

1. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Coat the sausages with oil and transfer them to the smoker. Smoke until cooked through and still juicy, about 1 to 1¼ hours.

3. Shortly before you expect the sausage to be done, cook the strozzapreti according to the package directions. Drain the pasta, reserving several tablespoons of the cooking water. Transfer the pasta to a large bowl. Toss it with the oil and sage. Slice the sausage into thin rounds and add to the pasta. Salt if you wish, and stir in some of the reserved pasta water if the mixture seems dry. Scatter the cheese over the top, garnish with sage sprigs, and serve.

Variation: Priest Stranglers with Sausage, Sage, Tomatoes, and Cream Oil two or three Italian plum tomatoes and place them in the smoker with the sausage. Remove them when they are tender, with split skins, about 25 to 30 minutes. When cool enough to handle, peel and chop them, and add them and 2 tablespoons of heavy cream to the warm pasta and sausage when ready. Some sautéed mushrooms can be a nice addition too, if you like.

FAMOUS HOT-GUT SAUCE

In 1995, the Texas legislature officially proclaimed the little town of Elgin as the “Sausage Capital” of the state. The burg’s Southside Market established the local reputation beginning in 1882, when the founding butcher started delivering his “hot gut” sausage door to door. Insurance companies recently forced the business out of its original sawdust-floored location into a new building, but the Market still sells its own spectacular barbecued sausage, as spicy and juicy as any you’ll find. For mail order, call 512-281-4650 or go on the Internet to www.sausage.cc.



Salmon and Basil Lasagna

If your image of lasagna is a heavy dish of cheese, meat, and red sauce, try this version for a surprise. Splendidly extravagant for special occasions, the dish stacks layers of salmon with wide ribbons of pasta and a creamy basil-laced cheese sauce. We developed the idea originally for our book *Sublime Smoke* (1996, Harvard Common Press) and it has remained a personal favorite ever since.

SERVES 4

12-ounce salmon fillet

Olive oil

1 tablespoon minced basil

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

LASAGNA SAUCE

1 tablespoon extra-virgin olive oil

1 tablespoon minced shallots

2 garlic cloves, minced

1 cup heavy cream

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup sour cream

$\frac{1}{8}$ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

$\frac{1}{8}$ teaspoon ground white pepper

LASAGNA

2 ounces lasagna noodles

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup minced fresh basil

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese

1. Coat the salmon with oil. Sprinkle the flesh side of the fish with the basil and salt. Cover the fillet and let it sit at room temperature for 30 minutes.

2. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.

3. Transfer the salmon to the smoker and smoke until just cooked through, about 30 to 40 minutes.

4. While the salmon smokes, make the sauce. Warm the oil in a small heavy saucepan over medium heat. Add the shallots and garlic, and sauté them until soft but not browned. Stir in the rest of the ingredients and adjust the heat to allow the mixture to simmer steadily. Cook the sauce, stirring frequently, until reduced by one-third. Keep the sauce warm.

5. Cook the lasagna noodles according to the package directions. Drain the noodles, cut them into thirds, and reserve.

6. Flake the salmon into bite-size chunks. (The salmon can be smoked a day in advance and refrigerated. Reheat it before proceeding.)

7. To assemble the lasagna, spoon about 1 tablespoon of sauce on each plate. You will need 12 pasta strips altogether, so pick out the dozen most attractive. Lay a strip over the sauce on each plate and top with about 1 ounce of the salmon. Spoon sauce thinly

over the fish and scatter about 1 teaspoon of basil and cheese over the sauce. Repeat with a second layer. For the top layer of the lasagna, again layer the pasta strip

followed by the salmon. Top with equal portions of the remaining sauce, basil, and cheese. Serve hot.

Just About Perfect Pizza Crust

This is the crust we recommend for the pizzas that follow. It's our favorite style—thin, crunchy, and full of flavor even before you put on toppings. Make a few extras for the freezer, if you wish.

MAKES TWO THIN 10- TO 11-INCH PIZZA CRUSTS

1 envelope active dry yeast (about 2½ teaspoons)

½ teaspoon sugar

⅔ cup lukewarm water, 105° F to 115° F

Approximately 2 cups bread flour

¼ cup stone-ground cornmeal

1½ teaspoons coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

2 tablespoons olive oil

1. Combine the yeast and sugar with the water in a small bowl and let sit for a few minutes until foamy. With a heavy-duty mixer or in a food processor, mix the yeast with a scant 2 cups of flour and the rest of the dough ingredients for several minutes, until the dough becomes smooth and elastic.

2. Transfer the dough to a floured pastry board or counter, and knead at least 2 more minutes, adding in another tablespoon or two of flour if needed to get a mass that is no longer sticky. Dough on the dry side is a bit more challenging to work with, but yields a crisper crust. Form the dough into

a ball, then place it in a greased bowl and cover with a damp cloth. Set the dough in a warm, draft-free spot and let it rise until doubled in size, about 1 hour. Punch down the dough on the floured pastry board and let it rest for 10 minutes. Roll out the dough into two thin disks, about ⅛-inch thick and 10 to 11 inches in diameter, stretching and prodding it with your fingers too. (A lip isn't necessary on the dough because our pizza toppings tend to be light mixtures without much liquid.)

3. The dough is ready to use at this point, but also can be saved for later in the refrigerator or freezer. The crusts can be stacked on a baking sheet covered with waxed paper, with more waxed paper layered between the crusts. Do the same if you plan to refrigerate or freeze the crusts. If freezing, first chill the crusts on the baking sheet for about 30 minutes to firm the dough, then wrap the crusts and freeze. Bring the crusts back to room temperature before proceeding.

White Pizza with Vegetable Confetti

A white pizza has no tomatoes or sauce, but it's still full of spunk when dressed well. If you want to embellish it further, try chunks of hot-smoked salmon and a sprinkling of chives.

MAKES TWO THIN-CRUSTED 10- TO 11-INCH PIZZAS

$\frac{1}{2}$ each of a medium red bell pepper, yellow bell pepper, and green bell pepper

1 small red onion, halved

Olive oil

CHEESE TOPPING

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups grated mozzarella cheese, softened

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese, softened

2 garlic cloves, minced

3 tablespoons minced fresh basil or
1 $\frac{1}{2}$ tablespoons dried basil

1 teaspoon dried oregano

$\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 teaspoon dried hot red chile flakes

Just About Perfect Pizza Crust (page 304)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the bell peppers and onion with enough oil to coat their surfaces lightly.

3. Transfer the vegetables to the smoker, as far from the heat as possible. Cook until they are well softened, about 35 to 45 minutes. Remove each of the vegetables as it is done.

4. Place the bell peppers in a plastic bag to steam. Chop the onion finely and reserve.

Remove the peppers from the bag, pull the skin off of each, and dice them. Keep the toppings at room temperature, or bag and refrigerate for later use.

5. Preheat the oven to 500°F. Use a pizza stone, if available, placing it in the oven before you begin to heat it.

6. Stir together the cheese topping ingredients.

7. If not using a pizza stone and peel, place the dough rounds on greased pizza pans or baking sheets. Brush about 1 tablespoon of oil over each crust. Top with vegetable bits and then the cheese mixture. Bake for 10 to 12 minutes, until the crust is crisp with a few browned edges and the cheese is melted. Slice the pizzas into wedges and serve immediately.



BBQ TIP Most of our pizza recipes in this chapter make two pizzas, medium to large in diameter but thin in crust and light on toppings. A hungry person can eat one by itself for a full meal, but they will go further when other dishes are being served.

Smoked Duck Pizza

This fancy pizza also works best without tomatoes. Don't let the fruit preserves put you off. This is really good.

MAKES TWO THIN-CRUSTED 10- TO 11-INCH PIZZAS

2 boneless skinless duck breast halves, 4 to 5 ounces each

Olive oil

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

CHEESE TOPPING

½ cup grated mozzarella cheese, softened

½ cup crumbled creamy fresh goat cheese, softened

½ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese, softened

1 garlic clove, minced

½ teaspoon dried hot red chile flakes

¼ cup fig preserves

Just About Perfect Pizza Crust (page 304)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Coat the duck breasts lightly with oil, sprinkle with salt and pepper, and let sit at room temperature for 25 to 30 minutes.

3. Transfer the breasts to the smoker, and cook until the duck is rare to medium-rare, about 25 to 35 minutes. When done, slice thinly across the grain, or cover and chill unsliced for later use.

4. Preheat the oven to 500°F. Use a pizza stone, if available, placing it in the oven before you begin to heat it.

5. Stir together the cheese topping ingredients.

6. If not using a pizza stone and peel, place the dough rounds on greased pizza pans or baking sheets. Brush about 1 tablespoon of oil over each crust. Top with the duck breast slices and then the cheese mixture. Dot with the fig preserves. Bake for 10 to 12 minutes, until the crust is crisp with a few browned edges and the cheese is melted. Slice the pizzas into wedges and serve immediately.

NO COOKING IN THE FOUNTAIN

Americans are moving outdoors. We use to live in our houses, but now one of the biggest trends in home design is the "outdoor room." We're amazed when we attend the annual trade show of the Hearth, Patio & Barbecue Association with everything that's available to furnish and accessorize a patio. The options range from pool tables to flaming fountains.

Smoked Sausage Pizza

It almost sounds too simple, but get a good, spicy sausage and you'll end up with a marvelous pizza. If you want more on top, consider the addition of smoked mussels or clams. We use sliced fresh tomatoes on the pizza instead of a customary tomato sauce, which tends to undercut the flavor of many smoked ingredients.

MAKES TWO THIN-CRUSTED 10- TO 11-INCH PIZZAS

2 Italian sausages, about 4 ounces each

Olive oil

CHEESE TOPPING

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup grated mozzarella cheese, softened

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese,
softened

1 garlic clove, minced

2 tablespoons minced fresh basil or
1 tablespoon dried basil

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried oregano

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried hot red chile flakes

Just About Perfect Pizza Crust (page 304)

3 small red-ripe tomatoes, preferably Italian
plum, sliced thin

Handful or two of sliced green or black olives
(optional)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Coat the sausages with the oil and transfer them to the smoker. Smoke until cooked through and still juicy, about 1 to 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ hours. Slice into thin rounds. Keep warm, or bag and refrigerate for later use.

3. Preheat the oven to 500°F. Use a pizza stone, if available, placing it in the oven before you begin to heat it.

4. Stir together the cheese topping ingredients.

5. If not using a pizza stone and peel, place the dough rounds on greased pizza pans or baking sheets. Brush about 1 tablespoon of oil over each crust. Top with sausage, tomatoes, and optional olives, and then the cheese mixture. Bake for 10 to 12 minutes, until the crust is crisp with a few browned edges and the cheese is melted. Slice the pizzas into wedges and serve immediately.



Wild Mushroom Calzone

Wild mushrooms taste better, but even tame little old button mushrooms will work in this calzone, which is simply a pizza with the crust folded over. Add some sautéed leeks or onions, or chopped marinated artichoke hearts, if you like.

MAKES TWO LARGE CALZONES

12 ounces wild mushrooms, or other mushrooms, sliced thickly

Olive oil

Salt

CHEESE FILLING

1 cup ricotta

1 cup grated mozzarella cheese, softened

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese, softened

2 small red-ripe tomatoes, chopped

1 garlic clove, minced

1 to 2 tablespoons minced fresh parsley or basil

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried oregano

Pinch of dried hot red chile flakes, or more to taste

Just About Perfect Pizza Crust (page 304)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the mushrooms with enough oil to coat their surfaces, and salt them lightly. Arrange the mushrooms on a small grill rack or a piece of heavy-duty foil.

3. Transfer them to the smoker, and cook for 15 to 20 minutes, until they ooze

liquid and are soft. Keep the mushrooms warm, or bag and refrigerate for later use.

4. Preheat the oven to 425°F. Use a pizza stone, if available, placing it in the oven before you begin to heat it.

5. Stir together the cheese filling ingredients.

6. If not using a pizza stone and peel, place the dough rounds on greased pizza pans or baking sheets. Spoon half of the filling over each crust, covering just one-half of each, and leaving about a $\frac{1}{2}$ -inch edge all around. Divide the mushrooms between the two calzones, sprinkling them evenly over the cheese filling. Fold the uncovered side of the dough over the filled portion. Pull the bottom edge up just over the top edge and crimp the edge neatly and tightly. Cut a 1-inch slit in the top of each calzone. Bake for 25 to 30 minutes, until medium brown and crisp. Cool for 5 minutes before slicing into the molten cheese filling. Eat with a knife and fork.

Serving Suggestion *Pizzas parties aren't just for kids. Even generally reserved grown-*

ups like mixing and matching and munching. Prepare crusts and various toppings ahead, and buy some pizza sauce that you jazz up with a handful of fresh herbs. Then let every-

one at it. With some ice-cold beer, a few bottles of wine, and a big salad, you're set for the evening.



Deep-Dish Smoked Mozzarella Pizza

Making the most of home-smoked mozzarella, this Chicago-style deep-dish pizza is absolutely addictive. If you're a pepperoni fan, it's a good addition here.

MAKES ONE THICK-CRUSTED 10- TO 11-INCH PIZZA

PIZZA SAUCE

- 15-ounce can Italian plum tomatoes
- 3 tablespoons olive oil
- 2 tablespoons dried basil
- 1 garlic clove, minced
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried oregano
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt
- $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried hot red chile flakes

CHEESE TOPPING

- $1\frac{1}{2}$ cups grated mozzarella cheese, softened
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese, softened

Just About Perfect Pizza Crust (page 304)

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Preheat the oven to 425°F.

3. Prepare the sauce, combining the ingredients in a small saucepan. Cook over medium heat, breaking up the tomatoes with a spoon, until thickened, about 15 minutes. Let the sauce cool briefly.

4. Stir together the cheese topping ingredients.

5. Coat an 8- to 9-inch cast-iron skillet or other smokeproof skillet with oil. Press the pizza crust dough rounds together and then arrange the dough in the skillet, forming a thick lip about 1-inch high around the edge. Spoon the sauce into the crust and bake for 25 to 30 minutes, until crisp with a few browned edges.

6. Sprinkle the cheese thickly over the pizza. Transfer the skillet to the smoker. Cook until the cheese is completely melted, about 15 to 20 minutes. Slice the pizza into wedges and eat immediately, with knife and fork.



BBQ TIP Not only does the smoke perfume the mozzarella in this pizza, but it also gives the whole pizza more of the wood-scented character of Neapolitan pizzas baked in wood-fueled ovens.

SAUCY SUCCESS

Though there's a touch of heresy in the notion, some fine pitmasters use more charcoal than wood in barbecuing pork. In Memphis in particular, many people seem to prefer their pork with just a hint of smoke, supplementing that flavor with a robust sauce. Emily Payne and her daughter-in-law Flora serve their sandwiches that way at Payne's and so does Frank Vernon at the equally good Bar-B-Q Shop.



Easy Mexican Pizza

Unlike our more conventional pizzas, this tortilla pizza can be simply heated through in the smoker and served immediately, without ever having to step back into your kitchen. Add a side of Fiesta Salsa (page 324), if you like, and bring on the Turquoise Margaritas (page 454).

MAKES TWO MEDIUM TORTILLA PIZZAS

2 chorizo sausages, approximately 4 ounces each

2 fresh mild green chiles, such as New Mexican, Anaheim, or poblano

Vegetable or olive oil

CHEESE TOPPING

1 cup grated mozzarella or asadero cheese, softened

½ cup freshly grated Parmesan cheese, softened

1 garlic clove, minced

¼ teaspoon dried oregano

1 small red-ripe tomato, preferably Italian plum, chopped

2 large thin flour tortillas, at room temperature

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Coat the sausages and chiles with the oil and transfer them to the smoker. Smoke until cooked through and still juicy, about 1 hour for both the sausages and chiles. Keep the smoker on if you plan to make the pizzas shortly. Place the chiles in a plastic bag to steam. When cool enough to handle, remove from the bag and pull the

skin off of each. Slice into thin ribbons. Slice the sausage into thin rounds.

3. Stir together the cheese topping ingredients and scatter over the tortillas.

4. Arrange the sausage rounds and chile strips evenly over the cheese. Place on a foil-covered baking sheet and cook in the smoker until the cheese is melted and the tortillas are chewy and a bit crisp in spots, about 10 minutes. (If you want a crisper crust, transfer the tortillas to the grill or griddle over your smoker's firebox, or to a griddle or skillet on the stove, and cook over high heat for several more minutes.) Slice the pizzas into wedges and serve immediately.

Variation: Easy Mexican Pizza with Mushrooms, Bacon, and Chipotle Chiles


Smoke the mushrooms as for Wild Mushroom Calzone (page 308). Replace the chorizo and green chile toppings with the smoked mushrooms, 2 to 3 slices of crumbled crisp-cooked bacon, and a few drizzles of the adobo sauce from a can of chipotle chiles.

While You Wait



When you've got hungry folks standing around the fire, and dinner won't be done for a spell, pop one of these dishes in your smoker. They make a super snack or light meal any time of the day, but they're particularly good as late afternoon appetizers with your favorite libation.

Many of the dishes we suggest are smoked versions of popular appetizers usually prepared in other ways. Try your hand at the same game, figuring out which of your personal favorites might benefit from some smoke flavor, and then doing a little experimentation with the idea. Like in other facets of barbecuing, you may be amazed by the ease of success.



Can't Wait Queso	315	Smoked Clam Dip	327
Unholy Swiss Cheese	316	Creamy Catfish Spread	328
Nachos Blancos	317	Drop-Dead Trout Spread	329
Smoked Mushroom Quesadillas	317	Bluefish Mousse	330
Curry Pecans	318	Heavenly Hearts	331
Smoked Rosemary Walnuts	319	Greens-Stuffed Mushrooms	332
Little Devils	320	Mozzarella Toasts	333
Bar-B-Q-ed Potato Chips	321	Wild Wings	333
Smoked Olives	321	Chicken's Little Livers	335
Mouthwatering Watermelon Morsels	322	Chicken from Hell	336
Bronzed Garlic	323	BBQ Bacon and Eggs	337
Fiesta Salsa	324	Smoked Trout on Apple Slices	338
Better-Than-Store-Bought Bacon-Horseradish Dip	325	007 Shrimp	339
Bean, Beer, and Bacon Dip	326	Succulent Bacon-Wrapped Shrimp	340
Three-Onion Dip	326	Scallops on a Stick	341
		Texas Terrine	342



Can't Wait Queso

Few things are simpler, or tastier, than a melted cheese starter. This is the barbecue version of a Mexican and Tex-Mex favorite, *queso fundido*, a baked white cheese.

SERVES 2 TO 8, DEPENDING ON HUNGER LEVELS

12-ounce chunk medium Cheddar cheese or half Cheddar and half Monterey jack

1 to 2 teaspoons Southwest Heat (page 32), Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29), Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26), or other savory seasoning blend

1 to 2 pickled or fresh jalapeños, sliced

Warm flour tortillas

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Place the cheese in a small smokeproof baking dish. Sprinkle it with the rub and the jalapeños. Place the cheese in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook until the cheese melts through, about 1¼ hours. (Avoid overcooking because the cheese becomes rubbery.) Serve immediately with warm flour tortillas. Cut the tortillas in quarters to make them more manageable to eat as finger food.

Variation: Mexican Queso Fundido Mexican cheeses are becoming much more widely available today across the country. If you have access to queso Chihuahua, asadero, or Oaxaca, grate them into the baking dish and sprinkle 2 to 4 ounces of crumbled fried chorizo on top. Smoke until the cheese melts through, about 30 minutes. Sprinkle scallions on top, and serve on warm flour tortillas.



BBQ TIP For convenience's sake, we've featured appetizers that you can cook with other food in spare space in your smoker, but each is also tasty enough to do on its own. If you have equipment that's easy to start and use—such as a stovetop smoker, electric water smoker, or Cookshack oven—these recipes remain a breeze, and they can add a lot of smoky flavor to a non-barbecue meal.

STEPPING OUT WITH GEORGE AND OLLIE GATES

You have to love the logo at Gates & Son's Bar-B-Q in Kansas City. A gent with a big smile, in top hat and tails, struts down the street carrying a cane in one hand and a take-out bag of barbecue in the other. George Gates got his start in the barbecue business about the end of World War II, and his son Ollie followed behind him in 1958. They remain legends of the craft in Kansas City.

Unholy Swiss Cheese

In the Alps, melted raclette cheese is a warming snack after a winter afternoon of skiing. This smoked version is worth savoring any time of the year. If you can't find raclette, substitute Gruyère for a similar flavor.

SERVES 2 TO 8, DEPENDING ON HUNGER LEVELS

12-ounce chunk raclette cheese

1 tablespoon Dijon mustard, preferably country-style

Boiled new potatoes

Cornichons or other sour pickles and additional Dijon mustard

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Place the cheese in a small smokeproof baking dish. Smear the mustard over it. Place the cheese in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook until the cheese

melts through, about 1¼ hours. (Avoid overcooking because the cheese becomes rubbery.)

3. Serve immediately on the potatoes, which can be halved, if needed, for easier eating. Accompany the cheese with the cornichons and more mustard.

Serving Suggestion *If you add a hearty loaf of bread, a green salad, and a bottle of red wine, you've got the makings for a satisfying Sunday night supper.*

DUTCH TREAT

In Holland, the local Gouda cheese is sometimes smoked and sprinkled with cumin seeds. When we do it in the smoker, as another European variation on the melted cheese theme, we use a tablespoon of cumin seeds plus a tablespoon of minced onion. A Dutch friend who loves barbecue, Peter Noom, gave us the idea.



Nachos Blancos

Goosey with molten strings of mild cheese and punctuated with spicy toppings, an authentic nacho bears little resemblance to the popular ballpark variety awash in an ugly orange sauce. Smoking the nachos adds an extra dimension to the snack, making grocery-store tortilla chips taste of fresh-roasted corn.

SERVES 4 TO 6

Approximately 36 tortilla chips

2 cups grated Monterey jack cheese
(8 ounces)

$\frac{1}{3}$ pound sliced bacon or chorizo, fried and
crumbled (optional)

1 medium red onion, chopped

4 to 6 fresh or pickled serranos or jalapeños,
minced

Sour cream

Sauce Olé (page 354), optional

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Arrange the tortilla chips on a foil-covered baking sheet or smokeproof platter. Scatter the cheese, meat, onion, and chiles over the chips.

3. Place the nachos in the smoker. Cook until the cheese is well melted, 10 to 20 minutes. Serve immediately with sour cream and, if you wish, Sauce Olé.

Smoked Mushroom Quesadillas

We eat quesadillas frequently—as both appetizers and light meals—so one day we just popped a couple in the pit and discovered a new treat for ourselves and friends. If you prefer, switch out the corn tortillas for their flour cousins, or add a handful of lightly cooked corn kernels to the smoked mushrooms.

MAKES FOUR SMALL QUESADILLAS

8 ounces mushrooms, such as white or brown
button or portobello

Salt

8 ounces asadero, Monterey jack, pepper jack,
Cheddar cheese, or a combination, grated

1 minced canned chipotle chile or 1 sliced or
minced fresh or pickled jalapeno or serrano
(optional)

8 corn tortillas

Vegetable oil spray

Fiesta Salsa (page 324), or other salsa

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Slice the mushrooms into large bite-size pieces and salt them lightly. Arrange the mushrooms on a small grill rack or a piece of heavy-duty foil.

3. Place the mushrooms in the smoker and cook for 15 to 20 minutes, until they ooze liquid and are soft.

4. Scatter the cheese and optional chile over four of the tortillas, then top with the mushrooms. Arrange the remaining tor-

tillas on top of the mushrooms. Spray the top tortillas lightly with oil. Place on a foil-covered baking sheet and cook in the smoker until the cheese is melted and the tortillas are chewy and a bit crisp in spots, about 25 to 35 minutes. (One or more of the top tortillas may curl up a little, even with the spritz of oil. If so, simply flip those quesadillas over before cutting.) Slice into wedges and serve immediately, with salsa.

NO BLUFFING IN BLUFF CITY

The Ridgewood in Bluff City, Tennessee, has gotten its share of good press in the last couple of decades, since Jane and Michael Stern anointed its barbecue as the best in the country. The restaurant serves its luscious pork East Tennessee style, with slices piled on big buns and slathered with a thick, tasty ketchup-based sauce. The beef also wins raves, and we've never come across a contrary word about the beans and slaw either.

Curry Pecans

The "smoked" nuts you get on commercial airlines usually rely on liquid smoke or hickory-flavored salt for their flavor. There's a world of difference in the real thing.

MAKES 2 CUPS

CURRY MARINADE

Juice of 2 medium oranges

1½ teaspoons curry powder

1½ teaspoons Worcestershire sauce

1 teaspoon sugar

1 garlic clove, minced

½ teaspoon salt or more to taste

2 cups pecan halves

1. Combine all the marinade ingredients in a nonreactive bowl. Add the pecans and allow them to sit at room temperature for about 1 hour.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Drain the nuts. Transfer them to a piece of greased heavy-duty foil just large enough to hold the nuts in a single layer and place the foil in the smoker. Cook the pecans until they are crisp and lightly smoked, 50 to 60 minutes. Serve immedi-

ately or keep in a covered jar for several days.



BBQ TIP Although the ideal temperature for barbecuing food is between 180°F and 220°F, don't panic if the temperature drifts up to 250°F or down to 160°F. A little time in an extreme range won't hurt most food, but start making adjustments as quickly as possible to get back to the right level.



Smoked Rosemary Walnuts

Sugar and spice, and much better than nice.

MAKES 2 CUPS

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1½ tablespoons packed brown sugar

1½ to 2 teaspoons lightly crushed dried rosemary

¼ teaspoon garlic powder

2 cups (about ½ pound) walnut halves

¾ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt, or more to taste

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. In a skillet, melt the butter with the sugar, rosemary, and garlic powder. Stir in

the walnuts and coat well. Stir in the salt, tasting as you add it.

3. Transfer the nuts to a shallow smoke-proof dish or piece of heavy-duty foil molded into a small tray.

4. Place the nuts in the smoker and cook until dried and fragrant, about 30 minutes.

5. Transfer the walnuts to absorbent paper to cool. Serve immediately or keep in a covered jar for several days.

Little Devils

A Southwest favorite, these nuts are spicy but not as hot as you might guess from the amount of Tabasco used. The smoking process tames some of the sauce's fiery potency.

MAKES 2 CUPS

2 cups raw peanuts

½ cup (yes, cup) Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

Peanut oil

Salt to taste

1. Combine the peanuts with the Tabasco in a small bowl. Let the nuts sit in the sauce for about 30 minutes.
2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
3. Select a smokeproof dish that will hold the peanuts in a single layer. Thickly coat the dish with the oil. Add the peanuts, stir them, and sprinkle with salt.
4. Place the peanuts in the smoker and cook until the peanuts are well browned and dry, 50 to 60 minutes. Check the nuts

toward the end of the cooking time to avoid burning.

5. Transfer the peanuts to absorbent paper to cool. Serve immediately or keep in a covered jar for several days.

Serving Suggestion For a cocktail party with Southwestern flair, serve the Little Devils along with Fiesta Salsa (page 324) and chips, Nachos Blancos (page 317), garlicky guacamole, jícama slices with lime juice, carrot slices marinated in jalapeño pepper pickling liquid, and Turquoise Margaritas (page 454) or Apricoritas (page 456).

Variation: Devilish Pistachios Substitute 2 cups of unshelled pistachio nuts for the peanuts, and green Tabasco for the regular.

"BEST LITTLE PORKHOUSE IN MEMPHIS"

A few years after it opened, Jim Neely's Interstate won the title of "Best Little Porkhouse in Memphis" in a two-month survey conducted by reporters at the *Memphis Commercial Appeal*. That perked up business, which was mighty slow when Neely put out his shingle in 1980. Back then, he says, "my wife and I could watch a whole movie between customers." In more recent years, *USA Today* pronounced the restaurant's pork sandwich the best in the country and *People* magazine ranked the barbecue overall as the second best in the land. Better hurry by.

Bar-B-Q-ed Potato Chips

We find commercial “barbecue” chips just ghastly. Here’s a way to add the real spirit of the outdoors. Serve with Three-Onion Dip (page 326), if you like.

SERVES AS MANY AS YOU LIKE

Any size bag of potato chips, preferably sturdy ridged or hand-cut chips

Chili powder

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Arrange the chips in a shallow smoke-proof dish or in a piece of heavy-duty foil

molded into a small tray. Sprinkle with chili powder. Place in the smoker and cook until the chips are warm throughout and have taken on a light but identifiable smoke flavor, 5 to 15 minutes. Serve immediately.

Smoked Olives

While black and green olives are staples on American relish trays, you rarely see them baked, a common preparation in the Mediterranean region. We take the cooking a step further, adding a light taste of smoke.

MAKES 2 CUPS

1 cup black olives with character, such as Greek kalamata or atalanti, drained lightly

1 cup green olives with character, such as Greek cracked, drained lightly

2 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil

2 tablespoons white wine

2 garlic cloves, minced

$\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon dried oregano

Freshly ground black pepper to taste

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Arrange the olives in a shallow smoke-proof dish or in a piece of heavy-duty foil molded into a small tray. Add the remaining ingredients.

3. Place the olives in the smoker and cook until the olives absorb half of the liquid and take on a light but identifiable smoke flavor, 55 to 65 minutes. Serve immediately or let sit for several hours to develop the flavor further. Refrigerate any leftovers.

Mouthwatering Watermelon Morsels

This is as simple as it is scrumptious, at least if you've got a supply of watermelon pickles on hand. You can find the pickled rinds in Southern supermarkets or you can make your own (see page 412).

MAKES A BUNCH

Bacon slices, cut into thirds

Watermelon rind pickles

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Wrap as many slices of watermelon rind pickles as you desire in a piece of bacon and secure with toothpicks. Transfer the tidbits to the smoker and cook them until the bacon is brown and crisp, 35 to 45 minutes. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion For a summer afternoon get-together with a Southern theme, serve these along with Greens-Stuffed Mushrooms (page 332), Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389) with ham or turkey slices, Squash Relish (page 415), Okra Pickles (page 409), and Peanuttty Pie (page 422) made into individual tarts. Accompany the spread with Derby Day Mint Juleps (page 452) and Sunny Sweet Tea (page 460).

FROM BREW TO 'Q

The New Braunfels Smokehouse (800-537-6932, www.nbsmokehouse.com) is one of the best mail-order sources in the country for smoked food. Though the company brine-cures most of its products—using a dry rub only on beef brisket and pork ribs—the food is cooked in a barbecue style rather than smoke-cured. Originally a local brewery in the German-American community of New Braunfels, Texas, the business switched to smoking during Prohibition.

Bronzed Garlic

This is our kind of bread spread.

SERVES 4 TO 6

2 large whole heads of garlic, skins on

Olive oil

Crusty country-style white bread

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Coat the garlic heads well with the oil. Place the garlic in the smoker and cook it until browned and well softened, 40 to 50 minutes.
3. Pull any loose browned skin from the garlic. Slice a thin layer off the top of each

head, just deep enough to expose the tops of the individual cloves.

4. Serve hot accompanied by the bread. To eat, break off the cloves and squeeze the softened garlic onto chunks or slices of bread.

Serving Suggestion Use leftover garlic as a spread on sandwiches or mix it into mayonnaise.

ANOTHER KID, ANOTHER GRILL

Nearly 80 percent of the households in the country own an outdoor grill, according to the Barbecue Industry Association. The figure jumps as the size of a family increases, up to 91 percent in families of four or more. A solid majority of those households cook outside year-round, most often on gas grills.



Fiesta Salsa

Smoky salsas rival barbecue sauces in possibilities. Here's a classic to get you started.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

1 pound red-ripe tomatoes (approximately 2 to 3 medium)

2 teaspoons extra-virgin olive oil

¼ cup chopped red onion

2 to 3 garlic cloves, minced

2 canned chipotle chiles, minced

2 teaspoons adobo sauce from canned chipotles or more to taste

Juice of 1 lime

Salt to taste

2 to 3 tablespoons chopped cilantro

Tortilla chips or corn or flour tortillas

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Coat the tomatoes with 1 teaspoon of the oil. Transfer the tomatoes to the smoker. Cook them until they are very soft and the skins are ready to split, 45 to 55 minutes. Set the tomatoes aside until cool

enough to handle. Coarsely chop the tomatoes with their peels.

3. Transfer the tomatoes, peels, and any juice to a blender. Add the remaining oil, onion, garlic, chipotles, adobo sauce, and lime juice and purée. Pour into a small serving bowl, add salt to taste, and refrigerate for at least 45 minutes.

4. Stir in the cilantro just before serving. Serve with tortilla chips or tortillas.



BBQ TIP You can create smoked salsas from many combinations of vegetables—or even fruits—by keeping in mind a couple of key principles. For contrasting flavors, avoid smoking everything you plan to throw into the mix. Add a little more lime or other acid than you do in traditional recipes, to balance the assertive smoke taste.



Better-Than-Store-Bought Bacon-Horseradish Dip

Tired of sneaking into supermarkets to buy that ersatz version of bacon-horseradish dip with fake bacon, pseudo sour cream, and enough preservatives to keep Dick Clark young another half-century?

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

- 1 cup sour cream
- 1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon prepared horseradish
- 1 slice from a medium onion, about ½ inch thick
- Vegetable oil
- 3 to 4 slices bacon, chopped
- 2 ounces fresh mild goat cheese, softened
- Potato chips or carrot sticks

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Spoon the sour cream and 1 tablespoon of the horseradish into a smokeproof baking dish. Rub the onion slice with the oil. Place the sour cream and onion in the

smoker side-by-side and cook for 30 to 40 minutes. The sour cream should be runny but not separated, and the onion well softened but not cooked through.

3. While the sour cream and onion cook, fry the bacon in a small skillet. Drain the bacon.

4. Stir the cheese into the sour cream until well combined. Chop the onion and crumble the bacon. Mix into the sour cream. Add as much of the remaining teaspoon of horseradish as desired. The smoked horseradish will mellow in flavor, and any added at the end creates a pleasantly pungent bite. Chill for at least 30 minutes for best flavor. Serve with potato chips or carrot sticks.

A HEAP OF RIBS

If you're looking for saucy ribs in Memphis, head for Gridley's. It's a chain operation these days, with several look-alike locations, but the pitmasters can mass-produce a mighty tasty product. They also turn out fine versions of other specialties, including shrimp, chicken, and turkey.

Bean, Beer, and Bacon Dip

Canned beans have never tasted better.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

15-ounce can refried beans
½ cup beer
4 slices crisp-fried bacon, crumbled
½ cup grated pepper jack or Monterey jack cheese
¼ to ½ cup of your favorite tomato-based salsa
Salt (optional)

Tortilla chips or corn chips

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Stir together the beans, beer, bacon, and cheese in a smokeproof dish. Place in the

smoker and cook until heated through and lightly infused with smoke, about 30 minutes. Add salsa, checking the heat level before you commit yourself to all of it. Stir in a little salt if needed. Serve warm with chips.

Variation: Just Plain Delicious Bean Dip

The smoked beans give the dip its biggest flavor boost, so if you're out of some of the other ingredients, or just prefer the purist approach, simply smoke the beans alone and add salsa at the end.



Three-Onion Dip

This is almost more onion than dip. Delicious with chips, crackers, raw vegetables, or spooned over a baked potato or potato skins.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

1 medium onion, chopped
3 large shallots, chopped
6 scallions, chopped but green tops separated from the white portion
2 tablespoons vegetable oil

1½ cups sour cream
Few drops Worcestershire sauce
Salt (optional)
Potato chips, crackers, or raw vegetable slices

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Mix together the onion, shallots, and white portions of the scallions with the oil and pour into a shallow, smokeproof dish or shallow tray made of doubled heavy-duty foil. Place in the smoker and smoke

until the onions are tender, about 50 to 60 minutes. Mix with the sour cream, Worcestershire sauce, and the scallion tops. Add salt, if you wish. Chill for at least an hour for best flavor. Serve with chips, crackers, or vegetables.

Smoked Clam Dip

An adaptation of an old classic, made ready for revival.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

1 pound clams in shells, preferably medium-size cherrystones or littlenecks

¾ cup sour cream

1½ tablespoons minced fresh chives

1½ tablespoons minced onion

¼ teaspoon Worcestershire sauce

Pinch of cayenne

Salt

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Arrange the clams in a single layer on a small grill rack, grill basket, or piece of doubled heavy-duty foil. The shells will pop open within about 15 minutes, signaling the clams are cooked, but smoke them about 5 more minutes to make them a bit more fragrant. Don't let them turn to leather, though. Discard any clams that haven't opened within several minutes of

the rest. Transfer the clams from the smoker carefully, to avoid losing the clam juice that will be puddle in the bottom shells.

3. When cool enough to handle, pour the clam juice into a medium bowl. Pop the clams from their shells with a fork or small knife. Mince the clams. Add them to the bowl, along with the remaining ingredients, and stir to combine.

4. Refrigerate for at least an hour for best flavor. Serve with chips or crackers.



BBQ TIP Clams are among a handful of shellfish we typically smoke in the shell. They stay moist but still take on the enticing aroma of woodsmoke.

Creamy Catfish Spread

Any time we smoke catfish we save some for this spread, one of the tastiest appetizers you can pop between your lips.

MAKES APPROXIMATELY 2 CUPS

8 ounces Peppered Catfish (page 223) or store-bought smoked catfish

4 ounces cream cheese, softened

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

1 to 1½ tablespoons milk

2 teaspoons minced onion

1½ teaspoons brandy

1 teaspoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

¼ teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

Cucumber rounds, crackers, or crusty country-style white bread

1. Flake the catfish, discarding any skin and bones.
2. Combine the fish and remaining spread ingredients in a food processor and process until well mixed. Pack the spread into a small serving bowl and refrigerate, covered, for at least 30 minutes.
3. Serve with cucumber rounds, crackers, or bread.



DON'T STEP WHERE YOU BET

Years ago, the Meridian, Texas, National Championship Barbecue Cook-off pioneered a novel charitable fundraising event called Cow Patty bingo. You buy a ticket for one of a hundred grids marked off in a pen. A cow is placed in the enclosure, and when nature takes its course, the ticket holder for the square blessed with the majority of the first cow patty wins the prize.

Drop-Dead Trout Spread

Of all the original recipes in the book, this is probably the one most requested by family and friends. It'll be an instant hit at your house, too.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

HORSERADISH PASTE

2 teaspoons freshly squeezed lemon juice

½ teaspoon prepared horseradish

1 trout (about 8 ounces), with or without head, or 8 ounces trout fillets

3-ounce package cream cheese, softened

3 tablespoons minced onion

3 tablespoons pecan pieces, toasted

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

1½ teaspoons Creole mustard

1 teaspoon white wine Worcestershire sauce
or ¾ teaspoon regular Worcestershire sauce

Several drops Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

Salt to taste

Zucchini rounds, crackers, or breadsticks

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. In a small bowl, combine the paste ingredients. Rub the trout inside and out

with the paste and let the fish sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

3. Transfer the trout to the smoker. Cook the fish until it's opaque and flakes easily, 35 to 45 minutes. Allow the trout to cool for at least 15 minutes.

4. Flake the fish, discarding any skin and bones. Place the fish and remaining ingredients in a food processor and process until well mixed. Pack the spread into a small serving bowl and refrigerate, covered, for at least 30 minutes.

5. Serve with zucchini rounds, crackers, or breadsticks.



BBQ TIP We always throw a couple of onions on the smoker whenever we're barbecuing. The smoke mellows their pungency but heightens their taste. Use them as a substitute for raw onion in this or any other recipe.



Bluefish Mousse

Though a little lighter and more delicate in texture than the previous two smoked fish spreads, this mixture still packs plenty of flavor. The oils in Atlantic bluefish make it a natural for smoking, but you can also use whitefish, cod, or mahi-mahi. Whip it together a day ahead of serving, if you wish.

MAKES APPROXIMATELY 2 CUPS

1½ to 2 tablespoons Seafaring Seafood Rub
(page 28) or commercial seafood dry rub

8-ounce to 10-ounce bluefish fillet

2 lemon wedges

2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice

1 envelope unflavored gelatin

2 garlic cloves

2 tablespoons chopped fresh dill or
1 tablespoon dried dill

⅓ cup boiling water

1 cup heavy cream

⅓ cup mayonnaise

Several dashes Tabasco or other hot pepper
sauce

Salt or more Seafaring Seafood Rub (page 28)
or other dry rub used above

Lettuce leaves

Fresh dill sprigs, optional

Toasted baguette slices or crackers

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Rub the fish fillet well with the dry rub and let sit for 20 minutes. Squeeze one of the lemon wedges over the fish and transfer it to the smoker.

3. Smoke for 35 to 45 minutes until done throughout. Squeeze the other lemon wedge over the fish as it comes out of the smoker. When cool enough to handle, break the fish into small chunks, discarding any skin and bones.

4. Pour the lemon juice into a food processor, sprinkle the gelatin over it, and let it sit for about 5 minutes so the gelatin can soften. Add the garlic, dill, and boiling water, and process until the gelatin dissolves, about 30 seconds. Add the cream, mayonnaise, and Tabasco, and process again until smooth.

5. Add the fish to the processor and pulse to combine. Mix the mousse well but stop short of puréeing it. Spoon into a greased 2-cup mold or bowl, and refrigerate until set, at least 2 hours.

6. Line a platter with lettuce. Unmold the mousse, first dipping the bottom of the mold into hot water for just a couple of seconds. Invert onto the platter, garnish with dill, if desired, and serve with baguette slices.

Heavenly Hearts

Artichoke hearts with cheese and mayonnaise make a divine spread.

SERVES 4 TO 6

- 14-ounce can artichoke hearts, drained
- 1 cup mayonnaise
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup grated Parmesan or Romano cheese
- 1 teaspoon white or cider vinegar
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon dried basil
- 1 garlic clove, minced
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup fresh bread crumbs

Melba toasts, crackers, or crusty country-style white bread

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

- 2.** Slice the artichoke hearts into quarters.
- 3.** In a shallow, smokeproof dish, mix the artichokes with the mayonnaise, cheese, vinegar, basil, and garlic. Top the mixture with the bread crumbs.
- 4.** Transfer the dish to the smoker and cook the artichoke mixture for 25 to 35 minutes, until the cheese and mayonnaise are melted together. Serve immediately on melba toasts, crackers, or crusty country-style white bread.



NO SWEAT

If some tyrant limited us to a choice of one place in the country to enjoy whole hog barbecue, Sweatman's in Holly Hill, South Carolina, would get our nod. It barely has an address, much less a phone, and it's open only on Friday and Saturday, but you can eat as high on the hog as you want. Bub Sweatman, a third-generation pitmaster, serves the whole animal, from the crispy skin to innards made into a heavenly hash.

Greens-Stuffed Mushrooms

Southerners have always loved greens with smoked food, a pairing that reaches a peak of perfection in this appetizer.

SERVES 4 TO 6

12 to 16 large white mushrooms
2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
2 tablespoons vegetable oil
¼ cup chopped onion
2 tablespoons minced red bell pepper
2 garlic cloves, minced
12 ounces mustard greens or kale, chopped fine
½ cup chicken stock
1 teaspoon yellow mustard
Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste
4 ounces cream cheese, softened
6 tablespoons dry bread crumbs
Pecorino Romano or Parmesan cheese, grated

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.
2. Stem the mushrooms and hollow them out. Chop the stems and trimmings and reserve.
3. Warm the butter and oil in a skillet. Add the mushroom caps and sauté over

medium-low heat for 2 to 3 minutes, turning frequently. Remove the partially cooked mushroom caps from the pan and set them aside. Add the onion, bell pepper, garlic, and greens to the skillet. Sauté the mixture for 2 to 3 minutes. Mix in the stock, mustard, salt, and pepper and simmer, covered, for about 5 minutes. Remove the pan from the heat. Immediately stir in the cream cheese followed by the bread crumbs.

4. Stuff the mushroom caps, mounding the filling high. Sprinkle with the Romano cheese.

5. Place the mushrooms on a small grill rack or baking sheet and transfer them to the smoker. Cook them until the filling browns on top and the mushrooms are tender, about 20 to 30 minutes. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion *The mushrooms make a good side dish, too, especially with pork.*



Mozzarella Toasts

These luscious little finger snacks gain much of their flavor from fresh mozzarella, the kind that comes in containers with water. For extra accents, minced fresh sage, thyme, parsley, or oregano would always be welcome.

MAKES 1½ DOZEN

12 small ½-inch-thick slices of French bread, preferably from a crusty baguette

Olive oil

8 ounces fresh mozzarella, cut in thin slices

1½ to 2 tablespoons small capers

Dried red chile flakes

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Brush each bread slice on one side with olive oil. Top each bread slice with mozzarella to cover it, then a sprinkling of capers and chile flakes. Place carefully directly on the smoker's cooking rack and cook until the bread has toasted lightly and the cheese is melted, about 15 to 20 minutes. Serve immediately.



Wild Wings

When in doubt, wing it.

MAKES 3 DOZEN PIECES

WILD WINGS SAUCE

1 cup beer

¼ cup molasses

¼ cup creamy peanut butter

¼ cup Worcestershire sauce

1½ tablespoons chili powder

Juice of 1 lime

½ teaspoon dry mustard

¼ teaspoon ground anise

¼ teaspoon salt

1½ dozen uncooked chicken wings

1. Combine the sauce ingredients in a large, heavy pan. Simmer over medium heat for

15 to 20 minutes, until reduced by about one-third. The sauce can be made a day or two ahead.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F. Grease a large smokeproof baking pan or dish.

3. With a cleaver or butcher knife, remove the chicken wing tips. Then cut each wing in half at the joint.

4. Transfer the wing sections and the sauce to the baking dish. Place the dish in the smoker and cook the chicken for 1¼ to 1½ hours, stirring the wings once or twice. The chicken should be cooked through and

tender, and the sauce reduced to a thick glaze. Serve hot.



BBQ TIP For other quick off-the-pit nibbles, try smoked sliced link sausage accompanied by a stout mustard and Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353), smoked bite-size cubes of chicken with Jamaican Barbecue Sauce (page 359), or smoked shrimp skewered with jalapeño-stuffed or onion-stuffed green olives. Another good starter is a block of cream cheese covered with Lime-Mint Barbecue Sauce (page 363) and served with crackers.

MEAT WITH A BEAT

In Henderson, Kentucky, they mix their meat with music at the W.C. Handy Blues and Barbecue Festival in June. Two dozen or so singers and bands perform over the week-long celebration. Between concerts and feasting, you can enroll your kids in an art camp, attend a zydeco dance workshop, play in a tennis tournament, or buy a carry-away breakfast treat at a church bake sale.



Chicken's Little Livers

These bantam tidbits make a marvelous mouthful.

MAKES 1 DOZEN

FRUITY MARINADE AND MOP

¼ cup raspberry vinegar or other fruit vinegar

¼ cup chicken stock

¼ cup vegetable oil

⅓ medium onion, chopped

1 garlic clove, minced

¼ teaspoon ground ginger

¼ teaspoon salt

¼ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

12 chicken livers, trimmed of any membrane

4 slices bacon, cut into thirds

1. At least an hour, and up to 2½ hours, before you plan to barbecue, combine the marinade ingredients in a lidded jar. Place the chicken livers in a shallow, nonreactive bowl. Pour the marinade over the livers

and marinate for up to 2 hours in the refrigerator.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Drain the livers, reserving the remaining marinade. Wrap each liver in a piece of bacon and secure with a toothpick. Bring the marinade to a vigorous boil and keep it warm over low heat to use as a mop.

4. Place the livers on a small grill rack, mopping them liberally before placing them in the smoker. Cook for 35 to 45 minutes, until the bacon is crisp. Apply the mop once or twice during the cooking process if you are using a wood-burning pit; in other styles of smokers, mop as soon as you remove the livers. Serve the tidbits piping hot.

BIG DADDY'S THRONE

The Dreamland Drive-Inn in Tuscaloosa, Alabama, hasn't changed its menu since Big Daddy John Bishop and his wife, Lillie, opened for business in 1958. The only choice is succulent ribs, served by the slab or, for the really hungry, in a full barbecue dinner that also includes potato chips and white bread. When Big Daddy passed away in 1997, his daughter Jeannette, the new proprietor, moved her father's large redwood chair from its old location outside by the barbecue pit to a prominent spot inside. Some say he still presides from his majestic perch.

Chicken from Hell

These potent stuffed chiles will spice up anyone's life.

MAKES 1 DOZEN

1 large boneless, skinless chicken breast half, pounded thin and sliced into 12 sections

1 tablespoon vegetable oil

2 tablespoons Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26), Smoky Salt (page 30), Southwest Heat (page 32), or other savory seasoning blend

12 large fresh jalapeños or yellow güero chiles

½ medium onion, in slivers

6 slices bacon, halved

Boydesque Brew (page 348) or other barbecue sauce (optional)

1. About 1½ hours before you plan to barbecue, toss the chicken with the oil in a small bowl. Sprinkle dry rub over it and stir to coat. Refrigerate, covered, for 1 hour.

2. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

3. Split the jalapeños along one side and seed them. Stuff a section of chicken breast and a sliver or two of onion in each, wrap with a half piece of bacon, and secure the tidbit with a toothpick.

4. Place the chicken in the smoker and cook for 30 to 40 minutes, until the bacon is crisp.

5. These are extremely hot when served with the jalapeño still in place, so proceed cautiously. Tender-mouths may find the chicken plenty potent eaten alone or perhaps with a barbecue sauce, such as Boydesque Brew.

Variation: Quail from Hell The preparation works with game birds, too. Substitute quail or dove breast for chicken, if you wish.



BBQ Bacon and Eggs

This notion came from our barbecue buddy Wayne Whitworth, who has fired up many a pit around dawn. The dandy breakfast sandwiches will get anyone through to lunch.

SERVES 6

6 thin slices fully cooked Canadian bacon

6 medium to large eggs

Tabasco or Cholula hot sauce, or a pinch of Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26) or Cajun Ragin' Rub (page 29)

Salt and freshly ground black pepper

6 English muffins or biscuits, split, buttered, and toasted

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

2. Let the Canadian bacon sit covered at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

3. Place the Canadian bacon slices into the smoker and cook for 15 minutes, until warmed through and fragrant from the smoke. Transfer the Canadian bacon to a greased 6-cup muffin pan, tucking each slice into the bottom of a cup. Crack an egg over each slice of Canadian bacon,

keeping the yolks intact and sunny looking. Splash with enough hot sauce to wake you up, and add a sprinkle of salt and pepper. Place the muffin tin in the smoker and cook until the eggs are lightly set, or otherwise cooked to your taste. We like them still a bit runny at the yolk's center, about 30 to 35 minutes.

4. Remove the bacon-egg combo from each cup, and arrange between muffin halves. Chow down.



BBQ TIP To make cleaning easier, spray the muffin tin all over with oil before using. If you want to make this frequently, dedicate one muffin tin to it that you don't mind turning dark from the smoke.



Smoked Trout on Apple Slices

We like to make this with local wild trout caught by our fisherman friend Raymond Holmes. You can get good results, though, with farm-raised trout from the supermarket.

MAKES ABOUT 3 DOZEN SERVINGS

DRESSING

¼ cup olive oil

¼ cup vegetable oil

2½ tablespoons white wine vinegar

2 tablespoons minced shallots

1 teaspoon prepared horseradish

½ teaspoon Dijon mustard

¾ teaspoon coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

Four 8-ounce butterflied boned trout, with or without heads, or trout fillets

1 green-skinned apple

1 red-skinned apple

Tiny fresh dill sprigs, optional

1. About 2 hours before you plan to smoke the trout, combine the dressing ingredients in a blender and purée until smooth.

2. Place the trout, lying open, in a shallow, nonreactive dish. Drizzle each fish with

about 1 tablespoon of the dressing. Cover the trout and refrigerate about 1½ hours.

3. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 200°F to 220°F.

4. Remove the trout from the refrigerator and let them sit covered at room temperature for 15 to 20 minutes.

5. Transfer the fish to the smoker, skin side down. Cook the trout until opaque and easily flaked, about 35 to 45 minutes. When the fish is cool enough to handle, slice or flake it into neat bite-size chunks. (The trout can be chilled for at least 1 hour if you wish to serve it cold.)

6. Halve and core the apples. Cut each vertically into slices about ⅓ inch thick. Place a chunk of trout on each apple slice. Moisten each with a little drizzle of the remaining dressing. Top with a bit of dill, if you wish, and serve.



007 Shrimp

A true “seafood cocktail,” these shrimp are enhanced by James Bond’s favorite drink, the vodka martini.

SERVES 4 TO 6

1 pound large shrimp (24 to 30)

JAMES BOND’S BASIC BARBECUE MARINADE

1½ cups vodka

½ cup dry vermouth

3 tablespoons vegetable oil

3 tablespoons minced onion

Juice of 1 large lemon

Lemon wedges, for garnish

1. Prepare the smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Peel the shrimp, leaving the tails on. Clean and, if desired, devein them. Place the

shrimp in a shallow, nonreactive dish or plastic bag.

3. In a lidded jar, combine the marinade ingredients. Pour the marinade over the shrimp and let the shrimp marinate at room temperature for 30 minutes.

4. Drain the shrimp and arrange them on a small grill rack. Place in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. The shrimp should be done in 20 to 25 minutes, but watch them carefully. They are ready when opaque, slightly firm, and lightly pink on the exterior. Serve them hot or chilled, garnished with lemon.

SAUCE IT WITH BIG RED

In the old Kreuz Market in Lockhart, Texas, “diners” ate standing, cutting their hunks of meat with a knife chained to a counter. The restaurant added some tables later, and now has moved to a big new location, but you still place your order at the pit and by the pound. The barbecue comes on butcher paper, with a choice of white bread or saltine crackers. A separate station sells sides such as onions and pickles, and Big Red, the soft drink of choice. If you want barbecue sauce you’d better sneak it in, because they don’t abide it here.

Succulent Bacon-Wrapped Shrimp

Sara Perry wrote a book called *Everything Tastes Better with Bacon* (2002, Chronicle Books). Who are we to disagree?

MAKES 2 DOZEN

2 dozen large shrimp, peeled, but tails left on

Minceed zest and juice of 1 lemon

Pinch or 2 of salt

Approximately 12 slices bacon, halved, par-cooked until limp and just beginning to brown

Mango-Habanero Hellfire (page 365) or other habanero hot sauce, optional

1. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Toss the shrimp with the lemon zest and juice. Wrap each shrimp with bacon, covering the sides of the shrimp pretty thoroughly, and then skewer the wrapped shrimp on a small bamboo skewer. Repeat with remaining shrimp and bacon. Place on a small grill rack or on the cooking grate and smoke until the bacon is cooked

through and crispy and the shrimp still juicy, about 25 to 30 minutes. Serve immediately with Mango-Habanero Hellfire sauce on the side, if you wish.

Variation: Prosciutto-Wrapped Shrimp

If you don't want to bother with par-cooking bacon, get yourself 4 to 6 ounces of very thinly sliced prosciutto. Cut the slices in half horizontally, then wrap around the marinated shrimp and proceed as above.



BBQ TIP Bamboo skewers will hold up better for any smoked dish if they've been soaked in water for at least a few minutes before lacing them with food.

A SOLEMN RESPONSIBILITY

At cooking competitions sanctioned by the Kansas City Barbeque Society, the judges take an oath about their job. It goes something like, "I solemnly swear to objectively and subjectively evaluate each barbecue meat that is presented to my eyes, my nose, and my palate. I accept my duty so that truth, justice, excellence in Barbecue, and the American Way of Life may be strengthened and preserved forever."

Scallops on a Stick

SERVES 4 TO 6

1 pound sea scallops, cut into bite-size pieces if needed

SCALLOP MARINADE

1/4 cup sake or dry sherry

2 tablespoons peanut oil

2 teaspoons packed brown sugar

10-ounce can water chestnuts, drained and blanched

4 to 6 scallions, sliced into 3/4 inch lengths

Plum Good Slopping Sauce (page 364) or West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce (page 355) (optional)

- 1.** Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
- 2.** Place the scallops in a plastic bag or shallow dish. Combine the marinade ingredients and pour the mixture over the

scallops. Let the scallops sit at room temperature for 20 to 30 minutes.

3. Thread the scallops on bamboo skewers interspersed with water chestnuts and scallion pieces. Arrange the skewers on a small grill rack or baking sheet. Place in the smoker as far from the fire as possible. Cook until the scallops are cooked through and opaque, about 15 minutes.

4. Serve immediately, with Plum Good Slopping Sauce or West Coast Wonder barbecue sauce, if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Make lunch out of the scallops by serving them with rice and Asian Vegetable Slaw (page 404). For dessert, serve orange slices zipped up with a sprinkling of triple sec.*



Texas Terrine

A great way to use leftovers, this glorified meat loaf relies on already smoked meat. Unlike many of our appetizers, it keeps well for several days.

SERVES 8 OR MORE

- 1¹/₄ pounds smoked meat, preferably 2 or 3 meats, such as brisket, pork shoulder, ham, chicken, or turkey, chilled
- 3 ounces pork fat, chilled
- 2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
- 1 medium onion, minced
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- ³/₄ cup fresh cornbread crumbs or other bread crumbs
- ¹/₄ cup minced cilantro
- 2 to 3 tablespoons milk
- 1¹/₂ tablespoons jalapeño mustard or other hot spicy mustard
- 1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 tablespoon chili powder
- Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste
- 1 egg
- ¹/₃ cup chopped, roasted green New Mexican, Anaheim, or poblano chiles, preferably fresh or frozen

Toasted cornbread slices, crackers, or crusty country-style white bread

Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce (page 353) or Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce (page 360) (optional)

1. Preheat the oven to 325°F.
2. In a food processor or meat grinder, mince or grind the meats and pork fat together. Transfer the meat to a bowl.

3. Warm the butter in a small skillet over medium heat. Add the onion and garlic and sauté briefly until softened. Spoon the mixture over the meat. Add the bread crumbs, cilantro, milk, mustard, Worcestershire sauce, and chili powder, mixing well. Taste the mixture, adding salt or pepper if needed, and mix in the egg.

4. Pat half the meat into a 7-by-3-inch loaf pan. Scatter the chiles over the loaf and top with the rest of the meat. Pat the meat down firmly.

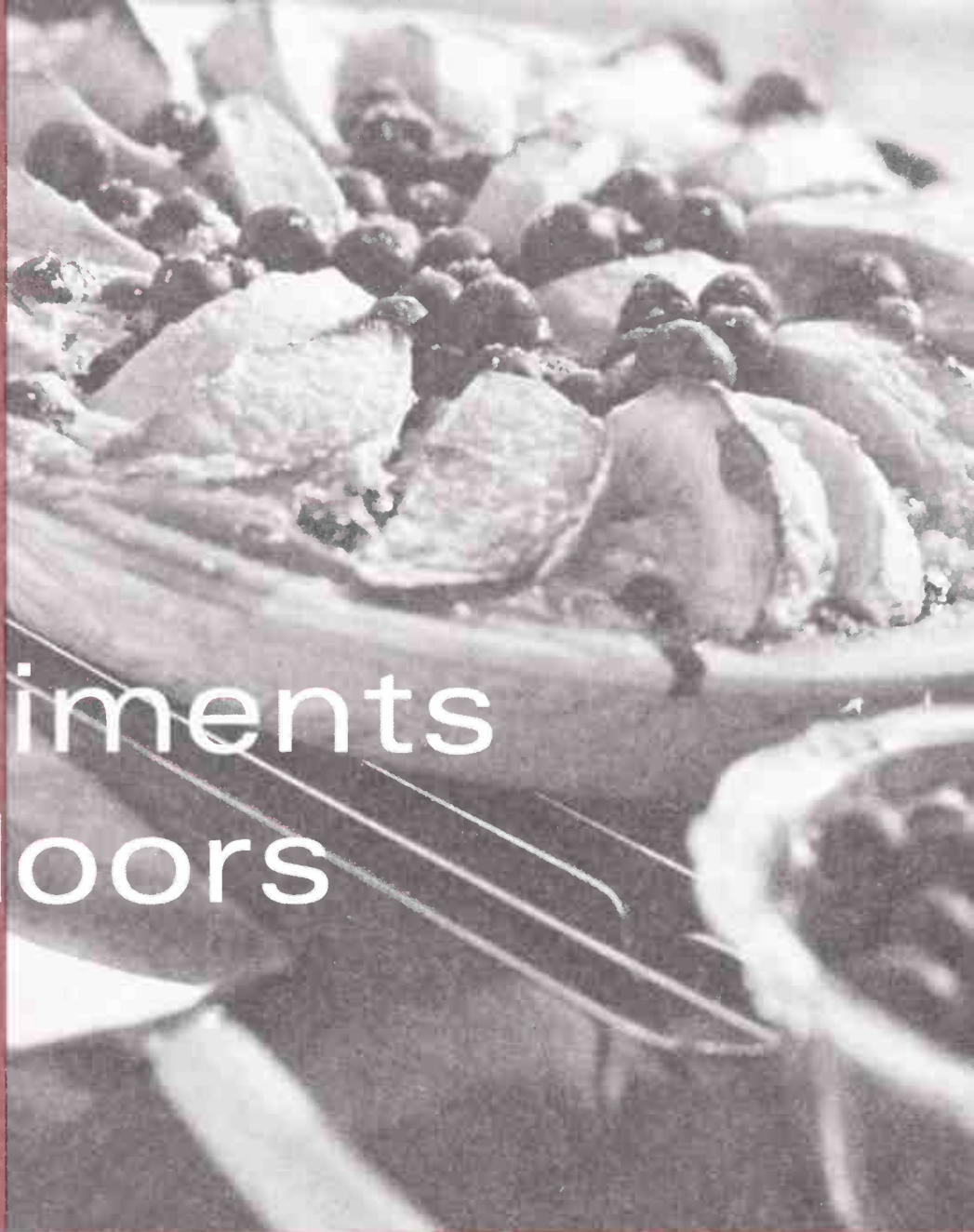
5. Bake the terrine in a water bath for 70 to 75 minutes. Let the terrine cool at room temperature for 20 minutes.

6. Cover the terrine with foil and weight it down with a couple of bottles of barbecue sauce or cans from your pantry. Refrigerate the meat for at least 2 hours, but preferably longer. Like a meat loaf, the terrine improves with age for a few days.


7. Serve chilled with toasted cornbread, crackers, or other bread. If you want to offer sauce on the side, the most compatible choices are Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce and Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce.

P a r t T h r e e

Great Accompaniments from Indoors



Barbecue Sauces



Sauces are contentious. Some smart people, such as the pros at the California Culinary Academy, say that sauces define the nature of barbecue. If you don't serve one on your food, they claim, you are "smoke cooking" instead of barbecuing. Other smart people maintain that if something isn't worth eating without a sauce, it doesn't deserve the name barbecue. To them, using a sauce is akin to skinny dipping in your skivvies.

Even if you come down firmly on the side of saucing, you'll soon discover that everyone who agrees with you is talking about a different potion. The styles of barbecue sauce across the country are more numerous and varied than the vices of Washington, D.C. Most regions have a favored style, and within that tradition, each pitmaster has a special twist or two. The only common denominator is a resolute conviction among the inventors and fans that nobody else knows a damned thing about making sauce.

Perhaps everyone is a little right and a little wrong. Most good barbecue doesn't require any sauce to enhance its flavor, but it can often benefit from several different styles of sauce, depending on personal preferences. Our recipes cover the major regional variations and a few offbeat options. Experiment with them to craft your own concoction. Even if you prefer your barbecue bare, you're certain to find that your own sauce is the best one ever brewed.

Struttin' Sauce	347	Moonlite and Moonshine	356
Boydesque Brew	348	Bour-BQ Sauce	357
Vaunted Vinegar Sauce	349	Cinderella Sauce	357
Carolina Red	350	Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce	358
Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce	350	Jamaican Barbecue Sauce	359
Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce	351	Smoked Onion Sauce	360
Smoked Butter	352	Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce	360
Memphis Magic	353	Apple City Apple Sauce	361
Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce	353	Alabama Great White	362
Sauce Olé	354	Lime-Mint Barbecue Sauce	363
Black Sauce	355	South Florida Citrus Sauce	363
West Coast Wonder	355	Hoisin BBQ Sauce	364
		Plum Good Slopping Sauce	364
		Mango-Habanero Hellfire	365



SERIOUS SECRETS

Barbecuists put secret ingredients into their sauces for the same reason that dogs piss on trees, to mark out a piece of territory as their own. The secret ingredient is not intended to make the sauce 'better' but to mark it in such a way as to leave no doubt that it's unique—it is peerlessness, not flavor, that makes it perfect. The praise it wants is not culinary exclamation but surrender. 'Damn it, J.D., but I've never tasted the like.'" John Thorne, *Simple Cooking* newsletter, 1988

Struttin' Sauce

Kansas City is the sauce capital of the country, where they practically pave the streets with the stuff. Over the last half-century, local pitmasters perfected a spicy, sweet sauce, thick with tomatoes, that ultimately became the most common and popular style nationally. When you look for a commercial sauce in a supermarket today, Kansas City-style may be the only kind you find. Few of the packaged products, however, rival the originals, still served in Bar-B-Q joints all over town, or good homemade variations on the same theme. This version is modeled on the sauce that Ollie Gates created years ago for his thriving small chain of Gates & Sons restaurants. Like Gates's classic, our rendition will leave you strutting with satisfaction.

MAKES ABOUT 2 1/4 CUPS

- 1 tablespoon vegetable oil
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 cup tomato purée
- 3/4 cup cider vinegar
- 6 tablespoons packed brown sugar
- 4 to 6 tablespoons chili powder
- 1/4 cup tomato paste
- 3 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 3 to 4 teaspoons celery salt
- 1 tablespoon yellow mustard
- 1 tablespoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1 tablespoon corn syrup
- 1 tablespoon pure liquid hickory smoke (optional)

In a saucepan, warm the oil over medium heat. Add the onion and garlic and sauté

until they are softened, about 5 minutes. Mix in the remaining ingredients and 3/4 cup water, reduce the heat to low, and cook the mixture until it thickens, approximately 30 minutes. Stir frequently. If the consistency is thicker than you prefer, add a little water. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Serving Suggestion *To us, many barbecue sauces taste as good, or perhaps even better, on other kinds of food than on real barbecue. Kansas City sauces really shine on barbecued ribs, but they can also enhance grilled hamburgers, baked brisket, fried sausage, boiled crawfish, or even fresh green onions.*



Boydesque Brew

In a town full of famous brand names, the late Otis Boyd made the best unheralded barbecue sauce in Kansas City. He didn't pass around his recipe, of course, but our rendition is a tasty imitation.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

6-ounce can tomato paste
1/4 cup white vinegar
1/2 medium onion, minced
1 tablespoon packed brown sugar
1 to 2 teaspoons prepared horseradish (optional)
1 teaspoon ground allspice
1 teaspoon celery salt
1 garlic clove, minced
1/2 teaspoon ground anise
1/2 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

1/4 teaspoon ground cinnamon

1/8 teaspoon cayenne

1. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan with 3/4 cup water and bring to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook until the onions are tender and the mixture thickens, 25 to 30 minutes. Refrigerate the sauce overnight to allow the flavors to mingle and mellow.
2. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.



HAVE SOME OF MY BRAND

When you're ready to create a signature sauce of your own, seek a savory balance of sweet, sour, and spicy flavors. The sweetening can come from regular or brown sugar, honey, maple syrup, molasses, cane syrup, hoisin sauce, or even Coca-Cola. Common sour ingredients include lemon or lime juice, tamarind concentrate, and vinegar—cider, raspberry, wine, white, rice, or sherry, among others. Add onions, garlic, chili powder or chiles, mustard, cumin, ginger, pepper, curry powder, or just about anything else from the spice rack. Salt or salty ingredients such as soy sauce are optional, according to taste. Remember always that a great sauce complements rather than masks the flavor of food.

Vaunted Vinegar Sauce

If you're one of the millions of Americans who have never tried anything except tomato-based barbecue sauces, a taste of this could be a real revelation. Thin, vinegary sauces of this style are as indigenous to the Southeast as summer humidity and a lot more enjoyable, particularly on pork. A pig couldn't ask for a finer demise.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

2 cups cider or white vinegar
2 tablespoons sugar or packed brown sugar
2 teaspoons salt
1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
1 teaspoon cayenne or hot red pepper flakes

Combine all the ingredients in a bowl and stir to dissolve the sugar. Serve at room temperature or chilled. The sauce keeps indefinitely.

YE OLDE KETCHUP

This type of vinegar sauce is probably a direct descendant of early English ketchups, which were made with vinegar in combination with mushrooms, walnuts, oysters, and other ingredients, but never with tomatoes. It can double as a mop, unlike tomato-based sauces, which are rarely applied before the last hour of cooking because they burn.



Carolina Red

The geographic gradation of sauces in North Carolina is fascinating. Toward the eastern shore, pitmasters favor a vinegar style, such as our Vaunted Vinegar Sauce, while their colleagues on the opposite, western border are inclined toward a thick, sweet-sour, ketchup-based sauce. This “Red” from the central Piedmont region is right in between, blending the best of the rest of the state.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

1½ cups cider vinegar
½ cup ketchup
½ teaspoon cayenne or hot dried red chile flakes
1 tablespoon sugar
1 teaspoon salt

Combine all the ingredients in a bowl and stir to dissolve the sugar. Serve at room temperature or chilled. The sauce keeps indefinitely.

Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce

In South Carolina and Georgia, mustard-based sauces provide the strongest competition to vinegar mixtures. Start with the smaller amount of mustard and keep adding until it suits you.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

1 cup white vinegar
½ to ¾ cup yellow mustard
½ medium onion, minced
¼ cup tomato purée
1 tablespoon paprika
6 garlic cloves, minced
1½ teaspoons salt
½ teaspoon cayenne
½ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

Mix the ingredients in a saucepan with ⅓ cup water and bring to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook until the onions are tender and the mixture thickens, 20 to 25 minutes. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol Great-Tasting Southern Sauce

Not so common today, barbecue sauces based on butter and other fats frequently flavored pork in the past.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

- 6 tablespoons bacon drippings
- 6 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup white vinegar
- Juice of 2 lemons
- 2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
- 2 teaspoons freshly ground black pepper
- 1 teaspoon dry mustard
- 1 teaspoon salt

1. In a saucepan, melt the bacon drippings and butter over medium heat. Add the onions and sauté for about 5 minutes, or

until quite soft. Mix in the remaining ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and simmer for 5 minutes.

2. Use the sauce warm. It keeps, refrigerated, for at least a week.

Serving Suggestion *We think the old butter-based sauces are too rich for pork, but this one works well with smoked or grilled chicken or steak and with some vegetables, particularly smoked onions and steamed broccoli.*



PIGGIE PARK

You can't beat the name and you can't beat the sauce, at least if you're partial to pigs and mustard. Maurice's Piggie Park in West Columbia, South Carolina—where uniformed car hops will bring the barbecue to you curbside—sells its golden sauces by mail order (800-MAURICE, www.mauricesbbq.com). Don't blame us, though, if your delivery comes wrapped in a Confederate flag or packaged with a sermon about the Great Pitmaster in Heaven. The eponymous Maurice Bessinger isn't timid about his tastes in barbecue, politics, or religion.

Smoked Butter

Yep, you smoke the butter. The result is great for layering extra flavor on barbecued fish, seafood, and vegetables. You can also use it to top grilled foods, from chicken breasts to corn on the cob, or for sautéing. If you like, add a handful of minced fresh herbs or minced garlic to the butter.

MAKES 1/2 POUND

1/2 cup unsalted butter, cut in 2 tablespoon chunks

A light sprinkling of coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt

1. Prepare your smoker for barbecuing, bringing the temperature to 180°F to 200°F.
2. Arrange the butter in a smokeproof shallow dish. Place in the smoker as far from the heat as possible, and cook for about 15 minutes. Use the smoked butter as is, melted, or chill until it begins to firm. Form it into a log or other shape, cover and refrigerate for up to several days.



BBQ TIP We suggest unsalted butter in many recipes, even ones where we add salt too. Salt acts as a preservative, so salted butter keeps longer but it doesn't necessarily keep its sweet fresh flavor throughout its shelf life. Also, salted butters can vary a good bit in their sodium level. Adding the precise amount of salt you like gives you control over the end result. For longer life, unsalted butter can be frozen for several weeks.

SAUCES TO SEEK OUT

Two of the mid-South's finest commercial sauces—Wicker's and Corky's—get wide regional distribution and enjoy a limited national market. Wicker's, which hails from Hornersville, Missouri, calls itself "the great American barbecue sauce from the little Missouri town." Check out the company's story at www.wickersbbq.com or call 800-847-0032 for a bottle. The equally illustrious Corky's comes from a Memphis restaurant of the same name. Order it online at www.corksbbq.com or purchase it along with other quality barbecue products at www.americasbestbbq.com.

Memphis Magic

The center of mid-South barbecue, Memphis offers a range of sauces that take the high middle ground between Eastern and Western styles. Like this version, they are often medium-bodied mixtures, moderate in sweet, heat, and everything else except taste.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted
¼ cup minced onion
1 cup white vinegar
1 cup tomato sauce
¼ cup Worcestershire sauce
2 teaspoons sugar
1 teaspoon salt
½ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
⅛ teaspoon cayenne
Dash of Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

1. In a saucepan, melt the butter over medium heat. Add the onions and sauté for 6 to 8 minutes, or until the onions begin to turn golden. Stir in the remaining ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and cook until the mixture thickens, approximately 20 minutes. Stir frequently.
2. Use the sauce warm. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce

A lot of Texans eat their barbecue without a sauce, or with just meat juices laced with cayenne, but others prefer a robust sauce full of Southwestern seasonings.

MAKES ABOUT 4 CUPS

1 tablespoon vegetable oil
2 cups chopped onions
2 to 3 minced fresh jalapeños
2 to 3 minced fresh serranos
8 garlic cloves, minced
1 cup ketchup
¾ cup Worcestershire sauce
¾ cup strong black coffee

⅓ cup molasses
¼ cup cider vinegar
¼ cup freshly squeezed lemon juice
¼ cup chili powder
2 tablespoons yellow mustard
1½ teaspoons cumin
1½ teaspoons salt

1. In a saucepan, warm the oil over medium heat. Add the onions, chiles, and garlic, and sauté over medium heat until everything is softened. Mix in the remaining ingredients and bring the sauce to a simmer. Cover and cook for 35 to 40 minutes. Allow the sauce to cool briefly.

2. Strain the sauce and purée the solids in a food processor. Return the puréed mixture to the sauce, stirring thoroughly. Refrigerate the sauce overnight to allow the flavors to mingle and mellow.

3. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps for weeks.

Serving Suggestion *If you don't want to slop up your 'Q', use the sauce on potatoes. It makes a good topping on baked spuds, along with other favorite condiments, or stir the sauce into cottage fries or hash browns while they cook to give the potatoes an outdoors ranch flavor.*

Sauce Olé

A chunky, salsa-style sauce enhances barbecued pork, smoked turkey, or our Nachos Blancos (page 317).

MAKES ABOUT 2¼ CUPS

¾ cup canned crushed tomatoes

2 small tomatoes, preferably Roma or Italian plum, chopped

½ medium red onion, chopped

½ cup chopped roasted green chiles, preferably New Mexican, Anaheim, or poblano, fresh or frozen

2 to 3 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice

2 tablespoons chopped cilantro

1 tablespoon olive oil

½ teaspoon ground cumin

½ teaspoon salt

1. Combine the ingredients (starting with just 2 tablespoons of lime juice) with ½ cup water in a saucepan and bring the mixture

to a simmer over medium heat. Cook for approximately 10 minutes, enough to slightly thicken the sauce. The vegetables should soften a little yet still stay crisp-tender. Taste and add the additional lime juice if desired. Refrigerate the sauce for at least 1 hour to allow the flavor to develop.

2. Serve the sauce chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for several days.

Variation: Green Sauce Olé Substitute an equal amount of puréed fresh or canned tomatillos for the canned crushed tomatoes and reduce the amount of lime juice to 1½ to 3 teaspoons.

Black Sauce

Around Owensboro, Kentucky, a dark, thin, and tangy sauce like this is usually served on or with the barbecued mutton. It also works well with other dishes, such as our Mustard 'n' Lemon Chicken (page 173).

MAKES ABOUT 2¹/₄ CUPS

1 cup Worcestershire sauce
1 cup white vinegar
2 tablespoons packed brown sugar
2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice
1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

2 garlic cloves, minced
¹/₂ teaspoon ground allspice

Combine the ingredients in a saucepan and heat over medium heat. Simmer the mixture for about 10 minutes. Serve the sauce hot or at room temperature.



West Coast Wonder

This Asian-American hybrid works wonders with duck, lamb, fish, and seafood.

MAKES ABOUT 1³/₄ CUPS

1 cup hoisin sauce
¹/₂ cup rice vinegar
¹/₄ cup soy sauce
2 tablespoons Dijon mustard
2 teaspoons peeled and minced fresh ginger
1 teaspoon ground anise
2 garlic cloves, minced

1. Combine the ingredients in a saucepan and warm them over low heat for about 10 minutes.

2. Serve the sauce hot or at room temperature. It keeps, refrigerated, for several weeks.

Serving Suggestion *Thin the sauce with a little water and use it in a stir-fry with broccoli, scallions, red bell peppers, and sliced water chestnuts.*

Moonlite and Moonshine

Catherine and Hugh Bosley opened the Owensboro, Kentucky, Moonlite Bar-B-Q in 1963. Lacking restaurant experience, they just pretended they were having company for dinner. These days the company numbers in the thousands on weekends, many making the hour-plus trek from Louisville to load up on the copious buffet. Among the treats, one of our favorites is the vodka-based hot sauce, great on mutton and other red meat. It inspired this fiery concoction of our own.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

- ¾ cup white vinegar
- ¾ cup vodka
- ½ cup Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce
- ¼ cup tomato purée
- ¼ cup crushed chile caribe or other crushed dried red chile of moderate heat
- 3 tablespoons cayenne
- 2 tablespoons ground red chile, preferably ancho

1. Combine the ingredients in a saucepan with ¼ cup water and heat over medium heat. Simmer the mixture for about 20 minutes, until it's thickened a bit.

2. Serve the sauce warm or chilled, remembering that a little goes a long way. Full of natural preservatives, the sauce keeps indefinitely in the refrigerator.

MOONLITE BY MAIL

Moonlite Bar-B-Q hosts a Web site (www.moonlite.com) as bountiful as the restaurant buffet. You can purchase all of Moonlite's sauces there—or by phone at 800-322-8989—including the Very Hot Sauce we used as our model in the recipe. If you want to go hog-wild with your order, get a pound or two of Moonlite's meat, some frozen burgoo, and maybe a restaurant cookbook too.



Bour-BQ Sauce

Another boozy Kentucky inspiration, this sauce uses the state's native whiskey instead of vodka.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup butter, preferably unsalted
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup vegetable oil
2 medium onions, minced
 $\frac{3}{4}$ cup bourbon
 $\frac{2}{3}$ cup ketchup
 $\frac{1}{2}$ cup cider vinegar
 $\frac{1}{2}$ cup freshly squeezed orange juice
 $\frac{1}{2}$ cup pure maple syrup
 $\frac{1}{3}$ cup molasses
2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt

1. In a saucepan, melt the butter with the oil over medium heat. Add the onions and sauté for about 5 minutes or until they begin to turn golden. Mix in the remaining ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and cook the mixture until it thickens, approximately 40 minutes. Stir frequently.
2. Serve the sauce warm. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Cinderella Sauce

We developed this originally for our barbecued beef short ribs, but decided it was too good to limit to one dish. It also transforms other mundane cuts of meat, from pork spareribs to chicken drumsticks.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

$1\frac{1}{2}$ cups ketchup
1 cup beer
 $\frac{3}{4}$ cup cider vinegar
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup minced cilantro
3 tablespoons packed brown sugar
2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
2 garlic cloves, minced
2 teaspoons ground cumin
 $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons ground anise

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons salt

1 teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

1. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the liquid to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook the mixture until it thickens, approximately 40 minutes. Stir frequently.
2. Use the sauce warm. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce

Snappy as a zydeco band, this sauce features the flavors of Louisiana.

MAKES ABOUT 3 CUPS

1 tablespoon vegetable oil
1 medium onion, chopped
 $\frac{1}{2}$ medium green bell pepper, chopped
2 celery ribs, chopped
3 garlic cloves, minced
1 cup canned crushed tomatoes
1 cup chicken or beef stock
 $\frac{2}{3}$ cup cider vinegar
 $\frac{1}{2}$ cup pecan pieces
6 tablespoons Creole mustard, such as Zatarain's
3 tablespoons packed brown sugar
2 tablespoons chili sauce
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon white pepper

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon cayenne

Salt to taste

1. In a saucepan, warm the oil over medium heat. Add the onion, bell pepper, celery, and garlic and sauté until everything is softened, about 5 minutes. Mix in the remaining ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and cook until the mixture thickens, approximately 30 minutes. Stir frequently. Let the sauce cool briefly. Spoon the sauce into a blender and purée it until smooth. If the consistency is thicker than you prefer, add a little water.

2. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for at least a week.

AN ARKANSAS TREASURE

One of Bill Clinton's favorite barbecue sauces comes from McClard's Bar-B-Q in Hot Springs, Arkansas. The McClard family got the recipe in 1928 when they were running a tourist court along the highway. A boarder traded the secrets of the sauce for his \$10 monthly rent, inspiring the McClards to fire up their pit for the public. The children and grandchildren of the founders still adhere strictly to the original recipe, now locked in a safe deposit box.

Jamaican Barbecue Sauce

This light but intensely flavored sauce goes well with salmon and most varieties of white fish. You can find the sweet-sour tamarind concentrate in Caribbean, Latin American, or Asian markets if it's not available in your grocery store.

MAKES ABOUT 1³/₄ CUPS

2 cups seafood stock

5 tablespoons honey

2 tablespoons tamarind concentrate

2 tablespoons peeled and minced fresh ginger

2 tablespoons Jamaican Jerk Rub (page 33) or other jerk seasoning

1. Combine the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the mixture to a boil over high heat. Reduce the heat and simmer the sauce until it's reduced by one-third, approximately 10 minutes.

2. Serve the sauce warm. It keeps, refrigerated, for several days.

Variation: Fiery Jamaican Barbecue Sauce To make the sauce hotter, in true Jamaican fashion, add part of a minced habanero or Scotch bonnet chile. Proceed cautiously because these are the most blistering chiles known.

A SAUCY READ

Rich Davis and Shifra Stein of Kansas City wrote a fine book on barbecue, *The All-American Barbecue Book* (1988, Vintage). They present a collection of recipes from pitmasters across the country and give a good overview of differences in regional styles. As you might expect from Davis, the creator of the original K.C. Masterpiece sauce, the information on sauce is particularly strong.



Smoked Onion Sauce

Shot through with bits of real smoked onion, this sauce is great with many foods, especially burgers and good cuts of pork.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

1 tablespoon vegetable oil
1 large onion, smoked as for Better-Than-French Onion Soup (page 256), chopped
2 garlic cloves, minced
1 cup tomato purée
 $\frac{3}{4}$ cup cider vinegar
6 tablespoons molasses
3 tablespoons packed brown sugar
3 tablespoons tomato paste
3 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
1 tablespoon yellow mustard
2 tablespoons chili powder
2 teaspoons freshly ground black pepper

1 teaspoon salt

In a saucepan, warm the oil over medium heat. Add the onion and garlic and sauté until the garlic is soft, about 3 minutes. Mix in the remaining ingredients and $\frac{3}{4}$ cup water, reduce the heat to low, and cook the mixture until it thickens, approximately 30 minutes. Stir frequently. If the consistency is thicker than you prefer, add a little more water. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce

Fruit flavors are a relatively recent trend in barbecue sauces. This one sizzles with jalapeños and soothes with peaches.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

16-ounce can peaches in heavy syrup, undrained
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup minced onion
3 tablespoons minced pickled jalapeños
2 teaspoons pickling liquid from jar or can of pickled jalapeños
2 tablespoons peach chutney, or mango in a pinch
2 teaspoons packed brown sugar

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon Worcestershire sauce

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon ground cumin

1. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the liquid to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook the mixture until the onions are tender and the sauce thickens, approximately 25 to 30 minutes.

2. Use the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Serving Suggestion For a different start to the day, serve bacon glazed with the Jala-

peach Barbecue Sauce. Bake thick-sliced strips of bacon for about 10 minutes at 350°F. Then brush both sides with the sauce and continue cooking for another 5 to 7 minutes per side.

TRY IT WITH A PINT OF GUINNESS

Want to try an Irish-inspired barbecue sauce? Mike Maguire visited his clan's original hometown of Enniskillen, Ireland, and found a seventeenth-century sauce recipe in an old family Bible. He modified it for contemporary American barbecue tastes and sells it through www.maguirefoods.com.

Apple City Apple Sauce

This is our variation on a splendid sauce created by the Apple City BBQers from Murphysboro, Illinois.

MAKES ABOUT 2½ CUPS

½ cup butter, preferably unsalted

1 medium onion, minced

2½ cups apple juice or cider

2 tablespoons molasses

2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

2 tablespoons cider vinegar

2 tablespoons tomato paste

½ teaspoon chili powder

½ teaspoon cinnamon

½ teaspoon salt

1. In a heavy saucepan, melt the butter over medium heat. Add the onion and sauté for a couple of minutes, until the onion is softened. Mix in the remaining

ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and cook the mixture until it reduces by about one-quarter, approximately 30 minutes. Stir frequently.

2. Serve the sauce warm. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Serving Suggestion The sauce makes a fine glaze for apples. Sauté slices of apples in butter, adding a little apple cider as they soften. Then cover the slices with a few tablespoons of sauce and continue to cook until a glaze forms. We like the apple slices for breakfast or as a side dish with pork later in the day.

Alabama Great White

Big Bob Gibson's restaurant in Decatur, Alabama, serves the original version of this sauce on barbecued chicken. In a similar manner, we put it on our Alabama Smoked Chicken Sandwich (page 186), but we also offer the sauce with many other foods.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

1 cup mayonnaise (the real stuff—no Miracle Whip here)

2 tablespoons vinegar, preferably cider

1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper

¾ teaspoon salt

Pinch or two of onion powder

Pinch or two of cayenne

Whisk together the mayonnaise with about 1 tablespoon of the vinegar until smooth. Add the remaining ingredients,

and 1 tablespoon of water, and whisk until well-combined. Serve immediately, or chill for up to a couple of weeks.

Variation: Southwestern Great White

People in Decatur may not like this, but we sometimes add ½ cup of sour cream and about ¼ cup of cilantro to Alabama Great White and serve it with California Dreamin' Fish Tacos (page 235) or any other smoked or grilled fish.

AN ALABAMA PIONEER

Everywhere you turn in northern Alabama you find a Gibson's barbecue joint. They all go back, one way or another, to Big Bob Gibson, who started barbecuing hogs for the public in 1925 in an open underground pit. At first Big Bob barbecued only on Saturdays, and his farm doubled as the restaurant, with tables arranged under the shade of the trees.



Lime-Mint Barbecue Sauce

As refreshing as a cool summer shower, this sauce mates well with lamb, salmon, or trout.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

¼ cup butter, preferably unsalted
¼ cup minced scallions
¼ cup minced celery
1 garlic clove, minced
1½ cups brewed mint tea made from 3 mint tea bags
1 cup freshly squeezed lime juice
Zest of 4 limes
¼ cup honey
1 tablespoon brown mustard

1. In a heavy saucepan, melt the butter over medium heat. Add the scallions and sauté for a couple of minutes, until the onion is softened. Mix in the remaining ingredients, reduce the heat to low, and cook the mixture until it reduces by about half, approximately 40 minutes. Stir frequently.

2. Serve the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

South Florida Citrus Sauce

A zingy combo, flavored with citrus and horseradish, this is a winner on chicken, pork, shrimp, and meaty white fish, such as red snapper.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

½ cup butter, preferably unsalted
1 cup cider vinegar
1 cup tomato purée
5 tablespoons prepared horseradish
Juice of 4 limes
Juice of 1 medium orange
3 tablespoons packed brown sugar
1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce
1 teaspoon salt

1. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the liquid to a simmer. Reduce the

heat to low and cook the mixture until it thickens, approximately 40 minutes. Stir frequently.

2. Serve the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Serving Suggestion Try the sauce on chilled boiled shrimp, as a substitute for the standard cocktail sauce. If you're in a flamboyant mood, toss it tableside with the shrimp and bits of onion and avocado.

Hoisin BBQ Sauce

You could probably brush this Chinese-inspired sauce on a piece of lumber and we would like it. It goes even better with pork and chicken.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

- 1 cup hoisin sauce
- ½ cup soy sauce
- ½ cup packed brown sugar
- ¼ cup rice vinegar
- 2 tablespoons Asian sesame oil
- 1 teaspoon ground ginger
- ½ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

1. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the liquid to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook the mixture until it thickens and reduces by about one-quarter, approximately 10 minutes. Stir frequently.
2. Serve the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

WE LIKED THE OLD NAME

A part of Kansas City's big American Royal Barbecue cook-off in October, the "Best on the Planet" competition gives annual awards for premier commercial sauces, rubs, and bastes. Remus Powers, Ph.B. (Doctor of Barbecue Philosophy), started the event in 1987, originally calling it the "Diddy-Wa-Diddy National Barbecue Sauce Contest."

Plum Good Slopping Sauce

The name lays the claim.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

- 16-ounce to 17-ounce can plums in heavy syrup, undrained
- ¼ cup minced scallions
- 1 tablespoon yellow mustard
- 1 teaspoon molasses
- ½ teaspoon ground red chile, preferably New Mexican or ancho
- ¼ teaspoon salt
- Dash of Worcestershire sauce

1. Mix the ingredients in a saucepan and bring the liquid to a simmer. Reduce the heat to low and cook the mixture until it thickens, approximately 20 minutes. Stir frequently.
2. Serve the sauce warm or chilled. It keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks.

Mango-Habanero Hellfire

For a really hot time, ring this number. Don't forget to practice safe cooking, wearing rubber gloves when handling the searing habanero, which is a natural mate to mango and other fruit flavors.

MAKES ABOUT 1½ CUPS

1 large ripe juicy mango, chunked
3 scallions, chunked
3 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
1½ teaspoons molasses
½ teaspoon minced habanero or Scotch
bonnet chile, or more to taste
½ teaspoon salt
¼ teaspoon dried thyme
⅛ teaspoon ground allspice

Place all the ingredients in a blender. Purée, adding 1 to 2 tablespoons of water if needed to make the process go smoothly. Avoid standing directly over the blender or taking a deep breath of the pungent chile aroma. Use the sauce immediately or chill for up to a couple of days.



Traditional Side Dishes and Breads



What pitmasters serve on the side has a lot to do with what they serve in the center, and that has a lot to do with where they happen to be holding forth. Somewhere in the country, someone offers almost anything you can imagine, from pig snouts to tamales.

Our recipes cover the most traditional dishes, plus a few of the most unusual, but we don't always fix them in a purely old-fashioned way. In some cases we've spiced up the preparation a bit to help finish off the flavor of a dish, so that it can stand alone as well as sit on the side. Despite the occasional embellishments, the recipes remain true to their tradition. You'll find them worthy of serving on any barbecue plate, anywhere in the country.



Creamy Coleslaw	369	Buttermilk Onion Rings	380
Lexington Red Slaw	370	Famous French Fries	381
Brunswick Stew	370	Prize Pilau	382
Kentucky Burgoo	372	Hot Tamales	383
Kansas City Baked Beans	373	Mayme's Macaroni and Cheese	384
Cowpoke Pintos	374	Peppery 'Pups	385
Flash-Fried Okra	376	Jalapeño Poppers	386
Not Deli Dills	377	Cracklin' Cornbread	387
Candied Sweet Potatoes	378	Buttermilk Biscuits	388
Country Collard Greens	378	Sweet Potato Biscuits	389
Smashed Potato Bake	379	Blue Corn Muffins	390



Creamy Coleslaw

The barbecue belt never needed iceberg lettuce. When most of the country started down the road to radicchio in the 1950s, 'Q' lovers remained faithful to America's original crunchy green salad, coleslaw. This is a classic version of the dish, updated for contemporary tastes but still similar to the old *cool sla* that many early settlers ate with meat.

SERVES 6 TO 8

1 cup half-and-half
1/2 cup sugar
6 tablespoons cider vinegar
2 tablespoons mayonnaise
2 garlic cloves, minced
1 teaspoon salt, or more to taste
1 medium head cabbage, grated
2 to 3 carrots, grated

In a lidded jar, shake together the half-and-half, sugar, vinegar, mayonnaise, garlic, and salt until well blended. Place the cabbage and carrots in a large bowl, pour the dressing over the vegetables, and toss together. Chill the slaw for at least 1 hour. It keeps well for several days.

TRUE TO TRADITION

Lexington, North Carolina, is the only town in the country that has given its name to a type of barbecue. Since the turn of the century—when the burg's first joint opened in a tent across from the courthouse—a succession of pit-masters have maintained a consistent tradition by training their heirs as they cooked. Today as then, the Lexington style is pulled and chopped pork shoulder served with a mild tomato and vinegar sauce, topped off with a mound of red coleslaw made with the same sauce. It's so good that a town of sixteen thousand supports more than a dozen barbecue restaurants.



Lexington Red Slaw

Coleslaw is so linked to the 'Q,' some pitmasters like to flavor it with a dollop of barbecue sauce. That's particularly popular in the Piedmont region of North Carolina, home of this colorful version.

SERVES 6 TO 8

- 1 cup mayonnaise
- 3 tablespoons Carolina Red (page 350) or other Lexington/Piedmont-style tomato-based barbecue sauce
- 2 to 3 tablespoons sugar
- 1 tablespoon ketchup
- 1 tablespoon cider vinegar
- 1 teaspoon salt, or more to taste
- 1 medium head cabbage, grated

1. In a lidded jar, shake together the mayonnaise, barbecue sauce, sugar, ketchup, vinegar, and salt until well blended.
2. Place the cabbage in a large bowl. Pour the dressing over the cabbage and toss together. Chill the slaw for at least 1 hour. It keeps well for several days.



Brunswick Stew

Brunswick stew is as old as barbecue. Early British settlers in the Southeast cooked both kinds of food, and in that region the two are still served together. "A good Brunswick stew," according to one venerable source, "is made of practically everything on the farm and in the woods, including chicken, beef, veal, squirrels, okra, beans, corn, potatoes, tomatoes, butter-beans, vinegar, celery, catsup, sugar, mustard, and enough red pepper to bring tears to your eyes." This version leaves out the squirrel meat—though some swear it's essential for authenticity—and it starts with smoked chicken rather than an uncooked bird.

SERVES 10 TO 12

2½-pound to 3-pound smoked chicken (or substitute the same size uncooked chicken)

1 pound boneless pork loin, cubed

¼ pound sliced bacon, chopped fine

4 large baking potatoes, peeled

3 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

3 medium onions, chopped

Two 10-ounce packages frozen lima beans or 2¼ cups fresh limas

1¼ cups fresh green beans, cut in ¾-inch lengths

5 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce

2 tablespoons yellow mustard

4 teaspoons coarsely ground black pepper

1 tablespoon salt

1 teaspoon cayenne, or more to taste

1. Place the chicken, pork loin, and bacon in a stockpot. Pour 10 cups of water over and bring to a simmer. Cook, uncovered, for 1 hour.

2. While the meats simmer, slice 3 of the potatoes in thirds and place them in a saucepan with enough water to cover. Bring the potatoes to a boil and cook until soft, about 20 minutes. Drain and mash the potatoes with the butter. Set aside.

3. Remove the chicken from the pot. When cool enough to handle, discard the skin and bones, and shred the chicken into bite-size pieces

4. Return the chicken to the pot along with the mashed potatoes. Cut the remaining potato into bite-size chunks. Add the potato, other vegetables, and seasonings to the pot. Continue to simmer over medium-low heat for 1½ hours, stirring frequently. Add more water if the stew appears dry. The chicken and pork should be tender enough to fall apart, blending with the soft vegetables into a thick ragoût. The stew can be served immediately, but it reheats or freezes well.

Serving Suggestion *While Brunswick stew accompanies 'Q' in some areas, it also makes a satisfying main dish, especially on a rainy fall evening. We like to offer it with a selection of breads, including Blue Corn Muffins (page 390) and Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389).*

AN AMERICAN CLASSIC

In *Fading Feast* (1979, Farrar, Straus & Giroux), a commemoration of disappearing regional American foods, Raymond Sokolov called Brunswick stew "the most famous dish to emerge from the campfires and cabins of pioneer America." Like some of the other foods Sokolov described, it seems to be on the road to revival.

Kentucky Burgoo

The Kentucky equivalent of Brunswick stew, burgoo is a living legacy, a hearty and peppery concoction from the past that's still a passion in the state. Some say the odd name has French or Turkish origins, but one authority suggests that it was just a slurred pronunciation of "bird stew."

SERVES 10 TO 12

2½-pound to 3-pound smoked chicken (or substitute the same size uncooked chicken)

1½ pounds beef or veal shanks

1 pound smoked mutton or lamb (or substitute 1½ pounds uncooked lamb shanks)

1 tablespoon salt

3 cups tomato purée

2½ cups shredded cabbage

3 large baking potatoes, peeled, if you wish, and chopped

2 medium green bell peppers, chopped

2 large onions, chopped

3 to 4 medium carrots, sliced thin

3 large celery ribs, chopped

3 garlic cloves, minced

¼ cup sherry vinegar

1 tablespoon A-1 Original Steak Sauce

2 teaspoons freshly ground black pepper

¾ teaspoon cayenne or more to taste

2½ cups sliced okra, fresh or frozen

2 cups corn kernels, fresh or frozen

1. Place the chicken, beef or veal shanks, and mutton or lamb in a stockpot. Pour 12 cups of water over, sprinkle in the salt, and bring the mixture to a simmer. Cook, uncovered, for 1½ hours.

2. Remove the chicken and meats from the pot. When cool enough to handle, discard the skin, fat, and bones, and shred the chicken and meats into bite-size pieces.

3. Return the chicken and meats to the pot. Add the remaining ingredients, except for the okra and corn. Continue to simmer over medium-low heat for 2 more hours, stirring frequently. Add the okra and corn and cook for at least 1 more hour, preferably 2. Add more water if the stew appears dry.

4. As with Brunswick stew, the ingredients should be cooked down and no longer easily identifiable. The stew can be served immediately, but it is even better reheated the following day.

A THOROUGHbred STEW

The winner of the Kentucky Derby in 1932, a home-state horse, was Burgoo King. The owner named the thoroughbred after a famous Lexington burgoo cook, James T. Looney.

STANDARD-SETTING BURGEOO

Western Kentucky is the heart of burgoo country, and the town of Owensboro claims to be the capitol. George's Bar-B-Q in Owensboro does indeed make the best restaurant version we've found anywhere. If you decide to stop by, don't be put off by the appearance of the cinder-block roadhouse café. The food's much finer than the table settings.



Kansas City Baked Beans

Boston has no monopoly on baked beans. This is how they cook them out west in Kansas City, where barbecue sauce is a key ingredient and a few local "burnt" brisket ends sometimes add a powerful smoky flavor.

SERVES 6 TO 8

- 1 pound dried navy beans
- 1 teaspoon salt, plus more to taste
- 4 slices bacon, chopped
- 1 medium onion, chopped
- 2 medium bell peppers, chopped, preferably red and green
- 1 cup Struttin' Sauce (page 347), Smoked Onion Sauce (page 360) or other tomato-based barbecue sauce, or more to taste
- 1 cup apple cider
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup molasses
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup yellow mustard
- 1 to 2 tablespoons cider vinegar
- 1 cup shredded Burnt Ends (page 108) (optional)

1. Soak the beans for at least 4 hours in water to cover, then drain.
2. In a large, heavy saucepan, combine the beans with 6 cups of water. Bring the beans to a boil over high heat, and then reduce to a simmer. Cook slowly, stirring up from the bottom occasionally for at least 2 to 3 hours, depending on the beans. Stir in the salt after the beans have softened. Add more water if the beans begin to seem dry. The beans are ready when they mash easily but still hold their shape. Drain the beans.
3. Preheat the oven to 325°F.

4. In a skillet, fry the bacon until crisp. Remove the bacon with a slotted spoon and drain it. Add the onion and bell pepper to the rendered bacon drippings and sauté until soft.

5. Transfer the bacon and the onion mixture to a greased Dutch oven or other

baking dish. Mix in the remaining ingredients and the beans. Bake, covered, for about 1 hour. Uncover and bake for an additional 15 to 30 minutes. Serve hot. The beans reheat especially well.



Cowpoke Pintos

Meanwhile, down on the ranch, they wouldn't eat a navy bean even if Dolly Parton baked it. If you prefer your beans *borracho* (drunken), replace the soft drink with beer.

SERVES 6 TO 8

1 pound dried pinto beans, soaked overnight
12 ounces Coca-Cola or Dr Pepper or beer
14.5-ounce can whole tomatoes, undrained
2 medium onions, chopped
3 slices bacon, preferably a smoky slab variety, chopped
3 tablespoons chili powder
2 tablespoons Worcestershire sauce
1 tablespoon ground cumin
4 garlic cloves, minced
3 to 4 fresh serranos or jalapeños, chopped

1 teaspoon salt, or more to taste
1 cup sliced barbecued sausage (optional)

1. Soak the beans overnight in water to cover. Drain.
2. In a Dutch oven or stockpot, combine all the ingredients except the salt and sausage with 8 cups of water. Bring the beans to a boil over high heat and then reduce to a simmer. Cook slowly, stirring up from the bottom occasionally, for at least 2 to 3

hours, depending on your batch of beans. Add more water if the beans begin to seem dry. Stir in the salt and the meat, if desired, in the last 30 minutes of cooking. The beans should still hold their shape but be soft and just a little soupy.

3. Serve the beans in bowls with a bit of the cooking liquid. The beans reheat especially well.

Serving Suggestion *With slices of Cracklin' Cornbread (page 387) and romaine lettuce tossed with the vinaigrette used in Hand Salad (page 397), the beans are hearty enough for a weeknight supper.*

Variation: Wayne's Wonderful \$50 Beans
Barbecue expert Wayne Whitworth often kids us about the \$100 fish (a beauty of a 10-pound wild-caught Alaskan salmon)

we ordered for one of his visits, telling us we "oughta learn to fish." Here's his delicious extravagance, equally worth the investment.

Eliminate the Coke, tomatoes, bacon, and sausage from the recipe. Before you start, rub down a fully cooked 10-pound bone-in ham with $\frac{1}{3}$ cup coarsely ground black pepper. Let the ham sit for at least one hour, or refrigerate it overnight. Place the ham into a large stockpot. Fill the pot with water to cover the ham by several inches. Let the pot simmer over low heat for about half the day, covered, until the meat literally falls apart. Remove the meat and bones. Increase the pintos to 3 pounds and add them and the rest of the ingredients to the ham broth. Cook as directed above, adding to the beans at the end as much shredded ham as you like.



DON'T WHISTLE THAT TUNE

In the chuck-wagon days, cowboys called beans "whistle berries" because of their anti-social gas-producing effect. The Coca-Cola in the pintos supposedly helps to muffle the whistling, which you can also accomplish with *epazote*, an herb that's sometimes called Mexican tea. Of course, it's always best to avoid beans altogether before a dance.

Flash-Fried Okra

Fried in this old Southern fashion, okra becomes the Cinderella of vegetables, transformed from its humble and homely ways into a majestic mate for the 'Q.'

SERVES 4

1 to 1¼ pounds fresh okra pods, preferably under 2½ inches each

2 teaspoons salt

2 cups cornmeal, preferably stone-ground

Oil for deep-frying, preferably peanut

Hot pepper sauce, such as Texas Pete or Tabasco

1. Place the okra in a bowl and cover with ice water. Add 1 teaspoon of the salt. Refrigerate for 30 minutes to plump the okra.

2. Spoon the cornmeal onto a plate and stir the remaining salt and ½ teaspoon pepper

into it. Drain the okra and cut into thin rounds.

3. Pour the oil into a heavy saucepan, to a depth of at least 3 inches. Heat the oil to 360°F.

4. Dredge the okra in the cornmeal. Place batches of it in a strainer and shake lightly to knock off excess cornmeal. Fry until the cornmeal deepens slightly in color, about 30 seconds to 1 minute, stirring occasionally to fry evenly. Drain the okra and serve it immediately, accompanied by hot sauce.



Not Deli Dills

Especially in Arkansas and Mississippi, some pitmasters substitute pickles for okra as their fried green vegetable. The idea may sound strange, but the first bite will delight.

SERVES 6

4 large dill pickles, sliced into rounds about $\frac{3}{4}$ inch thick

1 cup all-purpose flour

1 teaspoon baking powder

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

1 egg

1 cup buttermilk

Oil for deep-frying, preferably peanut

1. Blot any moisture from the surface of the pickles.

2. In a medium-size bowl, stir together the flour, baking powder, salt, and pepper.

3. Combine the egg and buttermilk in a small bowl, and then pour the mixture into the dry ingredients. Stir just to combine.

4. Pour the oil into a heavy saucepan, to a depth of at least 3 inches. Heat the oil to 375°F.

5. Dip the pickles in the batter and fry a few at a time until golden brown, about 2 minutes. Drain the pickles and serve immediately.

SHOULDN'T YOU FRY ALL GREEN VEGETABLES?

Southern food authority John T. Edge tracked down dueling stories about the origins of the fried dill pickle. As he relates in *Southern Belly* (2000, Hill Street Press), one crowd gives the credit to the Hollywood Café in Robinsonville, Mississippi, where an overwhelmed cook supposedly started frying dill pickle slices in desperation one day when he had a rush on the dining room and ran out of catfish. Bob Austin declares that's a "damn lie." He claims he invented the dish in Atkins, Arkansas, at his Duchess Drive In, which was located across the street from a pickle plant. After staring out the window at that plant for years, Austin says his mind started "wandering" and he began toying around with a batter that would make pickles as good as everything else he fried.

Candied Sweet Potatoes

About as down-home as a dish can be, this gooey Southern classic is like a vegetable dessert.

SERVES 6

- 1 cup mini-marshmallows
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup bourbon or other sour-mash whiskey
- 2 to 2 $\frac{1}{2}$ pounds sweet potatoes (about 3 medium), baked or boiled, still warm
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup butter, preferably unsalted
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup milk
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup orange juice
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup packed brown sugar
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon cinnamon

1. In a small bowl, combine the marshmallows with the bourbon. Soak the marshmallows for 20 to 30 minutes, stirring occasionally.

2. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease a medium-size baking dish.

3. Peel the sweet potatoes, if needed. In a large bowl, mash or whip the potatoes with the butter. Pour any bourbon not yet absorbed by the marshmallows into the potatoes. Add the remaining ingredients, except the marshmallows, mixing until well incorporated.

4. Spoon the potatoes into the baking dish. Scatter the marshmallows over the potatoes. Bake, uncovered, for 25 to 30 minutes, until heated through to the ooey-gooey stage. Serve warm.

Country Collard Greens

Another sweetened Southern vegetable dish, these greens may be the perfect accompaniment to barbecue. The combination of the two offers a blend of honey, smoke, and spice that would be the envy of any honky-tonk angel.

SERVES 8

- 3 to 3 $\frac{1}{2}$ pounds collard greens or kale, tough stems removed and roughly chopped
- 1 smoked ham hock (about 1 pound)
- 4 medium onions, chopped
- 2 medium green or red bell peppers, chopped
- $\frac{2}{3}$ cup cider vinegar, preferably unrefined

- 1 tablespoon honey
- 3 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 tablespoon coarsely ground black pepper
- 2 teaspoons Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce, or more to taste
- 2 teaspoons celery seeds

Combine all the ingredients in a large pot with 8 cups of water, and bring to a boil. Simmer, covered, for about 2 hours. With a slotted spoon, remove the ham hock. When the hock is cool enough to handle,

pick the meat from it in small chunks or shreds and return it to the pot. Reheat the greens briefly, if necessary. Serve warm with some of the liquid, the pot likker. Leftovers keep for several days.



Smashed Potato Bake

As some barbecue joints have tried to upscale their image to family dining establishments, the side dishes have become a little more broad-ranging. Kids (or at least our grandkids) like to help make this take on the twice-baked potato.

SERVES 6

2½ pounds small potatoes, about 1½ inches in diameter, preferably a combination of red- and brown-skinned varieties

Coarse salt, either kosher or sea salt, and freshly ground black pepper or Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26)

¼ cup butter, preferably unsalted, or Smoked Butter (page 352), melted

6 ounces mild Cheddar cheese, grated, or more to taste

2 tablespoons minced fresh chives, or more to taste

Sliced pickled jalapeños (optional)

Sour cream (optional)

1. Cover the potatoes with water in a large pan, salt generously, and bring to a boil over high heat. Reduce to a simmer and

cook until tender when pierced with a fork, about 20 minutes. Drain the potatoes. Place them in a single layer in a 9 x 13-inch pan. Smash each potato lightly with a meat mallet or heavy fork. Expose the flesh but avoid totally squashing them.

2. Preheat the oven to 375°F.

3. Drizzle the melted butter over the potatoes, scatter with salt and pepper, and bake for 5 minutes. Sprinkle cheese, chives, and optional jalapeños over the potatoes. Return to the oven for about 10 minutes more, until heated through with melted cheese. Serve immediately, with sour cream on the side, if you wish.

Buttermilk Onion Rings

Barbecue legends, such as Leonard Heuberger of Memphis and Sonny Bryant of Dallas, among others, liked crispy buttermilk-soaked onion rings with their ribs and brisket. Sweet onions are particularly good in this recipe during their short spring season.

SERVES 4

- 3 large onions, preferably sweet onions
- 3 to 4 cups buttermilk
- 1 cup all-purpose flour
- 1 cup cornmeal, preferably stone-ground
- 2 teaspoons salt
- 2 teaspoons onion powder
- 2 teaspoons chili powder
- 1 teaspoon sugar (if not using sweet onions)
- Oil for deep-frying, preferably peanut

1. Cut the onions into $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch slices. In a nonreactive dish, soak the onions in the buttermilk for 30 to 60 minutes.

2. In a brown paper sack, combine the flour, cornmeal, salt, onion powder, chili powder, and, if needed, sugar. Drain the onions lightly and dredge them in the seasoned flour.

3. Pour at least 4 inches of oil into a heavy saucepan. Heat the oil to 375°F. Fry the onions, in batches, for 2 to 3 minutes, or until golden. For the crispiest results, drain on paper towels and spread on a serving platter rather than piling them into a basket, where they could become soggy. Serve immediately.



DON'T SPILL THE SAUCE ON MY BLUE SUEDE SHOES

The Bop-N-Quers contest team from Memphis devised a barbecue smoker shaped like a jukebox. When we stopped by at a cook-off, the group had set up a dance floor in its barbecue area and was bopping away the day while the 'Q' browned. They didn't win at that event, but they looked like they had more fun than anyone who took home a prize.

Famous French Fries

Anyone can fry potatoes, but few people know how to make great French fries. The secret is a few extra steps, all worth the time in extra flavor.

Increase the number of potatoes and other ingredients as needed for additional eaters.

SERVES 1

1 to 1½ medium baking potatoes

Ice cubes

Peanut oil or lard for deep-frying

Salt and/or Cajun or Creole seasoning, or
Smoky Salt (page 30)

1. Wash the potatoes and, if you wish, peel them. We prefer the peels on, and besides, it's less work. Slice them into fat matchsticks, about $\frac{3}{8}$ inch wide, and toss them into a bowl of cold water. Soak the potatoes in the water for at least 1 hour and preferably 2, to eliminate much of the starch. Pour off the water, add more cold water to cover, and toss in a half-dozen ice cubes. Soak the potatoes in the ice water to firm them back up, about 30 minutes. Drain them well on a dish towel or sturdy paper towels, drying off each matchstick. Then roll the potatoes up in another dry towel. You want no remaining moisture.

2. Heat the oil to 340°F in a large heavy saucepan. Add the potatoes in batches and partially fry them for 4 minutes. They should just begin to color. Drain the potatoes. This step can be done up to 30 minutes before eating.

3. Immediately, or just before serving, re-heat the oil to 360°F. Fry the potatoes again for 3 to 4 minutes, or until golden brown. Drain the potatoes again. Sprinkle the salt or seasoning into a brown paper sack, add the potatoes, and shake. Serve the fries hot.

Variation: Famous Wet Fries For the height of excess, top the fried potatoes with melted cheese and a dollop of your favorite tomato-based barbecue sauce. (We use Struttin' Sauce, page 347.) For extra pizzazz, add a few slices of fresh or pickled jalapeño.

INDEPENDENT SPIRIT

The sign at the entrance to Rosedale Barbeque, near downtown Kansas City, proudly announces that the restaurant was born on July 4, 1934. Anthony Rieke founded the lunchroom-cum-bar and designed his own pits, including a rotisserie smoker for ribs that he tested first by riding in it himself.

Prize Pilau

Spelled and pronounced a dozen different ways, this chicken-and-rice dish probably landed in Charleston, South Carolina, about 1680 and spread across the South as rice cultivation moved westward. Pilau is unusual for the region because of its French and Spanish overtones, but it's been a favorite in the barbecue belt for more than three centuries. The recipe really benefits from the use of homemade stock.

SERVES 6 TO 8

- 2½-pound to 3-pound whole chicken
- 4 cups chicken stock, preferably homemade
- 1½ teaspoons salt (if the stock is unsalted; otherwise, reduce the salt to taste)
- 1½ teaspoons freshly ground black pepper
- 3 tablespoons bacon drippings or unsalted butter
- 1½ cups chopped green bell peppers
- 1 cup sliced scallions
- 1 cup chopped celery
- 1 teaspoon Worcestershire sauce
- 1 teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce
- 2 cups uncooked white rice

1. Place the chicken in a stockpot. Pour the stock and 4 cups of water over, sprinkle in the salt and pepper, and bring the mixture to a simmer. Cook, uncovered, for 45 to 50 minutes. The chicken should be done, but not falling apart.

2. Preheat the oven to 350°F.

3. Remove the chicken from the pot. Increase the heat to high and reduce the cooking liquid to 2½ cups. Skim the fat

from the cooking liquid. When the chicken is cool enough to handle, discard the skin, fat, and bones, and shred the chicken into bite-size pieces. Reserve both the cooking liquid and the chicken.

4. In a Dutch oven or other flameproof baking dish, warm the bacon drippings or butter over medium heat. Add the remaining ingredients, except the rice, and sauté until the vegetables are tender.

5. Stir the rice into the vegetables and pour the cooking liquid over the mixture. Scatter the chicken over the top. Cover the pilau and bake for about 2 hours, or until the liquid is absorbed and the rice is soft. Stir the pilau and serve it warm.

Serving Suggestion Although pilau pairs with barbecue in the Carolinas, we find its subtle and distinctive flavors are shown off best when the dish takes center stage. We prefer it as a main dish with Sweet and Sour Cukes (page 398), Succotash Salad (page 403), or other vegetable salads.

Hot Tamales

By all geographical rights, tamales should be a Southwestern side dish with barbecue, but it's actually the Mississippi Delta that specializes in them. Mexican laborers who came to pick cotton in the early twentieth century probably brought the germ of the idea. Only a skinny cousin to a Tex-Mex or New Mexican tamale, they are usually made with yellow cornmeal rather than masa harina.

MAKES 24 TAMALES

MEAT FILLING

- 1 tablespoon bacon drippings
- $\frac{3}{4}$ pound ground pork or beef
- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup chili powder
- $\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon salt
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon dried oregano, preferably Mexican
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon cumin seeds, toasted and ground
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup beef broth

TAMALES

- 6-ounce package dried corn husks
- 4 cups cornmeal, preferably yellow stone-ground
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ cups beef broth
- $1\frac{1}{4}$ cups vegetable oil, or solid vegetable shortening
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons salt

1. In a heavy skillet, warm the bacon drippings over medium heat and add the meat and garlic. Brown the meat, then add the chili powder, salt, oregano, cumin, and broth. Simmer over medium heat for about 20 minutes or until the mixture has thickened but is still moist. Watch care-

fully toward the end of the cooking time, stirring frequently so it does not burn. Reserve the mixture. It can be made a day ahead.

2. To prepare the corn husks, soak them in hot water to cover in a deep bowl or pan. After 30 minutes the husks should be softened and pliable. Separate the husks and rinse them under warm running water to wash away any grit or brown silks. Soak the husks in more warm water until you are ready to use them.

3. Pour the cornmeal into another large bowl. Add the broth, oil, salt, and 1 cup water, or more as needed. Mix with a sturdy spoon, powerful electric mixer, or with your hands until smooth. When well blended, the mixture should have the consistency of a moist cookie dough.

4. To assemble the tamales, hold a corn husk flat on one hand. With a rubber spatula, spread a thin layer of cornmeal across the husk and top it with about 1 tablespoon of the meat filling. Roll the husk into a tube shape and tie the two ends with

strips of corn husk. (It should resemble a party favor.) Repeat the procedure until all the meat and cornmeal mixture are used.

5. Steam the tamales, standing them on end or criss-crossed over water in a large saucepan or small stockpot. Don't pack the tamales too tightly. Cook the tamales for 50 minutes to 1 hour, until the cornmeal mixture is firm and no longer sticks to the corn husk. Unwrap one tamale to check its consistency.

6. The tamales should be eaten warm after first removing the corn husk.

Serving Suggestion Try the tamales as a main dish served with San Antonio Cactus and Corn Salad (page 398) and Key Lime Pie (page 425).

Variation: Arkansas Tamale Spread

McLard's in Hot Springs, Arkansas, serves this belly-buster. Layer a platter of corn chips and top with a few tamales, then arrange a healthy portion of your favorite kind of chopped barbecued beef. Spoon chili beans over the meat, and finish with chopped onion and grated cheese. Alka-Seltzer makes a good dessert.



Mayme's Macaroni and Cheese

While fettuccine, penne, and orzo may be the rage in some American restaurants, modest elbow macaroni still outsells them all. Combined with cheese as a time-honored comfort food, it offers a good foil to the smoky richness of barbecued meats. Cheryl's grandmother, Mayme Luthy Alters, perfected this version, though without our addition of the Tabasco, which would have sent grandfather Clifford through the ceiling.

SERVES 6

$\frac{3}{4}$ pound elbow macaroni, cooked according to package directions

2 tablespoons butter, preferably unsalted

3 eggs

1 cup buttermilk

1 cup evaporated milk

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons dry mustard

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

2 cups grated sharp Cheddar cheese
(8 ounces)

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease a medium-size baking dish. Toss the warm macaroni with the butter.

2. In a medium-size bowl, beat the eggs lightly and add the buttermilk, evaporated milk, dry mustard, Tabasco, pepper, and salt. Mix well. Stir in the macaroni and the

cheese and pour the mixture into the prepared dish.

3. Bake, uncovered, for 30 minutes or until the macaroni and cheese is lightly firm and browned. Serve warm. Any leftovers should be reheated gently to avoid developing the consistency of galvanized rubber.



Peppery 'Pups

These red pepper hushpuppies are a Carolina barbecue specialty. Because of their crunch, they may go better with the 'Q' than with fried fish, the more common mate.

SERVES 4 TO 6

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup cornmeal, preferably white stone-ground

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup all-purpose flour

$\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon sugar

$\frac{1}{2}$ to 1 teaspoon cayenne

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon baking powder

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon baking soda

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup buttermilk

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup minced onion

1 egg, lightly beaten

Peanut oil for deep-frying

1. In a medium-size bowl, stir together the cornmeal, flour, sugar, cayenne, baking powder and soda, and salt. Mix in the buttermilk, onion, and egg.

2. Pour enough oil in a skillet to measure at least 2 inches in depth. Heat the oil to 350°F. Gently spoon in the hushpuppy batter by the tablespoon. Try a test pup first. It should quickly puff up and, when done, be deep golden brown on the outside. Cut into the first one to make sure it is cooked through. Adjust the heat if necessary.

3. Drain the hushpuppies and serve hot.

Jalapeño Poppers

Like the hushpuppies, these little firecrackers also offer a good crunch, but with a creamy interior that offsets the jalapeño heat.

MAKES APPROXIMATELY 1 DOZEN

12-ounce jar pickled whole large jalapeños
(about 12 chiles)

2 ounces cream cheese, softened

2 tablespoons shredded mild Cheddar cheese

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup cornmeal, preferably stone-ground

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup extra-fine stone-ground cornmeal
(sometimes called corn flour), preferably, or
all-purpose flour

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon Smoky Salt (page 30), seasoned
salt, or plain salt

1 large egg

2 tablespoons milk

Vegetable oil

Sauce Olé (page 354) or other salsa, optional

1. Slit each of the jalapeños along one side from top to bottom. Mash the cheeses together in a small bowl. Nudge about a heaping teaspoon of cheese into each pepper, being sure to push the cheeses into the tops and bottoms of the pods. (The exact amount of cheese will vary with the size of your chiles.) This is easiest using your fingers, but afterward wash your hands well with soap and water before touching your eyes, lips, or other sensitive skin. Combine the two cornmeals and salt on a plate.

2. Whisk the egg and milk in a bowl until light and very foamy. Dunk the jalapeños into the egg mixture and then into the cornmeal mixture, rolling to coat evenly, then repeat so that each has a double coating of egg and cornmeal. Transfer to a greased baking sheet and chill for 10 to 30 minutes.

3. Pour several inches of oil into a high-sided skillet or saucepan and heat the oil to 360°F. Fry the jalapeños, a few at a time (so that the oil temperature doesn't drop drastically) until deep golden and crisp, 1 to 1½ minutes. Drain and serve immediately, with salsa on the side, if you wish.

Variation: Baked Jalapeño Poppers If you're trying to manage too many cooking chores at once, you may find that baking the poppers works better for you than frying them. The crust isn't as crisp, but they still pop in your mouth. When you remove the stuffed jalapeños from the fridge, spritz them lightly with vegetable oil spray. Bake in a preheated 375°F oven directly on the chilled baking sheet for 10 to 12 minutes, until deep golden.

Cracklin' Cornbread

An old Southern favorite, cracklings are crunchy slivers of pork skin or other bits of meat left after fat has been rendered. Using bacon will be easier for most home cooks and will result in a similar flavor. If you're feeling virtuous about fat, or having a vegetarian boss to dinner, eliminate the bacon and substitute a tablespoon of vegetable oil for the rendered fat.

SERVES 6 TO 8

- 3 slices bacon, chopped
- 1½ cups cornmeal, preferably stone-ground
- ½ cup all-purpose flour
- 3 tablespoons sugar
- 1 tablespoon baking powder
- ¾ teaspoon salt
- 1 teaspoon baking soda
- 1½ cups buttermilk
- 3 large eggs, lightly beaten
- 1 cup fresh or frozen corn kernels
- 2 tablespoons unsalted butter, melted

1. Preheat the oven to 400°F.
2. In a cast-iron skillet, fry the bacon over medium-low heat until very crisp. With a slotted spoon, remove the bacon, and drain it. Pour out all but 1 tablespoon of the rendered bacon fat. Keep the skillet warm.
3. In a medium-size bowl, stir together the cornmeal, flour, sugar, baking powder,

salt, and baking soda. Pour in the buttermilk and eggs and mix by hand until lightly but thoroughly blended. Stir in the corn, bacon, and melted butter.

4. Pour the batter into the warm skillet. Bake for 20 minutes, or until the cornbread's edges are brown and the top has lightly browned. A toothpick inserted in the center should come out clean. Serve warm.

Variation: Cracklin' Corn Cakes The batter, thinned with an additional ¼ to ½ cup buttermilk, can be fried into corn-cakes, a barbecue accompaniment in some areas of the upper South. Use a griddle or a large skillet and a film of bacon drippings or vegetable oil for frying over medium heat like pancakes.

PASS THE BLAND BREAD, PLEASE

Old-fashioned white bread and similar hamburger-style buns are easily the favorite breads to eat with barbecue. The very characteristics that many people disdain—the blandness and sponginess—are a perfect foil for barbecue sauce. Even so, we'll take cornbread with our 'Q' any day.

Buttermilk Biscuits

In contrast to so many commercial versions, a superior biscuit should be a sky-high puff of dough as light as a cumulus cloud. These beauties achieve that ethereal texture and taste, while soaking up barbecue juices with the best of the white breads. If you just can't abide the idea of lard, replace it with butter, but know that you are messing with tradition, texture, and taste.

MAKES ABOUT EIGHT 3-INCH OR TWELVE TO FOURTEEN 2-INCH BISCUITS

2 cups soft-wheat flour, such as White Lily, or
1¾ cups all-purpose flour plus 2 table-
spoons cake flour

1½ tablespoons sugar

2 teaspoons baking powder

½ teaspoon baking soda

½ teaspoon salt

3 tablespoons lard, well chilled

2 tablespoons solid vegetable shortening, such
as Crisco, well chilled

1 cup buttermilk, well chilled

1. Position the baking rack in the middle of the oven and preheat the oven to 450°F. Grease a baking sheet.

2. Sift together the dry ingredients into a large bowl. Repeat the sifting 3 times. With a pastry blender or large fork, blend in the

lard and shortening, working lightly until a coarse meal forms. Pour in the buttermilk and stir together just until a sticky dough forms.

3. Flour your hands and a pastry board or counter. Turn the dough out and knead it lightly, 4 to 6 times. Pat out the dough to a thickness of about ½ inch. Cut with a 2-inch or 3-inch biscuit cutter or round cookie cutter.

4. Transfer the biscuits to the baking sheet, arranging so that they just touch each other. Bake for about 10 minutes, or until the biscuits are raised and golden brown. At the halfway point, turn the baking sheet from front to back, to get the most even browning. Serve immediately.

A WELL-KNOWN SECRET

A miraculous product from barbecue country, soft-wheat flours like White Lily have been the secret to great Southern biscuits for more than a century. Soft-wheat flours absorb less liquid than all-purpose or hard-wheat flours, creating lighter, flakier biscuits. If you can't find soft-wheat flour, you can order directly from White Lily in Knoxville, Tennessee (800-264-5459, www.whitelily.com).

Sweet Potato Biscuits

A lovely shade of orange and very moist, these biscuits stay a little more compact than their buttermilk cousins. If you must, substitute shortening for the lard.

MAKES ABOUT TWELVE TO FOURTEEN 2-INCH BISCUITS

8 ounces cooked sweet potato, well chilled

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup buttermilk, well chilled

1 cup soft-wheat flour, such as White Lily, or
 $\frac{7}{8}$ cup all-purpose flour and 1 tablespoon
cake flour

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons baking powder

1 teaspoon sugar

1 teaspoon chili powder

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon baking soda

3 tablespoons lard, well chilled

1. Position the baking rack in the middle of the oven and preheat the oven to 450°F. Grease a baking sheet.

2. Purée the sweet potato and buttermilk together in a food processor or blender.

3. Sift the dry ingredients together into a bowl. With a pastry blender, cut in the lard until the mixture resembles coarse meal. With a spoon or spatula, fold in the sweet potato. Blend together well with the dry ingredients but don't overmix.

4. On a floured board or counter, knead the dough lightly, about 20 turns of the dough over itself. Pat out the dough to a thickness of about $\frac{1}{2}$ inch and cut with a 2-inch biscuit cutter or round cookie cutter.

5. Transfer the biscuits to the baking sheet. Bake for about 14 minutes, or until the biscuits are raised and lightly browned on the top edges. At the halfway point, turn the baking sheet from front to back, to get the most even browning. Serve hot.



ADDING CRUNCH TO THE 'Q'

The biggest challenger to white bread at barbecue joints may be saltine crackers. They are particularly popular in places that serve meat by the pound and don't feature a sauce. Instead of a dainty four-pack you might get with soup in a regular restaurant, the pitmaster is likely to toss you and a mate a full, long bag of crackers directly out of the box.

Blue Corn Muffins

These slightly sweet and delicately flavored muffins are not truly traditional, but they go well with lighter smoked fare, such as fish and fowl. Substitute yellow cornmeal if you can't find the blue variety from the Southwest.

MAKES 1 DOZEN

- ¾ cup unsalted butter
- ⅓ cup sugar
- 4 large eggs
- ½ cup milk
- 1 to 2 fresh jalapeños, minced
- ¾ cup shredded mild Cheddar cheese
(3 ounces)
- 3 ounces cream cheese or fresh, mild goat
cheese
- 1 cup all-purpose flour
- 1 cup blue cornmeal, preferably stone-ground
- 2½ teaspoons baking powder
- 1 teaspoon salt
- 2 tablespoons poppy seeds

1. Preheat the oven to 375°F. Grease a muffin tin.

2. Cream together the butter and sugar with an electric mixer or food processor. Add the eggs, milk, jalapeños, and cheeses, mixing well after each addition. Sift together the flour, cornmeal, baking powder, and salt. Spoon the dry mixture into the batter about one-third at a time, again mixing well after each addition. Stir in the poppy seeds at the end.

3. Spoon the batter into the prepared muffin tins. Bake for 22 to 25 minutes, or until a toothpick inserted in the center comes out clean. Serve warm or at room temperature.



SPONGY WHITE VEGGIES

Many Bar-B-Q joints take pride in not cooking anything except their barbecue. In these cases, the side dishes are limited to items that don't require much except cutting—such as onions, tomatoes, avocados, jalapeños, and dill pickles. Our friend Toni Sikes, who grew up in Alabama, says that if you ordered vegetables at her favorite barbecue restaurant, you would get a few slices of white bread.

Side-Dish Salads and Relishes



Any pitmasters who limit their accompaniments to traditional barbecue side dishes are being blinded by their own smoke. Many kinds of food go great with barbecue, from down-home picnic specialties to creative, contemporary concoctions.

Unlike the dishes in the chapter on Smoke-Scented Salads, Pastas, and Pizzas, which make an ample meal in themselves, the salads and relishes here go on the side of the plate as a vibrant supplement to the main course. They help to round out a barbecue feast with complementary tastes that add new dimensions to the dinner. You can even enjoy them without barbecue, but they contrast particularly well with smoky flavors, which bring out the best of their refreshing garden goodness.

Southern Caesar Salad	393	Asian Vegetable Slaw	404
California Crunch	394	Arty Rice Salad	405
Killed Salad	394	Mango and Avocado Salad	406
Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas Salad	396	'Nana Nut Salad	407
Hand Salad	397	Devil-May-Care Eggs	408
Sweet and Sour Cukes	398	Okra Pickles	409
San Antonio Cactus and Corn Salad	398	Bodacious Bread-and-Butter Pickles	410
Boarding House Macaroni Salad	399	Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles	411
Tangy Buttermilk Potato Salad	400	Wonderful Watermelon Pickles	412
Hot German Potato Salad	401	Green Tomato Chowchow	413
Sweet Sally's Sweet Potato Salad	402	Squash Relish	415
Succotash Salad	403	Corn and Watermelon Pickle-lilli	416
Kraut Salad	403	Bourbon Peaches	417



Southern Caesar Salad

The classic Caesar salad contains some things, such as a coddled egg, that don't seem right at a barbecue. This variation gets extra zing from onions.

SERVES 4 TO 6

SOUTHERN CAESAR DRESSING

- 1½ cups extra-virgin olive oil
- 5 to 6 garlic cloves
- 2 tablespoons fresh lemon juice
- 2 tablespoons sherry vinegar
- 2 to 3 medium onions, cut in thick slices
- 2 to 3 heads romaine, the dark green outer leaves reserved for another purpose
- 1 tablespoon Dijon mustard
- 1 teaspoon anchovy paste
- ¼ teaspoon coarsely ground black pepper
- ½ cup grated Romano cheese

1. Combine the oil and garlic in a blender or food processor. Strain the oil through a fine sieve and discard the garlic. Pour the oil and remaining dressing ingredients back into the blender or food processor and combine until thick. Set aside.

2. Place the onions in a shallow dish in a single layer. Pour about ½ cup of the

dressing over the onions and allow them to marinate for at least 30 minutes.

3. Prepare a grill or broiler. Drain the onions and grill or broil them for 8 to 10 minutes, until lightly browned and well softened. Watch them carefully, as they should caramelize lightly but not burn. Toss the onions with a tablespoon or two of dressing and set the onions aside to cool.

4. In a large bowl, toss the romaine leaves gently with enough dressing to coat, reserving the rest of the dressing for other salads. (Leftover dressing keeps for several weeks.) Transfer the lettuce to a decorative platter and top it with the onion slices. Sprinkle the cheese over the salad and serve.

Serving Suggestion On weekends when we're barbecuing for much of the day, we like this for lunch, accompanied by Sweet Potato Biscuits (page 389) or any good loaf of bread.

THE MEX-ITALIAN SALAD

Something in the origin of the Caesar salad may explain why the classic version is not quite right for barbecue. Caesar Cardini, an Italian chef, created the salad in the Roaring Twenties in a restaurant he owned in Tijuana, Mexico. Southern Californians partying in the city depleted most of the food in the kitchen, so Cardini threw together what remained and convinced the tipsy patrons that it was a special new dish. The Hollywood crowd adopted the idea and made the salad a star.

California Crunch

The combination of ingredients comes from the West Coast, but the taste and texture of this salad travel easily to other terrains.

SERVES 4 TO 6

CALIFORNIA DRESSING

1 ripe avocado, peeled, pitted, and cut into chunks

2 tablespoons fresh lemon juice

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup sour cream or plain yogurt

6 tablespoons vegetable oil

1 medium head romaine lettuce, sliced into thick ribbons

2 ripe medium tomatoes, chopped

1 ripe avocado, peeled, pitted, and sliced

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup black olives, sliced

1 garlic clove, minced

1 teaspoon chili powder

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon sugar

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

1 cup corn chips

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium onion, cut in very thin rings

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup grated Monterey jack or pepper jack cheese

1. Combine all the dressing ingredients in a blender and purée until smooth.

2. In a bowl, toss the romaine, tomatoes, avocado, and olives with about half the dressing. Top the salad with the corn chips, onion, and cheese, arranged attractively. Serve immediately with additional dressing on the side. If the dressing thickens too much, mix a bit of water into it.

Killed Salad

Generations of Southern cooks doused leaf lettuce with a heap of hot bacon drippings, more than a smidgen of sugar, and a splash of vinegar. This is a homey but slightly more sophisticated take on the original idea. Most people know it as a “wilted salad,” but some Southerners have always called it “killed salad.”

SERVES 4 TO 6

GLAZED BACON

4 slices bacon, preferably a smoky slab variety

1 tablespoon honey

1 tablespoon yellow mustard

Dash of cider vinegar

BACON VINAIGRETTE

Rendered bacon fat plus extra-virgin olive oil
to make $\frac{1}{2}$ cup

1 garlic clove, minced

3 tablespoons cider vinegar

1 tablespoon honey

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

10 to 12 cups torn leaf lettuce

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.
2. Arrange the bacon in a single layer on a baking sheet with sides. Bake the bacon 10 minutes, and pour off all rendered fat, reserving it.
3. In a small bowl, mix the honey, mustard, and vinegar together. Spread half the mixture on top of the bacon, and return the meat to the oven for another 7 to 8 minutes. Turn the bacon over and spread it with the remaining syrup mixture. Bake for another 6 to 7 minutes, until the bacon is medium-brown and crispy. Watch care-

fully for the last few minutes to avoid burning. Cool briefly. Chop or crumble the bacon.

4. Warm the bacon fat and oil mixture over medium heat in a small skillet. Add the garlic and sauté it briefly. Add the remaining dressing ingredients and heat through, stirring until the honey dissolves.

5. Place the greens in a salad bowl and pour the warm dressing over them. Toss lightly. Like cooked spinach, the lettuce will reduce substantially in volume. Sprinkle the bacon over the salad and serve the salad hot or at room temperature.

Serving Suggestion *Granny served her version of this salad with a Sunday ham and, maybe in the spring, batter-fried mushrooms hunted by the whole family. We like it on summer evenings with crusty rolls and Peach Melba Ice Cream (page 445) or Mojito Sorbet (page 444).*



MEATY SALAD

Opened in a log cabin in 1923, the Dixie Pig in Blytheville is among the oldest restaurants in Arkansas. It also has the distinction of serving its delicious pork barbecue in unusual ways. If you order a plate, French fries come on top of the meat, and the house salad consists of lettuce and tomatoes topped with a mound of smoky pork and a choice of dressings.

Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas Salad

From the hoppin' John of the deep South to the Texas caviar served in Dallas, the black-eyed pea is featured in some of the favorite dishes of the barbecue belt. While we've never met a black-eyed pea we didn't like, they really shine in this salad.

SERVES 4 TO 6

- 1 pound black-eyed peas, dried or frozen
- 4 to 6 cups chicken stock
- 1 to 2 teaspoons crab boil seasoning or barbecue dry rub, such as Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26) or Seafaring Seafood Rub (page 28)
- 1 small bell pepper, preferably red, diced fine
- 6 scallions, sliced

BLACK-EYED PEA VINAIGRETTE

- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup vegetable oil
- 3 tablespoons fresh lime juice
- 1 tablespoon cider vinegar, preferably unrefined
- 1 tablespoon tomato-based barbecue sauce
- 1 to 3 teaspoons packed brown sugar
- 1 to 2 pickled jalapeños, minced

- 2 garlic cloves, minced
- 1 teaspoon chili powder
- 1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper
- 1 teaspoon salt, or more to taste
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground cumin

1. In a large saucepan, cover the peas by at least 1 inch with stock, sprinkle in the crab boil seasoning, and bring to a boil over high heat. Reduce the heat to a simmer and cook until the peas are tender, anywhere from 45 minutes to 1½ hours, depending on your peas. Frozen peas generally cook faster. Stir occasionally, and add more stock or water if the peas begin to seem dry before they are done.

OUR KIND OF BEACON

Among the small number of great drive-ins left in the country, the Beacon in Spartanburg, South Carolina, is in a class by itself. It's a better tribute to controlled chaos than central Manhattan, and guiding spirit J.C. Stobel rushes you along with more verve and determination than a New York cabbie. The kitchen cooks everything that's considered edible in the state, but many of the thousands of people who show up on weekend nights come for the barbecue, heaped on skyscraper sandwiches.

2. Drain the peas. In a large bowl, toss them together with the bell pepper and onion.

3. In a blender or food processor, mix together the vinaigrette ingredients. Pour over the peas.

4. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 2 hours and preferably overnight. The peas taste best the following day. Serve them chilled.

Serving Suggestion Always offer black-eyed peas on New Year's Eve or Day, as solid a guarantee as you can get for good luck in the months ahead. To ring in the year in style, serve the peas with a Creole Crown Roast (page 89) and Cranberry-Ginger Crumble (page 433).



Hand Salad

At a fancy affair, the hostess would probably call this *crudités*. Our version might be a little too crude for her tastes, though.

SERVES 8 TO 10

BARBECUE VINAIGRETTE

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup fresh orange juice

$2\frac{1}{2}$ to 3 tablespoons tomato-based barbecue sauce, preferably a variety that isn't overly sweet or flavored with liquid smoke, such as Memphis Magic (page 353)

2 teaspoons Worcestershire sauce

1 garlic clove, minced

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup corn oil, preferably unrefined

Salt and freshly ground black pepper to taste

A batch of easily handled raw vegetables—
asparagus stalks, carrot sticks, scallions,
cucumber chunks, broccoli florets, summer
squash slices, center leaves of romaine,
cherry tomatoes

A healthy sprinkling of barbecue dry rub,
such as Southwest Heat (page 32) or Cajun
Ragin' Rub (page 29), Smoky Salt (page 30),
or seasoned salt

1. In a food processor, combine the orange juice, barbecue and Worcestershire sauces, and garlic. Drizzle in the oil, continuing to process, until combined. Add salt and pepper to taste.

2. Arrange the vegetables on a platter. Sprinkle dry rub over them to taste. Pour the salad dressing into a bowl. Serve the veggies as finger food, for people to dunk in the dressing. Leftover dressing keeps for at least a week.

Sweet and Sour Cukes

A cooling combo no matter how hot it gets outdoors.

SERVES 6

2 medium cucumbers, peeled and chopped
1 medium red-ripe tomato, chopped
1 medium green bell pepper, chopped
1 large onion, chopped
1 cup white vinegar
 $\frac{2}{3}$ cup sugar
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

In a large bowl, toss the vegetables together. Add the remaining ingredients and stir well. Refrigerate the salad for at least 30 minutes, stirring again before serving. The salad keeps well for a couple of days.



San Antonio Cactus and Corn Salad

A Southwestern delicacy for centuries, prickly-pear cactus deserves to be better known in other regions. Look for it in the Mexican food section of the supermarket in jars labeled *nopales* or *nopalitos*. Here succulent strips of the cactus enhance summer sweet corn.

SERVES 6

4 medium ears of corn, smoked, grilled, roasted, or boiled
 $1\frac{1}{2}$ cups nopalitos, drained and diced
 $\frac{3}{4}$ cup peeled and diced cucumber
1 to 2 small tomatoes, preferably Roma or Italian plum, chopped
2 tablespoons minced cilantro
2 tablespoons sliced scallions

NOPALITOS DRESSING

3 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil
1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lime juice
1 fresh serrano chile or jalapeño, minced
 $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

Lettuce leaves

1. Slice the kernels from the ears of corn. Place the corn in a medium-size bowl and mix in the nopalitos, cucumber, tomatoes, celery, cilantro, and onion.

2. In a small lidded jar, shake together the dressing ingredients and pour over the vegetables. Serve the salad at room temperature or chilled, on the lettuce leaves.

Serving Suggestion *The salad can double as a salsa or relish. Try it—without the lettuce—on crisp tortilla chips or warm corn tortillas as an appetizer.*

Boarding House Macaroni Salad

This is the only kind of pasta salad you should have the nerve to serve with real barbecue.

SERVES 6 TO 8

1 pound macaroni, preferably small elbows or shells, cooked and drained

6 to 8 ounces mild or medium Cheddar cheese, cut in small cubes

1½ cups baby peas, fresh or frozen

1 medium green bell pepper, chopped

1 medium onion, chopped

⅔ cup sweet pickle relish

¼ cup mayonnaise

¼ cup plain yogurt

¼ cup chopped pimientos

White pepper to taste

In a large bowl, mix together all the ingredients. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 1 hour to develop the flavors. The salad keeps well for several days.

OKLAHOMA'S FIRST FAMILY OF BARBECUE

Van's Pig Stand in Shawnee brags of being "the oldest family-owned restaurant in Oklahoma." The Vandegrift clan has a modern building nowadays, but they still use barbecue recipes developed for the grand opening in 1930. Jerry Vandergrift once summed up the restaurant's history succinctly, saying, "We've gone through who knows how many wars, fires, and that sort of thing."

Tangy Buttermilk Potato Salad

Potato salad is a surefire way to a woman's heart. Men and kids like it, too.

SERVES 6 TO 8

5 medium baking potatoes, peeled

$\frac{1}{2}$ green bell pepper, chopped

6 radishes, grated

4 hard-boiled eggs, grated

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup chopped sweet pickles

3 tablespoons sweet pickle juice

4 scallions, sliced

BUTTERMILK DRESSING

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup mayonnaise

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup buttermilk

2 tablespoons chopped fresh parsley

1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon yellow mustard

2 garlic cloves, minced

1 teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

1. In a large pan of boiling salted water, cook the potatoes over high heat until tender, 15 to 20 minutes. Drain the potatoes, rinse them in cold water, and drain them again. Set the potatoes aside to cool.

2. Place the bell pepper, radishes, eggs, pickles, pickle juice, and scallions in a large bowl. Chop the cooled potatoes into bite-size chunks and add them to the bowl, mixing lightly.

3. In a blender, combine the dressing ingredients. Pour about $\frac{3}{4}$ of the dressing over the potatoes and stir together until well blended. Add more dressing to taste, or a little more salt to adjust the salad to your liking. Cover and chill for at least 2 hours or, even better, overnight. Serve cold. The salad keeps well for several days.

Variation: Hot and Spicy Buttermilk Potato Salad If you can find a "hot and spicy" variety of sweet pickles, try them in the salad for extra punch. Otherwise, add a minced serrano or jalapeño or two to the salad when you add the green bell pepper.

THE WORLD'S BEST POTATO SALAD SANDWICH

Nobody forgets a takeout rib sandwich from C & K Barbecue in St. Louis. A flattened scoop of potato salad sprawls under the top slice of white bread, making an inherently messy meal into total mayhem. Your meat of choice may be the smoky ribs or the great chicken, but many of the locals prefer "barbecued snouts," deep-fried slices of pig snouts as crunchy as cracklings.

Hot German Potato Salad

German settlers in central Texas contributed heavily to the strong barbecue tradition of the area. They also brought Old Country traditions with them in dishes like this, which is a stalwart favorite in both of our families.

SERVES 6 TO 8

8 medium red potatoes, peeled if desired

1½ celery ribs, chopped fine

½ green bell pepper, chopped fine

1 hard-boiled egg, grated

⅓ cup chopped fresh parsley

4 slices slab bacon, chopped

½ medium onion, chopped

2 teaspoons all-purpose flour

½ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

¼ teaspoon freshly ground black pepper

¾ cup beer

6 tablespoons cider vinegar

1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon sugar

1 tablespoon brown mustard

1. In a large pan of boiling salted water, cook the potatoes over high heat until tender, 15 to 20 minutes. Drain the potatoes, rinse them in cold water, and drain them again. Set them aside to cool.

2. Place the celery, bell pepper, egg, and parsley in a large bowl. Slice the potatoes thick and add them.

3. Fry the bacon in a skillet over medium heat until browned and crisp. With a

slotted spoon, remove the bacon, drain, and reserve it. Add the onion to the warm bacon drippings and cook briefly until softened. Sprinkle in the flour, salt, and pepper and stir to combine. Pour in ½ cup of the beer, the vinegar, the sugar, and the mustard, and bring to a boil. Reduce the heat and simmer for 2 to 3 minutes.

4. Pour the sauce over the potato mixture and toss to combine. The salad should look moist but not runny. If it seems dry, add some or all of the remaining beer. Taste and adjust the seasoning. The vinegar tang should come across as assertive but not aggressive. Add the bacon shortly before serving. Serve hot.

Serving Suggestion For a hearty lunch while barbecuing, try the German potato salad with the sandwich we call a German burrito—a flour tortilla wrapped around a smoked link sausage and loaded with mustard and onions. Beer would be optional only if you're French.

Sweet Sally's Sweet Potato Salad

The sweet potato makes an attractive alternative to Irish spuds in salads. Our version bathes sweet potato chunks in a zesty dressing featuring smoky chipotle chiles. This is dedicated to the memory of Sally Martin, an English friend who moved to the Southwest and started putting chipotles in everything short of afternoon tea.

SERVES 6

- 2 large or 4 small sweet potatoes, about 2 pounds total, peeled and cut into bite-size chunks
- 1 medium bell pepper, preferably red, chopped
- 1 celery rib, chopped
- 6 to 8 scallions, sliced thin
- 2 tablespoons chopped cilantro
- Salt and coarsely ground black pepper to taste

CHIPOTLE DRESSING

- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup freshly squeezed lime juice
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup canned chipotle chiles
- 1 tablespoon ketchup
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons Dijon mustard
- 1 garlic clove, minced
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup extra-virgin olive oil

1. In a large pan of boiling salted water, cook the sweet potatoes over medium-

high heat until tender, 10 to 12 minutes. Drain the potatoes, rinse them in cold water, and drain them again. Set them aside to cool briefly.

2. Place the bell pepper, celery, scallion, and cilantro in a large bowl. Add the potatoes, mixing lightly.

3. Combine all the dressing ingredients, except for the oil, in a food processor and purée together. Drizzle in the oil and continue to process until thick. Pour about three-quarters of the dressing over the potato mixture and toss to combine. The result should look moist but not runny. If it seems dry, add the remaining dressing. Taste and adjust the seasoning. Cover and chill for at least 2 hours or, even better, overnight. Serve cold. The salad keeps well for several days.



Succotash Salad

You and your guests will love this distinctive take on an outdoor party bean salad.

SERVES 6 OR MORE

- 8 ounces fresh thin young green beans, trimmed, and halved or thirded on the diagonal
- 2 cups cooked baby limas, butter beans, or shelled edamame (baby soybeans) fresh or frozen
- 2 cups cooked corn kernels
- 2 celery stalks, chopped fine
- 2 large shallots, minced
- 2 tablespoons minced fresh parsley

SUCCOTASH SALAD DRESSING

- 6 tablespoons extra-virgin olive oil
- 1½ teaspoons Dijon mustard
- ¼ teaspoon salt, or more to taste

Pinch or 2 of sugar

2 tablespoons cider vinegar

1. Steam the beans over simmering water for a brief few minutes, just until tender. Run cold water over the beans to retain their bright green color, and drain. Transfer the green beans, limas, corn, celery, shallots, and parsley to a large bowl.
2. Prepare the dressing, whisking together the ingredients in a medium bowl. Pour the dressing over the salad, toss until combined, and chill covered for at least 1 hour. Serve chilled or at room temperature.

Kraut Salad

Paul Bosland, the reigning academic authority on chiles, once specialized in sauerkraut. He changed fields when he decided that kraut wasn't a growth industry. Apparently not enough folks had tried this kind of salad.

SERVES 6

- 16 ounces sauerkraut, preferably not a canned variety
- ⅔ cup sugar
- ⅓ cup cider vinegar
- ½ cup sliced water chestnuts
- ½ medium onion, chopped
- ½ small green bell pepper, chopped

- ½ small red bell pepper, chopped
- 2 carrots, shredded fine
- 2 celery ribs, chopped
- 2 tablespoons vegetable oil
- 1 tablespoon mustard seeds
- Dash of ground cloves

1. Drain the sauerkraut, rinse it, and drain it again. Place the kraut in a large bowl.
2. In a small saucepan, heat the sugar and vinegar together until the sugar has dissolved. Pour the mixture over the kraut

and toss well. Add the remaining ingredients and toss the salad again. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 1 hour. Serve chilled. The salad keeps well for several days.



Asian Vegetable Slaw

When the seasonings of your main dish wander toward the Far East, this sprightly combo makes a welcome accompaniment.

SERVES 6 TO 8

ASIAN VEGETABLE DRESSING

- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup rice vinegar
- 6 tablespoons sugar
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup dry sherry
- 1 tablespoon minced fresh ginger
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt
- 1 small dried hot red chile (optional)
- 5 lightly packed cups shredded napa cabbage or bok choy, or a combination
- 6 ounces snow peas, stemmed and sliced into thirds lengthwise
- 4 medium carrots, grated
- 1 large red bell pepper, sliced into matchsticks

3 scallions, halved lengthwise, then sliced on the diagonal into inch-long sections

1. Combine the dressing ingredients with $\frac{3}{4}$ cup of water in a small saucepan. Bring to a boil over high heat, then reduce the heat to a simmer and cook for 5 minutes. Cool to room temperature, then discard the chile if it was used.
2. Toss together the remaining ingredients in a large bowl. Pour the dressing over the vegetables and mix well. Chill for 30 minutes and serve.

Arty Rice Salad

When Cheryl first moved south to barbecue country, right after college, this was one of the first salads she ate. It remains a sentimental favorite.

SERVES 6

2 cups cooked white rice
6-ounce jar marinated artichoke hearts, sliced thin, with marinade
 $\frac{1}{3}$ cup mayonnaise
2 celery ribs, chopped fine
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup sliced pimiento-stuffed green olives
2 tablespoons chopped red bell pepper or pimiento
2 tablespoons minced fresh parsley
3 scallions, sliced thin
1 pickled jalapeño, minced
1 teaspoon curry powder

Pinch of sugar

Lettuce leaves (optional)

In a large bowl, mix the rice with the other ingredients, except the lettuce. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 30 minutes. Serve chilled, on top of the lettuce leaves if desired.

Serving Suggestion For a cheery lunch while your meat smokes for dinner, serve the salad mounded in red bell pepper halves and pass Blue Corn Muffins (page 390) as an accompaniment.



MUST BE YANKEES

For a different perspective on barbecue secrets, take a look at Matt Kramer and Roger Sheppard's *Smoke Cooking* (1967, Hawthorn Books). It's a terrific resource book, devoted to barbecue cooking methods, but the authors seem completely unaware of real barbecue. They call their technique "smoke roasting" and label it "a revolution in outdoor cooking."

Mango and Avocado Salad

This duo mates particularly well with tropically inspired main dishes.

SERVES 6

CELERY SEED DRESSING

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup sugar

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup honey

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup white vinegar

2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice

2 teaspoons grated onion

1 teaspoon dry mustard

1 teaspoon paprika

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt

1 cup vegetable oil

2 tablespoons celery seeds

Shredded red cabbage

3 ripe mangoes, sliced

3 ripe Haas avocados, peeled, pitted, and sliced

1. In a food processor or blender, combine all the dressing ingredients except the oil and celery seeds. Pour in the oil and continue processing until thick and well blended. Spoon in the celery seeds and process just until incorporated.

2. Make a bed of shredded cabbage on a serving platter. Arrange the mangoes and avocados decoratively on the cabbage. Drizzle some dressing over the salad and serve the salad with the remaining dressing on the side.

3. The dressing keeps, refrigerated, for a couple of weeks and complements any fruit salad. Process again before using if it separates.



'Nana Nut Salad

We had almost forgotten this childhood favorite until we stumbled onto it in the buffet line at the Owensboro, Kentucky, Moonlite Bar-B-Q.

SERVES 6

DRESSING

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup sugar

1 egg yolk, lightly beaten

3 tablespoons white vinegar

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup Miracle Whip salad dressing (not mayonnaise)

6 medium bananas, sliced

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup chopped salted peanuts

Additional chopped peanuts, for garnish (optional)

1. In a small, heavy saucepan, combine the sugar, egg yolk, and vinegar. Warm over low heat, stirring constantly, until the sugar dissolves and the mixture thickens. Remove from the heat and mix in the Miracle Whip.

2. Combine the bananas and peanuts in a large bowl. Spoon the dressing over the salad and mix well. Top with additional peanuts, if you wish. The salad is best eaten within a couple of hours.



BUFFET HEAVEN

The Bosley family calls their Owensboro barbecue restaurant "Kentucky's Very Famous Moonlite." The acclaim is real, and you'll see why if you try the Moonlite's mountainous buffet, three long tables crowded with coleslaw, gelatin salads, burgoo, green beans, macaroni, cornbread with sorghum, mutton, beef, pork, chicken, and enough desserts to put a dieter into shock. The food is superb and it all costs about the same as a hot dog at Yankee Stadium.

Devil-May-Care Eggs

Despite their own heat, these little numbers will cool you down on a blistering summer day. If you can't find spicy sweet pickles in your area, use regular sweet pickles and up the jalapeño ante.

MAKES 24 EGGS

- 12 hard-boiled eggs
- 3 tablespoons mayonnaise
- 2 tablespoons hot and spicy sweet pickles, chopped
- 2 tablespoons minced pickled jalapeño
- 2 tablespoons minced cilantro
- 1 tablespoon plus 1 teaspoon Dijon mustard
- 1 tablespoon minced scallions
- 1 to 2 teaspoons curry powder (optional)
- Salt to taste
- Cilantro sprigs, for garnish

1. Halve the eggs lengthwise. Remove the yolks and place them in a bowl. Reserve the egg whites. Using a fork, crumble the yolks. Stir in the remaining ingredients. Adjust the seasonings to taste.

2. Spoon the yolk mixture into the egg whites, or, for a more festive look, pipe the mixture with a pastry tube. Refrigerate the eggs, covered, until serving time. Arrange on a platter surrounded by cilantro.

Variation: Simply Scrumptious Deviled Eggs When other dishes are heavily seasoned, you might want a less-adorned egg. Eliminate the pickles, jalapeño, cilantro, and scallions. Add 2 more tablespoons of mayonnaise and reduce the curry powder to $\frac{1}{4}$ to $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon. Sprinkle with paprika for 1950s nostalgia, and arrange on watercress or other greens.

NO CHORE ANYMORE

Canning requires only a few pieces of equipment, none terribly expensive. The essentials are a big lidded canning pan or a large stockpot, and canning tongs for gripping jars going in and coming out of steaming water. A wide-mouthed canning funnel is also useful but not a necessity. Use the size jars suggested in recipes, since changes can affect a product's processing time. Let the processed jars cool undisturbed for 12 hours. Check the seals and refrigerate any jars that have not sealed. Store in a cool, dry place.

Okra Pickles

We've always liked the crunchy little spurt that comes when munching on these pickles. They make us chuckle a little, too, reminding us about the "Fighting Okras" of Delta State University in Mississippi, nicknamed for their green jerseys.

MAKES APPROXIMATELY 5 PINTS

- 2 pounds small whole okra
- 3 cups cider vinegar
- 2 tablespoons pickling salt or 2 heaping tablespoons kosher salt
- 2 teaspoons white wine Worcestershire sauce or 1 teaspoon regular Worcestershire sauce
- 1 teaspoon Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce
- 5 small whole dried chiles, preferably cayenne or pequin
- 5 garlic cloves
- 5 fresh dill heads
- 1¼ teaspoons mustard seeds

1. In a large bowl, soak the okra in cold water for about 1 hour to plump them.
2. While the okra soaks, sterilize 5 to 6 pint canning jars according to the manufacturer's directions.
3. Shortly before the okra finishes its bath, combine the vinegar with 1 cup of water, the salt, Worcestershire sauce, and Tabasco in a medium-size saucepan and bring the mixture to a boil. Simmer the pickling

liquid while you combine the okra and spices in their jars.

4. With clean hands, snugly pile the okra vertically into the sterilized jars, leaving about ½ inch of space at the top of each jar. Add a chile, garlic clove, dill head, and portion of the mustard seeds to each jar. Arrange the okra and the spices attractively.
5. Ladle the hot pickling liquid over the okra in each jar, covering the okra but leaving about ½ inch of headspace. Seal.
6. Process the jars in a boiling water bath for 10 minutes. Let the pickles sit for at least a week, and preferably several weeks, before serving.

Serving Suggestion Make the pickled okra part of a dazzling relish tray for a Monday night football game. Load a platter with a mix of pickles and chowchows, supplementing your homemade goodies with a few store-bought selections, if needed.



Bodacious Bread-and-Butter Pickles

A friend making these the same weekend that she acquired a new kitten liked both so well that she named the cat "Pickles."

MAKES 3 PINTS

3 pounds unpeeled plump pickling cucumbers, about 4 to 5 inches long, sliced into $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch rounds

1 large sweet onion, or mild onion, sliced into $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch rings and separated

1 medium red bell pepper, sliced into $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch rings

2 fresh medium jalapeños, sliced into $\frac{1}{4}$ -inch rings (optional)

Ice cubes

3 tablespoons pickling salt or 3 heaping tablespoons kosher salt

2 $\frac{1}{4}$ cups packed brown sugar

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ cups cider vinegar

2 garlic cloves, slivered

2 teaspoons yellow mustard seeds

2 teaspoons whole peppercorns

2 teaspoons celery seeds

1 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons ground turmeric

1. Prepare 3 pint canning jars according to the manufacturer's directions.

2. Stir together the cucumbers, onion, bell pepper, and jalapeños in a large nonreactive bowl. Toss with 1 dozen ice cubes. Sprinkle the mixture with the salt and toss again lightly. Set aside at room temperature for 3 hours. The cucumbers will release a good bit of water during this time.

3. Pour off the cucumber mixture's liquid. Rinse well with cold water and drain again.

4. Combine the brown sugar, vinegar, garlic, and remaining spices in a large heavy pan. Bring to a boil over high heat. Spoon the cucumber mixture into the liquid and bring back to a full boil. Ladle the pickles into each jar, covering them in syrup, and dividing the spices among the jars. Leave $\frac{1}{2}$ inch of headspace. Refrigerate the pickles for at least a week before eating. The pickles keep at least several months.



Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles

Jerusalem artichokes have nothing to do with the Holy Land or artichokes. These tubers, sometimes known as sunchokes, are kissing cousins to the sunflower. The knobby little fists taste slightly sweet and offer a pleasant crunch. You can find them fresh in well-stocked produce sections from winter through spring, and at farmers' markets in the late fall.

MAKES ABOUT 5 PINTS

3 cups cider vinegar

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup water

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup packed brown sugar

1 tablespoon pickling salt or 1 heaping
tablespoon kosher salt

1 teaspoon whole allspice, bruised

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground turmeric

3 pounds Jerusalem artichokes, well scrubbed
but unpeeled, sliced about $\frac{1}{4}$ inch thick

1 medium onion, sliced and pulled into
individual rings

5 small whole dried chiles, preferably cayenne
or pequin

5 whole cloves

2 teaspoons mustard seeds

2 teaspoons celery seeds

1. Sterilize 5 to 6 pint jars according to the
manufacturer's directions.

2. In a large saucepan, combine the
vinegar, water, sugar, salt, allspice, and
turmeric. Bring the syrup to a boil and boil
for 3 to 5 minutes.

3. With clean hands, snugly pile the arti-
choke slices and onion rings into the steril-
ized jars, leaving about $\frac{1}{2}$ inch of space at
the top. Add a chile, a clove, and equal
portions of the mustard and celery seeds to
each jar.

4. Ladle the hot pickling liquid over the
artichokes, covering the artichokes but
leaving about $\frac{1}{2}$ inch of headspace. Seal.

5. Process the jars in a boiling water bath
for 10 minutes. Let the pickles sit for at
least a week, and preferably several weeks,
before you indulge.

COMMUNAL 'Q' IN KANSAS

Humphrey Bogart's famous line, "Here's looking at you, kid," is a feeling you can't escape at Roy's in Hutchinson, Kansas, where everyone sits at one big circular table facing each other. A dozen enthusiastic folks chow down on 'Q' at once, producing a chorus of lip-smacking you can hear all the way to Wichita.

Wonderful Watermelon Pickles

Hard to find at a local grocery outside the South, these morsels will make you a believer if you try them once. Just save the rind from the next watermelon you eat and take a little time over the following three days to complete a series of simple steps.

MAKES ABOUT 8 PINTS

THE FIRST DAY

Rind of one large watermelon, cubed (makes about 16 cups)

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup pickling salt or heaping $\frac{3}{4}$ cup kosher salt

1 gallon water

THE SECOND DAY

6 cups sugar

4 cups white vinegar

2 cups packed brown sugar

2 lemons, sliced thin

1 tablespoon whole cloves

1 tablespoon whole allspice

4 sticks cinnamon, broken more or less in half

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon mustard seeds

The first day

1. This is the toughest part of the process. Cut the watermelon rind into manageable chunks. Scrape all the remaining red watermelon meat from the inside of the rind. Then pare off the hard green skin of the outer rind with a small knife. It's not difficult, but it takes a while. Cube the rind into bite-size pieces.

2. In a large bowl, dissolve the salt in the water. Transfer the rind cubes to the salted

water. Find an out-of-the-way corner of your kitchen for the bowl and then weight the rind down with a plate to keep it submerged. Soak the cubes for about 24 hours.

The second day

3. Combine all the remaining ingredients in a large saucepan and bring them to a boil, simmering the syrup for about 5 minutes.

4. While the syrup simmers, drain the cubes, rinse them, and drain them again. Rinse the bowl the cubes were soaking in and return the cubes to the bowl. Pour the hot syrup over the cubes, return the bowl to its original resting place, cover it lightly, and let it sit for another 24 hours, more or less.

The third day

5. Sterilize 5 to 6 pint canning jars according to the manufacturer's directions.

6. Pour the cubes and syrup into a large pan and bring the mixture to a boil. With a slotted spoon, pack the cubes lightly into the prepared jars, dividing the lemon slices

and spices equally among the jars. Pour the syrup over the cubes, covering them but leaving about $\frac{1}{2}$ inch of headspace. Seal.

7. Process the jars in a boiling water bath for 10 minutes. Allow the pickles to sit for at least 1 week, and preferably several weeks, before serving.

A KANSAS CITY MASTER

Few people have won more barbecue cooking awards than Paul Kirk, the Kansas City Baron of Barbecue. A big winner at the American Royal competition, the Jack Daniel's World Championship Invitational Barbecue, and even the Irish Cup International, Kirk generously shares his secrets with others through cooking classes and books. Check out his thorough tome titled *Paul Kirk's Championship Barbecue Sauces* (1997, Harvard Common Press).

Green Tomato Chowchow

A mustard-based relish, chowchow comes in more varieties than the pickup trucks at a honky-tonk. This is one of our favorites.

MAKES ABOUT 5 PINTS

2 pounds green tomatoes (4 to 5 medium)
1½ pounds cauliflower (1 to 1½ heads)
1 pound sweet onions, or other mild onions
2 large bell peppers, preferably a combination of red and green
2 fresh jalapeños
3 tablespoons pickling salt or 3 heaping tablespoons kosher salt
2½ cups cider vinegar
1½ cups sugar
2 tablespoons pickling spice
1 tablespoon celery seeds

1 tablespoon mustard seeds
2 teaspoons dry mustard
½ teaspoon ground ginger

1. Chop all the vegetables in batches in a food processor. Chowchow is generally chopped fine, but stop short of puréeing it. You want some remaining chunkiness and fresh vegetable texture.

2. Place all the vegetables in a large bowl and sprinkle with the salt. Let the vegetables sit for at least 2 hours and up to 4

hours, stirring occasionally. They will release a good bit of liquid while they rest. Drain them but don't rinse.

3. Sterilize 5 to 6 pint canning jars according to the manufacturer's directions.

4. Bring the vinegar, sugar, and spices to a boil in a large pan or stockpot. Reduce the heat and simmer for 10 minutes. Add the vegetables and continue simmering for another 10 minutes. Bring the mixture to a rolling boil and boil for 2 to 3 minutes.

Spoon the hot chowchow into the prepared jars, leaving $\frac{1}{2}$ inch of headspace. Seal.

5. Process the jars in a boiling water bath for 10 minutes. Let the chowchow sit for at least a week, and preferably several weeks, to develop its flavor before serving.

Serving Suggestion *For our tastes, nothing is better with barbecued meat inside a sandwich than chowchow, which cuts and complements the richness of almost any smoked food.*

A GREAT PIT STOP

Right along old Route 66, now Interstate 40, in Clinton, Oklahoma, Jiggs Smoke House looks like a frontier cabin painted with smoke. The pit-masters will smoke anything that moves and sell it to you by the pound, along with jars of chowchow and other superb relishes.



Squash Relish

Another fine idea from Cajun country, this sweet-sour relish is as zippy as a Justin Wilson quip.

MAKES ABOUT 4 PINTS

$\frac{2}{3}$ cup pickling salt or heaping $\frac{2}{3}$ cup kosher salt

8 cups chopped yellow squash

3 cups sugar

2 cups white vinegar

2½ tablespoons celery seeds

2½ tablespoons mustard seeds

2 cups chopped onions

2 cups chopped bell peppers, preferably a combination of red and green

6 scallions, sliced

1. Sterilize 4 to 5 pint canning jars according to the manufacturer's directions.

2. Stir together 3 quarts of water and salt in a large bowl until the salt has dissolved. Add the squash to the brine and soak it for 1 hour. Rinse the squash, drain it, and rinse and drain it again.

3. In a stockpot, bring the sugar, vinegar, celery seeds, and mustard seeds to a boil. Stir in the squash and other vegetables and bring the mixture back to a boil.

4. Pack the mixture into the prepared jars, leaving $\frac{1}{2}$ inch of headspace, and seal. Process the jars in a boiling water bath for 10 minutes. The relish is best after it sits for at least 2 weeks.



HOW THE COLD WAR REALLY ENDED

When a group of U.S. pitmasters challenged Soviet cooks in a barbecue contest in 1990, the winners were The Wild Boars of Walls, Mississippi, a team headed by Gene and Patti McGee. Estonians hosted the cook-off, but they never stood a chance against Mississippi masters.

Corn and Watermelon Pickle-lilli

Cambridge, Massachusetts, chef Chris Schlesinger, and food writer John Willoughby, both big fans of real barbecue, came up with the model for this unusual relish for their terrific book, *The Thrill of the Grill* (1990, William Morrow). We've tinkered a bit with the original version to tailor it to smoked food. The texture is best when you chop the pickles and vegetables not much larger than the corn kernels.

MAKES ABOUT 2 CUPS

2 medium ears of corn, smoked, roasted, or boiled

1 cup Wonderful Watermelon Pickles (page 412) or store-bought watermelon pickles, chopped fine

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium red onion, chopped

$\frac{1}{2}$ medium red bell pepper, chopped

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup cider vinegar

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup packed brown sugar

$\frac{3}{4}$ teaspoon chili powder

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon ground cumin

1 tablespoon minced cilantro

1. Slice the kernels from the ears of corn. In a medium-size bowl, combine the corn and watermelon pickles.

2. Place the remaining ingredients, except the cilantro, in a small saucepan and bring the mixture to a boil. Boil for 1 minute and then pour the mixture over the corn and watermelon pickles. Refrigerate the relish for at least 1 hour. Stir in the cilantro just before serving.

Serving Suggestion When you've got smoked turkey leftovers, make a sandwich on toasted sourdough with sharp Cheddar cheese and this relish.

FUSION FOOD

Piccalilli refers to any one of many highly seasoned relishes. Chowchows are similar, but usually have mustard among their ingredients. The concoctions ultimately go back to India in origin. British colonists there brought the basic ideas back home to England, and they then sailed across the Atlantic to American shores before the War of Independence.

Bourbon Peaches

Bourbon adds a smoky sweetness to many good foods, especially tender peaches fresh from the tree.

SERVES 4 TO 6

2 pounds peeled whole peaches, small to medium in size, ripe yet still firm

2 cups sugar

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup bourbon

1 cinnamon stick

8 to 10 peppercorns

2 tablespoons bourbon (optional)

1. Combine the ingredients, except the optional bourbon, with 2 cups of water in a heavy saucepan. Bring the mixture to a rolling boil over high heat. Boil until the

peaches can be pieced easily with a fork, but before they soften, about 5 minutes.

2. Remove the pan from the heat and let it cool to room temperature. Refrigerate the peaches in the syrup for at least 24 hours. Weight the peaches with a saucer, if necessary, to keep them submerged. Taste the peach syrup and, if desired, add the optional bourbon. Serve chilled or at room temperature. The peaches keep well, refrigerated, for up to a week, and they soften in texture.



EDIBLE VACATION

Chris Schlesinger and John Willoughby took a barbecue vacation in 1989, traveling across the country to sample the local 'Q.' They reported in *The Cook's Magazine* that they "ate barbecue in burned-out shacks and McDonald's clones from Texas to Ohio, and it varied wildly in style and quality. The people we met would drive clear across five counties for a taste of their favorite barbecue, and every blessed one of them was an expert."

Down-Home Desserts



Barbecue demands dessert, even if it's no more than a packaged peanut pattie or fried pie picked up at the cash register on the way out of a Bar-B-Q joint. Sweet follows smoke as naturally as amorous eyes track after tight jeans.

The best desserts for a barbecue pig-out are the old American favorites. These are updated recipes for many of the top choices, developed specifically to provide a perfect finish for a hearty, smoky meal.



Prodigal Pecan Pie	421	South Georgia Pound Cake	435
Peanutty Pie	422	Becky's Pineapple Cake	436
Run for the Roses Pie	423	Black Walnut Cake	437
Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble	424	Candy Bar Cheesecake	439
Key Lime Pie	425	Sweet Potato Pudding	440
Lemon Pudding Ice Cream Pie	426	'Nana Pudding	441
Pan-Fried Pies	427	Santa Fe Capriotada	442
S'more Quesadillas	428	Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream	443
Fruit Pizza	429	Mojito Sorbet	444
Rhubarb Crunch	430	Peach Melba Ice Cream	445
Texas Peach Cobbler	431	Ice-Sicles	446
Long-on-Strawberries Shortcake	432	Brazen Rum-Raisin Sauce	447
Cranberry-Ginger Crumble	433	The Best Cure for a Southern Summer	447
Peanut Butter Cake	434		



Prodigal Pecan Pie

Nothing finishes a barbecue meal better than a sinfully rich pecan pie. This recipe is heavily influenced by John Thorne, editor of the wonderful *Simple Cooking* newsletter, who came up with the method for making the filling so lusciously dense.

SERVES 6 TO 8

1 cup packed dark brown sugar
 $\frac{2}{3}$ cup cane syrup, preferably, or $\frac{1}{3}$ cup light corn syrup and $\frac{1}{3}$ cup molasses
4 tablespoons unsalted butter
3 tablespoons dark rum
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon pure vanilla extract
 $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt
4 large eggs
2 to 3 tablespoons half-and-half
2 generous cups pecan pieces

Unbaked 9-inch pie crust
Pecan halves

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.

2. In a large, heavy saucepan, combine the brown sugar, syrup, butter, rum, vanilla, and salt. Heat to the boiling point, stirring frequently. Boil for 1 minute, stirring constantly. Remove the pan from the heat and let the mixture cool.

3. In a bowl, beat the eggs with the half-and-half until light and frothy. Mix the eggs into the cooled syrup, beating until well incorporated. Stir in the pecans. Pour the filling into the pie crust. Top with a layer of pecan halves.

4. Bake for 45 to 50 minutes, until a toothpick inserted into the center comes out clean. Serve warm or at room temperature.

PORK AND PIE

De Valls Bluff, Arkansas, used to be the finest food stop on Interstate 40 between Little Rock and Memphis, and it's still pretty good. Until recently, you could start with a pork sandwich at Craig's Bar-B-Q and then wander across the street to a simple building with a hand-painted "Pie shop" sign. In an annex to her home, Mary Thomas made some of the best pies in the South, including a pecan delight that she called a Karo Nut Pie. Mary retired in 1999, but Craig's continues to smoke marvelous meat.

Peanutty Pie

Some peanut pies are similar in consistency to a pecan pie. We prefer this creamy, cool style with barbecue.

SERVES 6 TO 8

CRUST

1 $\frac{1}{4}$ cups graham cracker crumbs (about 16 crackers)

2 tablespoons sugar

5 tablespoons unsalted butter, melted

FILLING

1 cup whipping cream

8-ounce package cream cheese, softened

1 $\frac{1}{4}$ cups creamy peanut butter (don't use a natural or freshly ground type)

1 tablespoon pure vanilla extract

1 cup confectioners' sugar

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup chopped peanuts, preferably honey-roasted

Chocolate sauce (optional)

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.
2. In a bowl, stir together the graham

cracker crumbs and sugar. Pour in the butter and stir to combine.

3. Pat the mixture into the bottom and sides of a 9-inch pie pan. Bake for 10 minutes, until lightly set. Put the crust aside to cool.

4. Whip the cream in a bowl until stiff and reserve it. In another bowl, beat together the cream cheese, peanut butter, vanilla, and confectioners' sugar. Fold in the whipped cream and blend well. Spoon the filling into the graham cracker crust and sprinkle the peanuts over the pie. Refrigerate, covered, for at least 2 hours, or overnight.

5. To gild the lily, serve with a spoonful of your favorite chocolate sauce. The pie keeps well for several days.

A GROWING BOY

In 1992, when we were traveling across the country researching the original edition of this book, the pie-eating contest was one of the most memorable events at the Owensboro, Kentucky, International Bar-B-Q Festival. That year, thirteen-year-old Roger Morris took home the \$100 prize by holding his breath and scarfing a banana-cream pie in enormous mouthfuls. Still hungry, Roger entered the mutton-eating contest a few minutes later, trying to down an entire barbecue sandwich in one bite.

Run for the Roses Pie

Traditionally served to celebrate the Kentucky Derby, this pie provides a triple-crown finish to any barbecue.

SERVES 6 TO 8

- 1 cup packed brown sugar
- $\frac{2}{3}$ cup cane syrup, preferably, or $\frac{1}{3}$ cup light corn syrup and $\frac{1}{3}$ cup molasses
- 3 tablespoons unsalted butter
- 3 tablespoons Kentucky bourbon
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon pure vanilla extract
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt
- 4 large eggs
- 2 to 3 tablespoons half-and-half
- 2 cups walnut pieces
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup chocolate chips

Unbaked 9-inch pie crust

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.
2. In a large, heavy saucepan, combine the brown sugar, syrup, butter, bourbon, vanilla, and salt. Heat to the boiling point, stirring frequently. Boil for 1 minute, stir-

ring constantly. Remove the pan from the heat and let the mixture cool.

3. In a bowl, beat the eggs with the half-and-half until they are light and frothy. Mix the eggs into the cooled syrup, beating until well incorporated. Stir in the walnuts and the chocolate chips. Pour the filling into the pie crust.

4. Bake for 45 to 50 minutes, until a toothpick inserted into the center comes out clean. Serve warm or at room temperature.

Serving Suggestion *On Derby Day serve Almost Owensboro Mutton (page 141) on sandwiches and a big pot of Kentucky Burgoo (page 372). Wash them down with Derby Day Mint Juleps (page 452) and present this pie for the grand finale.*



ICONIC SMOKE

Molly O'Neill, author of the wonderful *New York Cookbook*, knows her due about the 'Q.' She once wrote in *The New York Times Magazine*, "Barbecue smoke is to the Texas skyline what cathedral spires are to European capitals: sacred things, icons of identity."

Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble

You aren't likely to find huckleberries in a grocery store, but they grow wild in many parts of the country and occasionally show up in farmers' markets during summer months. For a reasonable alternative in appearance and taste, substitute blueberries and reduce the amount of sugar.

SERVES 6 TO 8

4 cups huckleberries

$\frac{2}{3}$ to $\frac{3}{4}$ cup sugar

3 tablespoons instant tapioca

Juice of 1 lemon

Pinch of nutmeg

Unbaked 9-inch pie crust

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup all-purpose flour

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup sugar

3 tablespoons unsalted butter, softened

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup shredded unsweetened coconut

1. Preheat the oven to 425°F.

2. In a large bowl, stir together the huckleberries and enough sugar to make the

berries taste sweet with a tart edge. Add the tapioca, lemon juice, and nutmeg. Spoon the fruit into the pie shell.

3. Bake the pie for 15 minutes, then reduce the heat to 375°F and continue baking for an additional 18 to 20 minutes.

4. While the pie bakes, mix together the remaining ingredients in a small bowl. Remove the pie from the oven and sprinkle the coconut mixture evenly over the top.

5. Return the pie to the oven for 25 to 30 more minutes, covering the crust with aluminum foil if it begins to get overly dark. When done, the topping should be crisp and golden brown. Serve warm.

CUTTING DOWN ON THE CALORIES

When you're in the mood for a lighter fare to finish a barbecue feed, toss together a platter of juicy seasonal fruit, or turn directly to the last recipe in this chapter, *The Best Cure for a Southern Summer* (page 447). Consider also a smoked fruit from the *Garden of Eatin'* chapter, or a sweet beverage from our *Cool and Cheery Drinks*.

Key Lime Pie

When someone serves you a “Key lime pie” these days, what you’re actually getting is likely a dishonest version. It can be a great pie, but it’s rarely made with the wonderfully distinctive Key limes anymore because Florida’s commercial crop was wiped out in a 1926 hurricane. Until recently, most stores in the States carried only Persian limes, which are more similar to lemons. Look for the true Key limes, which are tiny sour gems, in well-stocked produce sections or in Caribbean, Latino, or Mexican markets. They’re often labeled *limones*.

SERVES 6 TO 8

CRUST

1¼ cups graham cracker crumbs (about 16 crackers)

2 tablespoons sugar

2 teaspoons minced lime zest

5 tablespoons unsalted butter, melted

FILLING

1 pint heavy cream

14-ounce can sweetened condensed milk

6-ounce can limeade concentrate

6 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice, preferably from Key limes

2 teaspoons minced lime zest

⅛ teaspoon pure vanilla extract

Lime slices, for garnish

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.
2. In a bowl, stir together the graham cracker crumbs, sugar, and lime zest. Pour in the butter and stir to combine.
3. Pat the mixture into the bottom and sides of a 9-inch pie pan. Bake for 10 minutes, until lightly set. Put the crust aside to cool.

4. With an electric mixer, whip the cream until very stiff. Add the remaining ingredients, except the lime slices, and continue beating until well combined. Pour the filling into the pie shell. Garnish with the lime slices. Refrigerate the pie for at least 4 hours, and preferably overnight. Serve chilled.

Serving Suggestion *The creamy pie is perfect after spicy smoked dishes such as Pit Pot Roast (page 128), Jerk Burgers (page 134), or Peppered Catfish (page 223).*

Variation: Mango-Topped Key Lime Pie
Skip the lime slice garnish. Neatly dice 1 ripe plump mango, and toss it with about 2 teaspoons more lime juice, and a teaspoon of minced lime zest. After the finished pie has chilled for at least 3 hours, top with the mango mixture. Mound it just in the center of the pie, so that the pale green filling can still show in a large circle around it.

Lemon Pudding Ice Cream Pie

Tangy, fruity, icy, creamy, crunchy—every bite yields a new and scrumptious taste sensation.

SERVES 6 TO 8

LEMON PUDDING

- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup sugar
- 2 tablespoons cornstarch
- $\frac{1}{8}$ teaspoon salt
- 5 large egg yolks, lightly beaten
- 6 tablespoons freshly squeezed lemon juice
- Zest of 1 lemon
- 2 tablespoons unsalted butter

CRUST

- 1 cup graham cracker crumbs (about 14 crackers)
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup pecan pieces
- 2 tablespoons sugar
- Zest of 2 lemons
- 5 tablespoons unsalted butter, melted
- 4 cups vanilla ice cream, softened
- 2 tablespoons pecan pieces, for garnish (optional)

1. To prepare the pudding, mix together the sugar, cornstarch, and salt in a heavy saucepan. Pour in $\frac{1}{4}$ cup of water, stirring to combine. Warm the mixture over medium-low heat, stirring constantly until hot but short of boiling. Place the egg yolks, lemon juice, and zest in a small bowl and gradually add about $\frac{1}{2}$ cup of the hot mixture to the yolks. Stir the egg mixture back into the saucepan. Cook slowly and stir constantly, gradually

bringing the pudding just to a boil over 7 to 10 minutes. Remove the pudding from the heat and whisk in the butter. The pudding should be somewhat thick but will thicken further while it cools. Refrigerate the pudding for at least 1 hour.

2. Preheat the oven to 350°F.

3. To prepare the crust, combine the graham cracker crumbs, pecans, sugar, and lemon zest in a food processor and process until crumbly. Pour in the butter and process just to combine.

4. Pat the mixture into the bottom and sides of a 9-inch pie pan. Bake for 10 minutes, until lightly set. Put the crust aside to cool.

5. When both the pudding and pie shell are cool, assemble the pie. Pack about half of the ice cream into the pie shell. Top it with about half the pudding. Place the pie in the freezer for 15 minutes. Remove from the freezer and spoon the remaining ice cream over the pudding, smoothing it. Decoratively swirl spoonfuls of the remaining pudding over the ice cream, leaving some ice cream exposed. Sprinkle pecans over the pie, if you wish.

6. Freeze the pie for 2 hours or longer. Let it sit at room temperature for 5 to 10 minutes before serving.

Pan-Fried Pies

Fried pies are always popular with barbecue. Most versions are deep fried, but we like them cooked this way, which is the leading style around Owensboro, Kentucky.

SERVES 8

CRUST

- 2 cups all-purpose flour
- 1 teaspoon salt
- 6 tablespoons lard or solid vegetable shortening, well chilled
- 6 tablespoons unsalted butter, well chilled
- 5 to 7 tablespoons ice water

FILLING

- 1½ cups dried peaches
- ½ cup peach jam
- ¼ cup finely minced pecans

Butter for pan-frying

1. With a food processor, combine the flour and salt. Add the lard and butter and process until a crumbly meal forms. Pour in the water, a couple of tablespoons at a time, processing until the dough just barely holds together. Form the dough into a ball and wrap it in plastic. Refrigerate the dough for at least 30 minutes, and up to 2 days.

2. To make the filling, combine the peaches with 1½ cups of water in a heavy saucepan. Simmer the fruit over low heat until it is plump and soft and most of the water is absorbed, about 25 minutes. Add more water if needed.

3. Drain the peaches and chop them fine. Transfer the peaches to a small bowl. Stir in the jam and the pecans and reserve the mixture.

4. On a floured pastry board or counter, roll out the dough ¼ inch to ⅛ inch thick. Cut the dough into rounds with a 3-inch biscuit cutter.

5. Divide the filling among the dough rounds. Moisten the dough's edges with water and fold the pies into half-moons. Crimp the edges with a fork.

6. Just before serving, melt enough butter in a heavy skillet over medium heat to come up about one-third of the way on

HEAVENLY PIE

Lindsey's in Little Rock, Arkansas, is known for both its barbecue and its light, flavorful fried fruit pies. Church of God in Christ Bishop D. L. Lindsey opened the restaurant in 1956, and it has been in his family ever since. You'd better like soda pop with your 'Q,' because there's no beer there.

the pies. Pan-fry the pies until lightly browned and cooked through on both sides, about 8 to 10 minutes. Serve hot.

Variation: Deep-Fried Pies These are crustier, and that's a joy to many people. Deep-fry the little pockets of fruit in 350°F vegetable shortening or oil until golden.

S'more Quesadillas

Any chocolate fan will love this easy, homey take on s'mores, the classic campfire treat. If we're barbecuing with our pit, we warm these on the top of the firebox, but you can also cook them on a grill, or indoors on a griddle or in a skillet.

SERVES 8

4 thin flour tortillas

Four 1.55-ounce milk chocolate candy bars, such as Hershey bars

1 cup mini-marshmallows

1 cup mini-graham crackers (such as those shaped like little teddy bears), or regular graham crackers broken into bite-size bits

If the tortillas are too stiff to fold in half easily, warm them for a few seconds on a griddle or in a skillet until they are pliable.

Cover half of each tortilla with an equal portion of chocolate, marshmallows, and graham crackers. Fold the empty portion of the tortillas over the filled portion, and secure with a toothpick. Warm on a medium-hot griddle or skillet, and cook 2 to 3 minutes per side, until the chocolate and marshmallows are melted and gooey, and the tortillas are crisp and golden in spots. Serve immediately, cutting each into four wedges. Offer plenty of napkins.

BARBECUE NETWORKING

An active and growing organization, the National Barbecue Association (www.znbbqa.com) brings together restaurateurs, caterers, equipment manufacturers, sauce makers, and backyard cooks. For a \$50 individual membership or a \$150 business membership, you receive the monthly newsletter, *Barbecue Today*, and an invitation to an annual conference and trade show.

Fruit Pizza

This one is bound to keep your guests smiling to the end.

SERVES 8

CRUST

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup unsalted butter, softened

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup confectioners' sugar

$1\frac{1}{4}$ cups all-purpose flour

TOPPING

8-ounce package cream cheese, softened

4 ounces almond paste

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup sugar

1 large egg

1 teaspoon pure vanilla extract

$\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon almond extract

3 to $3\frac{1}{2}$ cups colorful mixed fruit (strawberry halves, blueberries, raspberries, kiwi slices, pineapple chunks, apricot halves, orange or tangerine sections with their membranes removed)

1 cup currant or apricot jelly

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

1 tablespoon brandy or triple sec

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease a 12-inch pizza pan.

2. In a food processor or an electric mixer, combine the butter and sugar. Add the

flour and mix well. Flatten out the soft dough with your hands and press it into the prepared pan, forming a thin layer.

3. Bake the crust for 16 to 18 minutes, or until lightly browned and firm.

4. While the crust bakes, beat together the cream cheese, almond paste, sugar, egg, vanilla, and almond extract with an electric mixer. Pour the mixture over the crust, smoothing it with a spatula.

5. Bake the pizza for an additional 10 minutes or until the topping is lightly set. Cool the pizza.

6. About 1 to 2 hours before serving, arrange the fruit decoratively over the pizza. In a small, heavy saucepan, heat together the jelly, lemon juice, and brandy until the jelly melts. Brush the jelly mixture over the fruit.

7. Refrigerate the pizza for 1 to 2 hours. Serve the chilled pizza cut into wedges.



Rhubarb Crunch

Rhubarb offers a tangy contrast to a smoked meal. Food writer Marilyn Marter inspired this homey preparation.

SERVES 6

- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup all-purpose flour
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup rolled oats
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup packed brown sugar
- 6 tablespoons unsalted butter, melted
- 2 teaspoons ground anise
- 1 teaspoon cinnamon
- 3 cups chopped rhubarb, fresh or frozen
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup sugar
- 1 tablespoon cornstarch
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon pure vanilla extract

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease an 8-inch square pan.
2. In a small bowl, mix together the flour, oats, brown sugar, butter, anise, and cin-

namon. Press half of the mixture into the pan, reserving the rest. Place the rhubarb over the crumb mixture.

3. In a small saucepan, stir together the sugar and cornstarch. Add $\frac{1}{2}$ cup of water slowly, stirring to avoid lumps. Warm the sauce over medium heat, cooking until it is clear and lightly thickened, 3 to 5 minutes. Remove the sauce from the heat and stir in the vanilla. Pour the sauce over the rhubarb. Top the sauce with the remaining crumb mixture.

4. Bake for about 55 minutes, or until the rhubarb appears bubbly and the topping crunchy. Serve warm or at room temperature.

THE MOTTO IS "BARBECUE . . . IT'S NOT JUST FOR BREAKFAST ANYMORE"

The monthly publication of the Kansas City Barbeque Society, the *Bullshead*, is worth the organization's \$30 annual membership fee for many people. The newspaper-style journal covers cook-offs particularly well, and also offers barbecue tips, news, and views. For more information, look up the society online at www.kcbs.us.

Texas Peach Cobbler

Texans usually like their peach cobblers with an abundance of juicy fruit and a biscuit-like batter topping that's crunchy on the surface and doughy inside.

SERVES 8 TO 10

FILLING

12 to 14 ripe medium peaches (about 3½ pounds), peeled, pitted, and sliced

¼ cup sugar

1 tablespoon freshly squeezed lemon juice

2 teaspoons ground cinnamon

¾ teaspoon ground ginger

¾ teaspoon pure vanilla extract

BATTER

¼ cup unsalted butter

1¼ cups all-purpose flour

¾ cup sugar

2 teaspoons baking powder

1 cup milk

Peach Melba Ice Cream (page 445) or softly whipped cream, optional

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.
2. In a bowl, mix together all the fruit filling ingredients. Set the fruit aside to draw out the juices while preparing the batter. Cobbler filling should be a bit juicier than most pies.
3. Melt the butter in a 9 by 13-inch baking dish, either in the oven or on the stove.
4. In another bowl, stir together the flour, sugar, and baking powder and add the milk. Mix until lightly blended. Spoon the

mixture evenly over the melted butter. Don't stir it, which eliminates the development of crunchy edges. Pour the peach filling evenly over the batter.

5. Bake for 45 minutes. As the cobbler cooks, the batter oozes up and around the fruit, crowning the cobbler with a moist golden brown crust. Serve warm. If you're a certified hedonist, top it with ice cream or whipped cream.

Serving Suggestion Stage a Texas ranch-style barbecue. Put out plentiful quantities of Little Devils (page 320) in bowls and pass Chicken from Hell (page 336). The centerpiece has to be Braggin' Rights Brisket (page 105), supplemented, if you like, by Hill Country Links (page 92). Round out the meal with Cowpoke Pintos (page 374), Creamy Coleslaw (page 369), a tray of pickled jalapeños and onion slices, and this juicy cobbler. Offer beer by the keg and Turquoise Margaritas (page 454) by the pitcher.

Variation: Blackberry Cobbler Make a blackberry cobbler by substituting berries for the peaches and eliminating the ginger. For ourselves, we would also add ¼ teaspoon nutmeg.

Long-on-Strawberries Shortcake

While summer strawberries are always good over shortcake, the treat is twice as good with fruit in the cake, too.

SERVES 8 TO 10

CAKE

- 2 cups cake flour, sifted
- 1 tablespoon baking powder
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon salt
- 1 tablespoon poppy seeds
- $1\frac{1}{2}$ cups sugar
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup unsalted butter, softened
- 3 large eggs, separated
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup crushed fresh ripe strawberries
- 1 teaspoon almond extract

TOPPING

- 1 cup whipping cream
- $\frac{1}{3}$ cup confectioners' sugar
- 2 pints fresh ripe strawberries, sliced

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease and flour two 9-inch round cake pans. Cut waxed paper or parchment circles to fit the pans, place in the pans, and grease and flour them again.
2. Stir together the flour, baking powder, and salt in a bowl. Stir in the poppy seeds.
3. With an electric mixer, cream together the sugar and butter. Add the egg yolks, beating well after each addition. Combine

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup of water with the crushed strawberries and almond extract. Add the fruit and liquid to the butter mixture in thirds, alternating with the dry ingredients. Continue beating the batter until all ingredients are well incorporated.

4. With the mixer, beat the egg whites until stiff. Fold them into the batter.
5. Pour the batter into the prepared pans and bake for 20 minutes, or until a toothpick inserted in the center comes out clean. Cool the layers for about 5 minutes before removing them from the pans. Cool the layers on cake racks.
6. Prepare the fruit topping while the cake cools. Whip the cream and 1 tablespoon of the sugar. Refrigerate until ready to use. Combine the sliced strawberries with the remaining sugar, a tablespoon or two at a time, to desired sweetness.
7. To assemble the cake, transfer one layer to a serving plate. Top with half the berries and spread half the whipped cream over them. Repeat with the remaining ingredients. Serve immediately.

Cranberry-Ginger Crumble

Here's a great dish to go with a fall barbecue, during the season when you can easily find garnet cranberries to pair with snappy ginger. For a nice enhancement, top the crumble with softly whipped cream flavored with a big pinch of dried ginger.

SERVES 8

FILLING

Two 12-ounce bags of cranberries, fresh or frozen

1 cup sugar

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup ground ginger

TOPPING

16 thin gingersnap cookies

$\frac{3}{4}$ cup old-fashioned oats

$\frac{1}{3}$ cup packed brown sugar

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup unsalted butter, chilled

$\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Butter an 8 by 8-inch baking dish. Prepare the filling, placing the cranberries in the dish.

Mix together the sugar and ginger, and pour evenly over the cranberries.

2. Prepare the topping, breaking each of the gingersnaps into several pieces and transferring them to a food processor. Pulse several times, until you have coarse crumbs, then add the oats, brown sugar, butter, and salt, and process just until coarse and crumbly.

3. Spoon the topping evenly over the cranberries, packing it down lightly. Bake for 45 to 50 minutes, until the topping is crunchy and the cranberry mixture thick. Serve warm.

A COMELY CAKE

Leo and Son Barbeque in Oklahoma City features a banana strawberry cake guaranteed to sweeten anyone's disposition. All the regular barbecue dinners—no extra plates, please—come with macaroni salad, baked beans, iced tea, and a big slice of the fruity, sugar-glazed cake.

Peanut Butter Cake

A recipe from Southern food authority Nathalie Dupree inspired our version of this cake-eaters' cake.

SERVES 12

CAKE

- 2 cups cake flour
- 1 1/4 teaspoons baking soda
- 1 teaspoon baking powder
- 3/4 cup sugar
- 1/2 cup packed brown sugar
- 1/3 cup creamy peanut butter (don't use a natural or freshly ground type)
- 1/3 cup unsalted butter, softened
- 1 1/4 cups buttermilk
- 2 large eggs, separated
- 1 teaspoon pure vanilla extract

FROSTING

- 1/4 cup unsalted butter, softened
- 1 cup sugar
- 1/2 cup packed brown sugar
- 1/2 cup evaporated milk
- 1 cup creamy peanut butter (don't use a natural or freshly ground type)

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease and flour two 9-inch round cake pans. Cut waxed paper or parchment circles to fit the pans, place them in the pans, and grease again.
2. In a medium-size bowl, sift together the flour, baking soda, and baking powder, and set the mixture aside.

3. With an electric mixer, cream together the sugars, peanut butter, and butter. Add the sifted dry ingredients in batches, alternating with the buttermilk, egg yolks, and vanilla.
4. With the mixer, beat the egg whites until very foamy. Fold the whites into the batter by hand.
5. Pour the batter into the prepared pans. Bake for 30 to 35 minutes, or until a toothpick inserted in the center comes out clean. Cool the layers for about 5 minutes before removing them from the pans. Cool the layers on cake racks.
6. Prepare the frosting after the cake is cool, since the frosting thickens quickly. In a heavy saucepan, melt the butter over medium heat. Add the remaining ingredients, except the peanut butter, and bring to a boil over high heat. Boil for 5 minutes. Remove from the heat and immediately stir in the peanut butter, mixing well.
7. To assemble the cake, place one layer of the cake on a decorative serving platter. Spread just the top of the layer with half of the frosting. Add the second cake layer and repeat the process, again frosting just the top. The cake is best the day it's made.

South Georgia Pound Cake

Like barbecue, pound cake made an early American appearance in colonial Virginia. It spread from that area to other states, which often developed treasured local variations. This sour cream rendition was influenced by an heirloom Georgia recipe.

SERVES 8 TO 10

- 3 cups all-purpose flour
- $\frac{1}{4}$ teaspoon salt
- 1 pound unsalted butter, softened
- 2 cups sugar
- $\frac{2}{3}$ cup sour cream
- 1 tablespoon pure vanilla extract
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon lemon extract
- 5 large eggs

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease and flour a 10-inch Bundt pan or tube pan.
2. Sift together the flour and salt and set the mixture aside.
3. With an electric mixer, cream together the butter and sugar. When well blended,

mix in the sour cream and the vanilla and lemon extracts. Beat in the eggs one at a time, alternating them with the flour mixture.

4. Spoon the batter into the prepared pan. Bake for 60 to 65 minutes, or until the cake is golden and a toothpick inserted in the center comes out clean. Let the cake sit for 10 minutes, then invert onto a cake rack to finish cooling. Serve warm or at room temperature.

Serving Suggestion *In honor of the cake's origin, top it with fresh peaches or our Bourbon Peaches (page 417).*



DO WE HAVE TO EAT AGAIN?

Still largely reliable, the 1988 *Real Barbecue* by Greg Johnson and Vince Staten (Harper & Row) is a first-rate guide to one hundred of the top barbecue joints in the country. The authors logged forty thousand miles researching the book and estimated that they ate two hundred pounds of barbecue and consumed some 629,200 calories.

Becky's Pineapple Cake

The Glenmar Plantation Bed & Breakfast near Springfield, Kentucky, often serves a cake similar to this for afternoon snacking. It's as simple as it is scrumptious.

SERVES 8

CAKE

- 2 cups all-purpose flour
- 2 cups sugar
- 2 large eggs
- 2 teaspoons baking soda
- 20-ounce can crushed pineapple with juice or syrup
- 1 cup chopped pecans
- 1½ teaspoons pure vanilla extract
- ¼ teaspoon salt

FROSTING

- 8-ounce package cream cheese, softened
- 8 tablespoons unsalted butter, softened
- 2 cups confectioners' sugar
- 1½ teaspoons pure vanilla extract

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease a 9 by 13-inch baking pan.

2. In a large bowl, mix together all the cake ingredients. Pour the batter into the prepared pan. Bake for 35 minutes, or until a toothpick inserted in the center comes out clean.

3. With an electric mixer, beat together the cream cheese and butter. Mix in the confectioners' sugar and vanilla and beat until smooth. Spread the cake with the frosting. The cake can be frosted warm or cool. It keeps well for 2 days, refrigerated. Bring to room temperature before serving.



NO CLOWNING AROUND

Bozo's is a legendary name in Tennessee barbecue, founded in 1923 by Thomas Jefferson "Bozo" Williams. Located in the small town of Mason, the restaurant features pork plates and sandwiches that are good enough to draw fans from Memphis, which has a hundred or so joints of its own and calls itself the "Pork Barbecue Capital of the World."

Black Walnut Cake

From the Carolinas to Kansas City, black walnuts are prized for their rich pungency. They're worth seeking out, but if you can't find them, substitute the more common English variety. The inspiration for this cake comes from an old recipe included in Beth Tartan's classic *North Carolina and Old Salem Cookery* (1955, University of North Carolina Press).

SERVES 12

CAKE

- 3 cups all-purpose flour
- 1½ teaspoons ground ginger
- 1 teaspoon baking soda
- ½ teaspoon cinnamon
- ½ teaspoon salt
- 1 cup cane syrup or ½ cup molasses and ½ cup light corn syrup
- 1 cup unsalted butter, softened
- 3 large eggs
- 1 cup buttermilk
- 1 teaspoon pure vanilla extract

FROSTING

- 1 cup sugar
- 1 cup packed brown sugar
- ½ cup buttermilk
- ¼ cup unsalted butter, softened
- 1 cup black walnut pieces
- ¾ cup dried currants or chopped raisins
- 1½ teaspoons pure vanilla extract

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease and flour two 9-inch round cake pans. Cut waxed paper or parchment into circles to fit the pans, place in the pans, and grease again.

2. In a medium-size bowl, sift together the flour, ginger, baking soda, cinnamon, and salt; set the mixture aside.

3. With an electric mixer, cream together the syrup and butter. Beat in the eggs. Add the sifted dry ingredients in batches, alternating with the buttermilk and vanilla, and continue beating until well mixed.

4. Pour the batter into the prepared pans. Bake the cakes for 25 to 30 minutes, or until a toothpick inserted in the center comes out clean. Cool the layers for about 5 minutes before removing them from the pans. Cool the layers on cake racks.

5. To prepare the frosting, combine the sugar, brown sugar, buttermilk, and butter in a heavy saucepan. Bring the mixture to a boil and boil for several minutes, until thickened. Remove from the heat and mix in the walnuts, currants, and vanilla.

6. To assemble the cake, place one layer of the cake on a decorative serving platter. Spread just the top of the layer with half of the frosting. Add the second cake layer and repeat the process, again frosting just the top. The cake is best served the day it's

made, but if tightly covered, leftovers will remain moist for another day.

Serving Suggestion *Because of the cake's density and richness, it's best after a lighter barbecue meal, perhaps Kingly Salmon (page 211) or Mint Trout (page 221).*



WE SWOON FOR A MOON PIE

The post-barbecue candy of choice in many Southern states is actually a kind of cake that is called a pie—a Moon Pie. Made solely by the Chattanooga Bakery in Chattanooga, Tennessee, it's a gooey fistful of marshmallow sandwiched between graham cracker-style cookies coated in chocolate or other flavorings. They likely took their name from an early salesman's comment about them being "as big as the moon." If you aren't lucky enough to live in Tennessee, Arkansas, Mississippi, or another Moon Pie stronghold, you can order them by the case at 888-451-2848 or www.moonpie.com.

Candy Bar Cheesecake

The only dessert offered in many Bar-B-Q joints is candy from a rack near the door. Here's a way to go that Mounds bar one better—in a classier dessert form.

SERVES 10 TO 12

CRUST

- 5 to 6 ounces chocolate wafer cookies
- 1 cup shredded sweetened coconut
- 2 tablespoons sugar
- $\frac{1}{4}$ cup unsalted butter, melted

FILLING

- 1 pound cream cheese, softened
- $\frac{3}{4}$ cup canned cream of coconut
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup shredded sweetened coconut
- 3 large eggs
- $\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoon pure vanilla extract

TOPPING

- 8 ounces bittersweet or dark sweet chocolate
- 2 tablespoons unsalted butter
- 2 tablespoons canned cream of coconut

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F.
2. In a food processor, combine the cookies, coconut, and sugar, and process until crumbly. Pour in the butter and process just to combine.
3. Pat the mixture into the bottom of a 9-inch springform pan. Bake the crust for 10 minutes, until lightly set. Put the crust aside to cool.
4. Reduce the oven temperature to 300°F.

5. In a food processor or electric mixer, combine the cream cheese, cream of coconut, and coconut. By hand, stir in the eggs, one at a time until fully incorporated, and then add the vanilla. Pour the filling into the crust. Fill a baking pan or dish with water and place it on the lowest rack in the oven. Bake the cheesecake on the center rack for 1 hour, or until lightly set. Let the cake sit at room temperature for about 15 minutes, then cover it and chill for at least 1 hour.

6. Remove the cheesecake from the refrigerator. In a small, heavy saucepan, melt together the topping ingredients. Remove the mixture from the heat and spread it gently over the top of the cheesecake. Return the cheesecake to the refrigerator for at least 3 more hours or overnight.

7. Before serving, allow the cheesecake to sit for 10 to 15 minutes at room temperature. Remove the springform sides from the pan. Slice the cheesecake with a warm knife, to cut through the chocolate topping most easily, and serve.

Sweet Potato Pudding

If you've ever had a sweet potato pie, you won't be surprised that the spuds also make a superb pudding, topped here with a praline crunch.

SERVES 6 TO 8

PRALINE

- 1/2 cup chopped pecans
- 1/4 cup chopped crystallized ginger
- 1/4 cup packed brown sugar
- 2 tablespoons unsalted butter, softened

PUDDING

- 2 1/2 cups baked sweet potatoes (about 3 medium potatoes), flesh scooped from the skin
- 1/2 cup packed brown sugar
- 4 large eggs
- 1/3 cup milk
- 2 tablespoons unsalted butter, melted
- 2 tablespoons pure vanilla extract
- 1 tablespoon cane syrup or dark corn syrup
- 1 tablespoon light or dark rum
- 1/2 teaspoon salt
- 1/2 teaspoon ground cinnamon
- 1/2 teaspoon ground ginger

1. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Grease a 1 1/2-quart baking dish.

2. In a small bowl, combine the pecans, ginger, brown sugar, and butter. Reserve the mixture.

3. With an electric mixer, beat together all the pudding ingredients until smooth and light. Pour the pudding into the baking dish.

4. Bake for 25 minutes. Sprinkle the reserved praline mixture over the pudding and bake for an additional 20 to 25 minutes, until the pudding is set and slightly puffed. The top will sink as the pudding cools. Serve warm or at room temperature.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the pudding as the finale for a Thanksgiving feast featuring Worth-the-Wait Turkey (page 190) and all the trimmings.*

DON'T SPEED BY

LC's barbecue joint in Kansas City found a way to advertise that's as cheap and effective as any we've seen. They simply put the pit directly on a street corner along a busy boulevard, using the smoke and the smells to announce some of the tastiest meat in the city. Stop for take-out as you pass by, but you may not want to linger long inside behind the barred windows.

'Nana Pudding

Certainly a kid-friendly dessert, this old favorite also appeals to any adult who hasn't had too much sophistication training.

SERVES 6 TO 8

PUDDING

- 1 cup sugar
- 2 tablespoons cornstarch
- Pinch of salt
- 6 large egg yolks
- 2½ cups whole milk, heated
- 2 teaspoons pure vanilla extract
- 12-ounce box vanilla wafers
- 5 to 6 bananas

MERINGUE

- 6 large egg whites
- ⅛ teaspoon cream of tartar
- Pinch of salt
- 3 tablespoons sugar

1. To make the pudding, stir together the sugar, cornstarch, and salt in the top of a double boiler. Mix in the egg yolks and place the pan over its simmering water bath. Pour in the warm milk gradually, stirring constantly. Continue to stir frequently as the pudding cooks. It will gradually thicken, usually in about 15 to 20 minutes, but don't rush it. The pudding is done when it coats a spoon and slides off slowly. Remove the pan from the heat and stir in the vanilla.

2. Preheat the oven to 350°F.

3. While the pudding cools, arrange a layer of vanilla wafers at the bottom of a shallow, 1½-quart baking dish. Slice the bananas thin and layer half over the cookies. Spoon half of the pudding over the banana slices. Repeat with the remaining cookies and pudding. Tuck more cookies in around the sides of the dish as well. We normally use only about two-thirds of the box of cookies, but some people manage more.

4. To make the meringue topping, beat the egg whites with an electric mixer. When the egg whites begin to froth, add the cream of tartar and salt. Gradually beat in the sugar and continue beating until the whites form a stiff-peaked meringue.

5. Crown the assembled pudding with the meringue, heaping it high in the center. Bake for 15 to 18 minutes, or until the meringue is firm and golden brown.

6. Cool for 30 minutes before serving. Refrigerate the pudding if you plan to hold it longer than that. Leftovers can be kept for another day, although the bananas will darken somewhat.

Santa Fe Capirotada

Most versions of bread pudding come from the French New Orleans tradition, which involves a liberal use of eggs and cream. This version hails from farther west, in New Mexico, and it gets its richness from butter and cheese. A similar version is offered by the Santa Fe School of Cooking in some of its classes.

SERVES 8

- ½ cup raisins
- ½ cup brandy
- 10 to 12 slices white bread, torn in small pieces and toasted
- ½ cup chopped pecans, toasted
- 1 cup shredded Cheddar or Monterey jack cheese (4 ounces)
- 4 tablespoons unsalted butter
- 1 tart apple, peeled, cored, and chopped
- 2 cups sugar
- 2½ cups hot water
- 1 cup apple cider
- 2 teaspoons pure vanilla extract
- 1 teaspoon *canela* (Mexican cinnamon) or ground cinnamon
- ½ teaspoon ground nutmeg
- Pinch of cloves

Whipped cream, for garnish, optional

1. Place the raisins in a small bowl and pour the brandy over them. Set aside to soften for at least 20 minutes.
2. Preheat the oven to 350°F. Butter a 9 by 13-inch baking dish. Arrange the bread in the baking dish. Top the bread with the pecans and the cheese, mixing both in lightly. Scatter the raisins over the cheese

and add any brandy not absorbed by the fruit.

3. In a small skillet, warm 2 tablespoons of the butter. Add the apple and sauté until softened. Spoon the apple over the raisins.
4. Pour the sugar into a large, heavy saucepan. Warm it over medium-high heat until the sugar melts and turns a deep golden brown, 8 to 10 minutes. Stir occasionally to assure even melting. Carefully pour the water into the melted sugar. Steam will rise as the water hits the sugar and the mixture will partially solidify. Continue cooking it until the sugar becomes liquid again, stirring occasionally. Add the cider, vanilla, spices, and remaining 2 tablespoons of butter to the syrup.
5. Ladle the hot syrup over the bread. The syrup should be about equal in level to the bread itself. Push the bread into the syrup if any isn't already coated.
6. Bake the pudding for 20 to 25 minutes, or until the syrup has been absorbed and the cheese has melted into the pudding. Serve hot, topped with whipped cream if you wish.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the bread pudding following a barbecue of Southwestern Cabrito (page 154), or a simpler meal of Green Chile Chicken Soup (page 189) and salad.*

Variation: Coconut Bread Pudding with Rum Eliminate the Cheddar, apples, apple cider, nutmeg, and cloves. Substitute rum

for the brandy. Along with the pecans, sprinkle the bread with 1 cup of unsweetened coconut shreds. Add a 14- to 15-ounce can of coconut milk to the caramelized sugar after it becomes liquid again, as you would have added the cider. The syrup may look a little mottled, but don't worry. Add all 4 tablespoons of the butter at this point. Complete as above.

DENVER DADDY

In Denver they name streets after their best pitmasters. The section of 34th Avenue outside Daddy Bruce's Bar-B-Q is now officially Bruce Randolph Avenue, in honor of the man who brought real barbecue to the city and also helped to feed the needy each Thanksgiving.

Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream

This is a little like a creamy, frozen mint julep. We named it after Booker Noe, grandson of Jim Beam and Master Distiller today at the big family business in Clermont, Kentucky.

SERVES 4 TO 6 (MAKES 1 QUART)

6 tablespoons bourbon
¼ cup minced fresh mint
1 pint half-and-half
1 cup heavy cream
¾ cup sugar
5 large egg yolks
1 tablespoon pure vanilla extract

1. In a small saucepan, warm the bourbon with the mint over medium heat. Remove the bourbon from the heat and allow it to steep 15 minutes. Strain the bourbon into the top pan of a double boiler. Add the remaining ingredients and place the pan over simmering water. Warm the custard mix-

ture, whisking until well blended. Continue heating, frequently stirring up from the bottom, until the mixture thickens. Expect the process to take about 15 minutes. Do not boil the custard. Remove the pan from the heat and strain the custard.

2. Transfer the custard to an ice cream maker and process according to the manu-

facturer's directions. Freeze it until serving time. The ice cream is best eaten within several days.

Serving Suggestion *Serve the ice cream over South Georgia Pound Cake (page 435) and garnish with fresh mint. Sip a small-batch premium bourbon, such as Booker's, after dessert.*

WE CAN TOAST TO THAT

Booker Noe's company, Jim Beam, is the oldest continuing business in Kentucky, founded by farmer Jacob Beam shortly after he moved to the frontier territory in 1788. We don't know for sure, but it's likely that Jacob liked barbecue as much as his bourbon and that he preferred both to ice cream.

Mojito Sorbet

The Latino drink *mojito* is soaring in popularity today as quickly as a new Bruce Springsteen song. The beverage is just as good, or maybe better, turned into a refreshing ice to serve after a spicy meal.

MAKES 1 QUART

2 cups sugar

1½ cups lightly packed fresh mint leaves

1 cup light rum

¼ cup plus 2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice

3 to 4 dashes bitters (optional)

1. Warm the sugar, mint, and ¾ cup of the rum with 3 cups water in a saucepan over medium heat until bubbles form at the

rim. Remove the rum mixture from the heat and allow it to steep 15 minutes. Strain the rum mixture and stir in the lime juice and remaining ¼ cup rum.

2. Transfer the mixture to an ice cream maker and process according to the manufacturer's directions. Freeze it until serving time. (It freezes rather softly because of the rum.) The flavor is best within a day or two.

Peach Melba Ice Cream

At the height of the barbecue season peaches and raspberries reach a peak of fragrance and succulence. At our home, many of the ripest go immediately to this delightful ice cream.

MAKES 1 QUART

- 2 pounds ripe juicy peaches, peeled and pitted
- 1 cup fresh raspberries, pressed through a sieve or food mill
- $\frac{1}{2}$ cup sugar
- 2 teaspoons freshly squeezed lemon juice
- 3 large eggs
- 1 cup half-and-half
- 4 drops almond extract
- 2 drops pure vanilla extract

1. Cut half of the peaches into bite-size chunks and put them and all their juices in a large bowl. Place the remaining peaches in a food processor and purée them. Pour the purée over the other peaches and stir together with the raspberries, 1 tablespoon of the sugar and the same amount of the lemon juice.

2. Whisk together the remaining sugar and eggs in a heavy saucepan. Gradually whisk in the half-and-half and the extracts. Place over medium-low heat and warm until small bubbles form at the edge of the pan, stirring frequently. Don't let the mixture actually come to a boil. Pour the custard over the peach-raspberry mixture, stir, and chill at least 1 hour and up to a day.

3. Transfer the custard mixture to an ice cream maker and process according to the manufacturer's directions. Freeze it until serving time. The ice cream is best eaten within several days.

PIN A CONGRESSIONAL MEDAL OF HONOR ON THAT PIG

Short Sugar's Pit Bar-B-Q in Reidsville, North Carolina, won a Congressional barbecue contest in 1982. Representatives from North and South Carolina got into a spat about which state had the best 'Q' and settled it with a barbecue duel. A dozen of the top joints from each state sent samples to Washington, and a jury of Congressional peers awarded top honors to Short Sugar's—for the pork as well as the name.

Ice-Sicles

These two-toned frozen pops cool down the young and young at heart. Investing in an inexpensive set of frozen pop molds makes them a breeze to prepare.

MAKES 8 OR MORE FROZEN POPS

Approximately 1 $\frac{1}{4}$ cups mango or mango-orange juice or nectar

$\frac{1}{2}$ pint strawberries, puréed with 1 to 2 teaspoons sugar

1. Using one-half of the mango juice, pour an equal amount into each mold. Tap the molds on the counter to eliminate any air pockets. Cover with the little lids that come with most molds. Insert sticks into the openings in lids, unless the lids actually form their own handles. Freeze until lightly set, probably at least $\frac{1}{2}$ hour. Spoon the strawberry purée over the mango juice, dividing all of it among the molds. Tap the bottom of the mold, and return to the freezer again until lightly set, at least $\frac{1}{2}$ hour. Top with the remaining mango juice, distributed equally among the pops. Tap the bottom of the mold, and freeze again until firmly set, at least 1 more hour. (The pops keep for up 2 weeks before their flavor fades.)

2. To unmold, gently squeeze the bottom or sides of each mold with one hand while pulling on the stick with the other. If they don't come out easily, soak the molds for just a second or two in hot water, and try again. Serve immediately with plenty of paper napkins.

Variation: Watermelon Ice-Sicles Purée 1 cup of chopped watermelon instead of strawberries, using the sugar if the sweetness needs a little lift.



BBQ TIP You can make frozen pops out of any fruit juice that appeals to you, or use yogurt or softened ice cream. While pops can be made out of a single liquid, we think they're more fun with a mix of colors. Just remember to let the first color set up in the freezer before adding the next.



Brazen Rum-Raisin Sauce

If you don't want to make your own ice cream or other frozen dessert, whip up a batch of this to go over several meals' worth of store-bought vanilla or other compatible ice cream. It can also top pineapple spears, South Georgia Pound Cake (page 435), or even your breakfast pancakes.

MAKES 2 CUPS

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup raisins

$\frac{1}{2}$ cup dark rum

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup light corn syrup

$\frac{1}{4}$ cup packed brown sugar

Pinch of ground allspice or nutmeg (optional)

Combine the raisins and rum in a medium saucepan and let them sit for 10 to 15

minutes. Stir in $\frac{3}{4}$ cup water and the remaining ingredients, and bring to a boil over high heat. Reduce the heat to a simmer and cook about 5 minutes, until a thin sauce is formed. It will thicken as it cools. Use immediately, or chill for later use. The sauce keeps for up to a couple of weeks.



The Best Cure for a Southern Summer

As much as we love the previous desserts, we're not sure that any of them beat cold watermelons, so naturally sweet that they were once processed into sugar. Ice down a big melon and forget heat, humidity, and your air-conditioning bill.

SERVES 8 OR MORE

1 watermelon

1. Chill the melon in the refrigerator or iced down in a tub. Slice and serve.

2. Save the leftover watermelon rind to turn into watermelon pickles.

Cool and Cheery Drinks



It can get pretty damn hot cooking outside. You're contending with the sun, the wood or charcoal fire, the smoke, and maybe even a lot of hot air from some expert helper, like your spouse. If it doesn't drive you to drink, you probably haven't met enough good temptations in your life. Try these.



Bloody Bud	451	Iced Sunshine	457
Derby Day Mint Julep	452	Maui Mai Tai	457
Lynchburg Cooler	453	Peachy Daiquiri	458
V.W.	453	Plumb Loco Coco Punch	458
Firewater	454	Cold Buttered Rum	459
Turquoise Margarita	454	Cham-gria	459
Yankee Shooter	455	Mango-Lime Spritzer	460
Apricorita	456	Sunny Sweet Tea	460
Sangrita Maria	456	Berry Lemonade	461



LOST OUR VOTE

On a hot day at the barbecue pit, our thirst sometimes reminds us of an old Prohibition politician, the one who promised voters that he would make their state so dry the residents would have to prime their mouths to spit.

Bloody Bud

Beer is the beverage of choice for most pitmasters, particularly light-bodied American brews, such as Budweiser. To keep up with the crowd at a barbecue cook-off, you start bending your elbow about the time you light your fire in the morning. If that sounds too early, or if your cranium is still complaining about the night before, drink your first beer like a Bloody Mary. It may not exactly cure a hangover, but it'll at least shock that sucker into submission.

SERVES 2

12 ounces ice-cold beer

12 ounces tomato or V8 juice, chilled

1 tablespoon Worcestershire sauce

Several splashes of Tabasco or other hot pepper sauce

½ teaspoon celery salt

½ teaspoon barbecue dry rub, preferably a spicy one such as Southwest Heat (page 32)

Pour half of the beer, tomato juice, Worcestershire sauce, and Tabasco into each of two tall iced tea glasses. Top each glass with half of the celery salt and the dry rub. Drink, don't sip.

Serving Suggestion *A full hangover cure includes some Up and At 'Em Lamb Sausage (page 153) and Buttermilk Biscuits (page 338).*



HIGH TIMES IN MISSISSIPPI

When we attended the Delta Jubilee Barbecue Cooking Contest in Clarksdale, Mississippi, a few years back, the judges gave awards for two tangentially related achievements. The group that won the "Party 'til ya Oink" trophy seemed to be pretty tight the next morning with the folks who took the prize for the best Bloody Mary.

Derby Day Mint Julep

Mint juleps have been the traditional drink of the Kentucky Derby since the founder of Churchill Downs, Colonel Meriwether Lewis Clark, started the race in 1875. On Derby Day, special bars at the track sell about 80,000 juleps to the 125,000 spectators. Some people think the concoction is too sweet, some say it's too strong, but you'll always find a julep in the winner's circle in the blue-grass and bourbon state.

SERVES 10 TO 20

MINT SYRUP

1 cup sugar

1 cup loosely packed fresh mint leaves

Kentucky bourbon

Mint sprigs, for garnish

1. In a saucepan, prepare the mint syrup. In 1 cup of water, bring the sugar and mint to a boil, and boil the mixture until the sugar is dissolved and the liquid is clear. Set the syrup aside to steep as it cools. Strain before using. The syrup keeps in a covered jar in the refrigerator for several weeks.

2. Make juleps individually. For each serving, fill an 8-ounce glass with crushed ice. Add a half-tablespoon of mint syrup—or as much as a full tablespoon if you like your juleps on the sweet side—and 2 ounces of bourbon. Stir gently to frost the glass, garnish with a sprig of mint, and serve at once.

Serving Suggestion *No Derby Day party is complete without a bowl of Kentucky Burgoo (page 372).*

DON'T FORGET THE BOURBON

The origin of the mint julep is obscure, but Kentucky has claimed credit for the invention since the early nineteenth century. Old lore about the drink suggests many secrets for success, such as picking the mint in the dewy cool of the early morning, using cold spring water “pure as angels are,” and, most important, serving the julep in a silver goblet.

Lynchburg Cooler

Kentucky may be the home of bourbon, but Tennessee also produces its share of good whiskey, including the Jack Daniel's made in the small burg of Lynchburg.

SERVES 2

2 ounces Jack Daniel's or similar sour-mash whiskey

1 ounce brandy

1 ounce light rum

1½ teaspoons sugar

4 twists of lemon peel

1. In a cocktail shaker or lidded jar, combine all ingredients except the lemon peel with 1 ounce of water and shake until the sugar dissolves.

2. Pour over ice cubes in old-fashioned glasses. Top with the lemon peel. Serve immediately.

BYOB

Jack Daniel's hosts one of the most prestigious barbecue cook-offs each fall in Lynchburg, a little over an hour south of Nashville. You must be invited to enter the competition, and you won't get that honor without winning other important contests. Spectators numbering in the tens of thousands descend on the village (population 361) each October. It's a good thing they come for a taste of something other than whiskey because Lynchburg is in a dry county.

V.W.

Nothing tastes better than watermelon in the summertime, even in a beverage.

SERVES 2

3 ounces vodka

2 cups watermelon juice (made from puréed watermelon)

Confectioners' sugar, optional

Half-fill two tall 10-ounce to 12-ounce glasses with ice. Pour in the vodka and the juice. Stir and taste. If the watermelon

wasn't particularly sweet, you may want to add a touch of confectioners' sugar. Mix in the sugar, if needed, and serve immediately.

Serving Suggestion *The perfect appetizer to eat with a V.W. is Mouthwatering Watermelon Morsels (page 322).*

Firewater

Some major American chefs, including Paul Prudhomme and Mark Miller, offer variations on this theme under different names at pretty steep prices. You can make your own, and earn your own fame, for a much lower cost.

SERVES A PARTY

1 liter decent vodka

3 to 4 fresh serranos or jalapeños, split

Twists of lime peel and/or green olives, preferably jalapeño-stuffed, for garnish

1. In a bottle or jar, combine the vodka and chiles and cover. Let the mixture steep at room temperature for a minimum of 3 days.

2. Transfer the vodka to the freezer and allow it to chill thoroughly. (It won't freeze.) Serve straight up or over ice, garnished with a twist of lime or olive, martini style.

Serving Suggestion *To soothe your throat, munch on smoked cheese, such as Can't Wait Queso (page 315) or Unholy Swiss Cheese (page 316).*



Turquoise Margarita

This is a festive take on the margarita, perfect for a barbecue party.

SERVES 1

Salt

Lime wedge

1½ ounces high-quality tequila

1 ounce blue Curaçao

¼ ounce freshly squeezed lime juice

1. Place a thin layer of salt onto a saucer. Rub the rim of an 8-ounce glass with the lime wedge and immediately dip the rim into the salt. Set aside.

2. Pour the tequila, Curaçao, and lime juice into a cocktail shaker or lidded jar, add several pieces of cracked ice, and shake to blend. Pour into the prepared glass and serve.

Serving Suggestion *Little Devils (page 320) are made to match any tequila drink.*

Yankee Shooter

The barbecue contest circuit is full of colorful characters, but none is more entertaining than Obie Obermark, the lean, tall Texan who invented the Yankee Shooter. To fix the Shooter right, you have to use Yankee Blaster, one of a score or so barbecue spice mixes that Obie makes and sells (972-641-2660, www.obiecue.com). Our suggestion for a substitute works in a pinch, but it's not the genuine article.

SERVES 1

Shot of high-quality tequila

Yankee Blaster spice mix or an equal combination of cayenne and crushed chile de árbol

1. Add 1 to 7 shakes of Yankee Blaster to the tequila or the same number of TINY pinches of the substitute spice mix. Yankee Blaster is named for its heat level, so be-

ware. Obie takes a full 7 shakes but doesn't recommend it to anyone who isn't a veteran of jalapeño-eating contests.

2. Cover the glass with your hand and shake it vigorously, one shake per dose of the dry spices. Gulp the contents immediately and completely, trying to remain upright.

LOVE THEM TEXAS TALES

In addition to being a champion pitmaster, Obie Obermark has written for several barbecue publications and was instrumental in founding the International Barbecue Cookers Association, one of the largest membership organizations of its kind. If you run into him at a cook-off, don't worry about a lag in the conversation. Always outgoing, Obie definitely has the gift of gab.



Apricorita

Another specialty margarita, this is a frozen version with a fruity tang.

SERVES 2

2 ounces high-quality tequila
1 ounce apricot brandy
¼ ounce freshly squeezed lime juice
1 tablespoon honey, or more to taste
1½ cups cracked ice
1 fresh apricot, halved, for garnish (optional)

In a blender, combine the tequila, brandy, lime juice, and honey and blend until well combined. Add the ice and blend until smooth. Pour into tulip-shaped champagne glasses and garnish with apricot halves, if you wish. Serve immediately.



Sangrita Maria

In Mexico, bartenders often serve shots of tequila with a side glass of sangrita, a zippy tomato and citrus mixture. We're too lazy to wash two glasses when one will do, so we just combine the ingredients into a south-of-the-border Bloody Mary.

SERVES 4

2 cups tomato juice
½ cup freshly squeezed orange juice
2 tablespoons freshly squeezed lime juice
1 tablespoon chopped onion
2 teaspoons Worcestershire sauce
1 fresh serrano or jalapeño, chopped
4 ounces high-quality tequila
Sprinkle of celery salt
Barbecue dry rub, such as Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub (page 26) or Southwest Heat (page 32) (optional)

Whole serranos and lime wedges, for garnish

Combine the juices, onion, Worcestershire sauce, chile, and tequila in a blender. Blend the mixture briefly until well combined. Pour it into tall glasses filled with ice cubes. Shake a little celery salt over each drink and, if you wish, a bit of dry rub, too. Garnish with a serrano chile attached by a toothpick to the lime wedge.

Iced Sunshine

A bright, perky tequila drink, perfect for sunrise and sunset alike.

SERVES 2

2 tablespoons simple syrup, or more to taste
2 cups freshly squeezed pink grapefruit juice
(from about 4 large grapefruit)
 $\frac{1}{4}$ cup high-quality tequila, preferably silver
Splash of grenadine

In a cocktail shaker or lidded jar, combine the simple syrup, fruit juice, and tequila. Pour the mixture over ice in tall glasses.

Add a splash of grenadine to the top of each drink and serve.



BBQ TIP To make simple syrup, combine equal amounts of sugar and water and bring the mixture to a boil until the sugar dissolves. Cool. The syrup keeps indefinitely.



Maui Mai Tai

A couple of these and you'll feel as balmy as a Hawaiian breeze.

SERVES 1

$1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons simple syrup
1 ounce dark rum
1 ounce light rum
1 ounce freshly squeezed lemon juice
 $\frac{1}{2}$ ounce Curaçao or other orange-flavored liqueur
 $1\frac{1}{2}$ teaspoons orgeat syrup (an almond-flavored syrup available at well-stocked liquor stores) or amaretto liqueur

Fresh pineapple spear, lime wedge, and fresh mint sprig, for garnish

Little paper parasol, to make your friends giggle (optional)

Combine the simple syrup, rums, lemon juice, Curaçao, and orgeat syrup in a cocktail shaker or lidded jar and shake well. Pour the drink over ice in a double old-fashioned glass. Garnish it as desired and serve.

Serving Suggestion *Mai Tais go great before a Hawaiian seafood dinner, such as Kohala Tuna Steaks (page 231) or Jungle Prince Scallops (page 245).*

Peachy Daiquiri

Here's the best use for canned peaches we've ever found.

SERVES 4

16-ounce can peaches in heavy syrup,
undrained

1 cup light rum

Juice of 1 to 2 limes

2 cups cracked ice

Lime slices, for garnish

Combine the peaches, rum, lime juice, and ice in a blender and blend until smooth.

Pour the drink into tulip-shaped champagne glasses, garnish with lime slices, and serve.

Variation: Mango Daiquiri Substitute an equal-size can or jar of mangoes and juice for the peaches.

THE SCANTIEST OF INSPIRATIONS

A decade or more ago, the Jack Daniel Distillery decided to sponsor a barbecue cook-off team headed by Mike "Fish" Fisher, a technician at the whiskey plant. Cooking on a huge smoker in the shape of a Jack Daniel's bottle, the group took up their hobby with genuine enthusiasm after they were invited to barbecue for a bikini contest in Nashville.

Plumb Loco Coco Punch

You'll probably jibber like you're plumb loco if you drink more than two.

SERVES 4

1 cup dark rum

½ cup canned cream of coconut

¼ cup Mint Syrup (see Derby Day Mint Julep, page 452)

¼ cup milk or half-and-half

1 tablespoon pure vanilla extract

4 cups cracked ice

Mint sprigs, for garnish

Place the rum, cream of coconut, syrup, milk, vanilla, and ice in a blender and blend until the mixture is smooth. Pour the drink into tall glasses, garnish with mint, and serve.

Cold Buttered Rum

Here's an ice cream alternative to the winter favorite, filling enough to replace dessert.

SERVES 1

1½ ounces dark rum

1 large scoop butter pecan ice cream

½ cup cracked ice

Dash of bitters

Sprinkle of nutmeg

Orange slice, for garnish

In a blender, combine the rum, ice cream, ice, and bitters and blend until smooth.

Pour the drink into a balloon-shaped wine glass. Sprinkle it with nutmeg, garnish with the orange slice, and serve immediately.

Serving Suggestion *With any spicy barbecue meal, Cold Buttered Rum makes a refreshing after-dinner drink.*

Cham-gria

Nothing says summer like sangria, or sangaree, as it's sometimes known in parts of the South. Spanish in origin, the wine concoction seeped into the country through Florida and Texas. This version uses a bit of the bubbly in the blend.

MAKES ABOUT 1 GALLON

3 oranges, sliced and halved

3 limes, sliced and halved

2 lemons, sliced and halved

1 cup sugar

1½-liter bottle fruity red wine

1 cup apricot brandy

½ cup triple sec or other orange-flavored liqueur

Juice of 2 limes

750-milliliter bottle inexpensive champagne or sparkling wine

1. Place the fruit in a pitcher or large bowl.

Cover the fruit with the sugar and let the mixture sit at room temperature for about 1 hour.

2. Pour the wine, brandy, triple sec, and lime juice over the fruit and stir to dissolve the sugar. Chill the mixture for at least 30 minutes and up to several hours.

3. Just before serving, mix in the champagne and add enough ice cubes to make the drink really frosty. Serve the sangria over more ice, adding a few fruit slices to each serving. *Salud.*

Mango-Lime Spritzer

A refreshingly light cooler, this is good as a nonalcoholic beverage, too. Just replace the wine with more club soda or carbonated mineral water.

SERVES 2

1 large ripe mango, peeled and cut in chunks

Juice of 1 lime

1 cup white wine

½ cup club soda or carbonated mineral water

Lime slices, for garnish

Combine the mango and lime juice in a blender and purée. Add the wine and club soda and blend thoroughly. Pour the mixture through a strainer into 2 tall glasses. Add ice, garnish with the limes, and serve.



Sunny Sweet Tea

Set this outside in the sun with you while you barbecue and you'll have great iced tea by lunch time. You can substitute artificial sweetener for the sugar, but a venerable rule of barbecue etiquette requires some kind of sweetening.

SERVES 2

6 tea bags

1 quart cold water

Sugar, a lot of it

Ice

Lemon wedges, for garnish

1. Put the tea bags and cold water in a large jar, setting it out in the sun to soak up some rays. You'll have tea in a couple of hours, but give it at least twice that

long for the fullest flavor. Add sugar to taste, traditionally until your teeth ache.

2. Let the tea stand at room temperature until needed or pour immediately over ice. Use a good quantity of cubes, but don't overdo it. Serve the tea in barrel-size plastic glasses for the most authentic touch. Add a hefty wedge of lemon per glass. Always offer refills. Iced tea tastes best the day it's made.

Berry Lemonade

Lemonade is the only nonalcoholic summer drink to rival ice tea in popularity with the barbecue crowd. Here's a merry-looking berry variety, a genuinely natural version of pink lemonade.

SERVES 6 OR MORE

2 cups raspberries, fresh or frozen

1 cup sugar

2 cups freshly squeezed lemon juice (from about 10 medium lemons)

Lemon slices

Boil the berries and sugar together in a small saucepan with 1 cup water for sev-

eral minutes, until the berries disintegrate and the sugar dissolves. Pour the syrup through a strainer into a large pitcher. Stir in the lemon juice, and add about 3 cups of cold water, keeping in mind that ice will further dilute the lemonade. Pour into tall glasses over ice, and garnish with lemon slices.

BOTTLED WATER WON'T DO

Bar-B-Q joints sell plenty of sweetened tea, but they are often big on soft drinks as well. If you want to evoke the right feeling at home, serve R.C. Cola instead of Coke or track down a carton of Big Red, a popular barbecue drink in central Texas.



Acknowledgments

EVERY COOK IN THE WORLD is indebted to scores or even hundreds of other people who've taught him or her tricks of the craft. We're more indebted than most, maybe because we're slow learners, but also because there are so many wonderful people in the world of barbecue eager to share anything from their food and beer to their secrets.

Our first teachers, who go back to childhood, were the pitmasters in Bar-B-Q joints across the country, especially in Kansas City, Memphis, and Texas. They taught us what barbecue should taste like and they continue to inspire our aspirations. From the time when Bill was a teenage soda jerk in Dallas in the 1950s, he recalls one grizzled old-timer in particular at a neighborhood joint—the name of the guy and the place long forgotten but not the sawdust floors and the superb sandwiches.

Among contemporary mentors, Wayne and PJ Whitworth stand out as delightful

friends and savvy down-home cooks. They introduced us to the marvels of log-burning pits and provided the joy of their company over numerous hours of barbecuing and partying. Just as expert at the same pleasures, the late Jim Quessenberry graciously took us in as Arkansas Trav'lers team members at the Memphis in May World Championship Barbecue Contest. We'll always cherish the great time we had with him, Donna, Arthur, Brian, Crayton, Dan, Tammy, and the rest of the reveling crew.

All the good folks at the Kansas City Barbeque Society were helpful with the first edition, particularly Carolyn Wells and Bunny Tuttle. We've visited their fair city often over the years to do some smoking and eating with Bob and Lynn Pierle and Henry and Madelyn Moran, dear friends who love the 'Q' as much as we do.

Back at home, another group of friends has always been ready to join us in a barbecue blowout. The front line of critiquers

and consumers for the original edition included Ed Reid, Ellen Bradbury Reid, John Loehr, Sally Martin, Gayther and Susie Gonzales, Bob and Lisa Wade, Shirley and Richard Jones, Cindy and Jim Turner, Susan and David Curtis and family, Rob and Mary Coffland, Deborah Madison, Patrick McFarlin, Terry Melton, Jana Edmonson, Lenore Tapia, and Heather Jamison Neale. For the second edition, the party was enlarged and enhanced by the appetites, antics, and laughter of Bumble Bee Bob, BJ, and Kathryn Weil, Kathy and Dusty Loo, Kyle Nelson, Karen Berlanti, Lawry Babitt, Daniel and Elizabeth Rocha, and JB, Riley, and Bronwyn Neale. Our masterful meatcutter, Seva Dubuar, joins us occasionally and provides invaluable advice all the time, as do her colleagues, Art "Nobody Beats Art's Meat" Pacheco and Paula Garcia Jones.

Obie and Pat Obermark bring spirit to any occasion, some of it in the form of the tequila in their Yankee Shooters. John and Matt Thorne's newsletter, *Simple Cooking*, and several books of essays, are full of wit and solid information when they deal with barbecue or any other subject. Among cookbook authors and other food writers, we're particularly indebted in this project to Chris Schlesinger and John Willoughby, Lolis Eric Elie and Frank Stewart, John Egerton, John T. Edge, Rich Davis and Shifra

Stein, Greg Johnson and Vince Staten, Jacqueline Higuera McMahan, Phillip Stephen Schulz, Bobby Seale, Jane and Michael Stern, Jonathan St. Laurent, Jeanne Voltz, Maggie Waldron, and Robb Walsh.

Executives at a number of companies and organizations volunteered help beyond the call of duty for the first edition. Some have moved since then to new positions, but not the indefatigable Donna Myers, the whiz behind the Barbecue Industry Association. Other advisors from the past included Lloyd Davenport at Oklahoma Joe's, Donna Ellis at Cookshack, Stan Williams at Brinkmann, Pat Wilson at C.M. International, Rinaldo Manago at Char-Broil, Mike Dietert at New Braunfels Smokehouse, Ron Snider at the New Braunfels Smoker Company, Don Burnett at Smokemaster, and Theresa Harden at the National Barbecue Association.

Most of all, perhaps, we need to thank the folks who made our ramblings and recipes into a book. Our agent Doe Coover, photographer Lois Ellen Frank, and the good folks at the National Book Network contributed in invaluable ways. The Harvard Common Press team, past and present—including Bruce Shaw, Dan Rosenberg, Pam Hoenig, Valerie Cimino, Christine Alaimo, and Skye Stewart—actually put money and other support behind this pig-out.

Index

- A**
- achiote paste, buying, 37
 - Adler, Karen, 59
 - Ain't Momma's Meat Loaf, 135–46
 - Alabama Great White, 362
 - Alabama Smoked Chicken Sandwich, 186–87
 - alder wood, 20, 212, 286
 - Alexander, Ernest, 73
 - Allen, Terry, 260
 - Alters, Mayme and Clifford, 384
 - aluminum foil, 129
 - American Royal Invitational cook-off (Kansas City), 163, 274, 364, 413
 - Appetizers
 - Bar-B-Q-ed Potato Chips, 321
 - BBQ Bacon and Eggs, 337
 - Bean, Beer, and Bacon Dip, 326
 - Better-Than-Store-Bought
 - Bacon-Horseradish Dip, 325
 - Bluefish Mousse, 330
 - Bronzed Garlic, 323
 - Can't Wait Queso, 315
 - Chicken from Hell, 336
 - Chicken's Little Livers, 335
 - Creamy Catfish Spread, 328
 - Curry Pecans, 318–19
 - Devilish Pistachios (var.), 320
 - 007 Shrimp, 339
 - Drop-Dead Trout Spread, 329
 - Fiesta Salsa, 324
 - Fruit Salsa, 83–84
 - Greens-Stuffed Mushrooms, 332
 - Heavenly Hearts, 331
 - Just Plain Delicious Bean Dip (var.), 326
 - Little Devils, 320
 - Mexican Queso Fundido (var.), 315
 - Mouthwatering Watermelon Morsels, 322
 - Mozzarella Toasts, 333
 - Nachos Blancos, 317
 - Pico de Gallo, 112–13
 - Prosciutto-Wrapped Shrimp (var.), 340
 - Quail from Hell (var.), 336
 - quick ideas for, 334
 - Salsa Verde, 283–84
 - Scallops on a Stick, 341
 - Smoked Clam Dip, 327
 - Smoked Mushroom Quesadillas, 317–18
 - Smoked Olives, 321
 - Smoked Rosemary Walnuts, 319
 - Smoked Trout on Apple Slices, 338
 - Succulent Bacon-Wrapped Shrimp, 340
 - Supper Spread, 101
 - Texas Terrine, 342
 - Three-Onion Dip, 326–27
 - Tomatillo Salsa, 235–36
 - Unholy Swiss Cheese, 316
 - Wild Wings, 333–34
 - Apple City Apple Sauce, 361
 - Apple City Baby Back Ribs, 72–73
 - apple wood, 20, 73
 - Apple(s)
 - Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
 - Slices, Smoked Trout on, 338
 - Smokin' Waldorf, 276–77
 - Apricorita, 456
 - Arkansas Tamale Spread (var.), 384
 - Artichokes
 - Arty Rice Salad, 405
 - Bronzed, 264
 - Heavenly Hearts, 331
 - Asian Lightning Mop (var.), 48
 - Asian Vegetable Slaw, 404
 - Austin, Bob, 377
 - Avocado and Mango Salad, 406
 - Avocado Sauce, 228–29

B

 - baby back ribs, about, 68
 - Bacon
 - B.C. Canadian, 98
 - Bean, and Beer Dip, 326
 - A Blast of a BLT Salad, 293–94
 - cooked, smoky flavor for, 296
 - and Eggs, BBQ, 337
 - Horseradish Dip, Better-Than-Store-Bought, 325
 - Killed Salad, 394–95
 - Wrapped Shrimp, Succulent, 340

- Bananas
 - Barbecued, 278
 - 'Nana Nut Salad, 407
 - 'Nana Pudding, 441
- Bandera pits, 8
- barbacoa de cabeza*, about, 103, 137
- barbecue associations
 - Barbecue Industry Association, 211, 323
 - Hearth, Patio & Barbecue Association, 306
 - International Barbecue Cookers Association, 238, 455
 - Kansas City Barbeque Society, 158, 299, 340, 430
 - National Barbecue Association, 428
 - New England Barbecue Society, 240
- barbecue cook-offs and festivals
 - American Royal Invitational (Kansas City), 163, 274, 364, 413
 - Big Pig Jig (Vienna, GA), 88, 244
 - Blue Ridge BBQ Festival (Tyron, NC), 57
 - Canadian International Barbecue Championship (New Westminster, British Columbia), 214
 - Delta Jubilee Barbecue Cooking Contest (Clarksdale, MI), 451
 - Fire Ant Festival (Montague, TX), 98
 - Hogtoberfest (Roanoke Rapids, NC), 98
 - Houston Livestock Show and Rodeo, 123, 134
 - International Barbecue Cook-off (Taylor, TX), 129
 - International Bar-B-Q Festival (Owensboro, KY), 141, 229, 422
 - Jack Daniel Invitational (Lynchburg, TN), 413, 453
 - Massachusetts State BBQ & Blues Festival (Hanover, MA), 240
 - Memphis in May, 61, 183, 225, 255, 259
 - National Championship Barbecue Cook-Off (Meridian, TX), 283, 328
 - Oklahoma Joe's Interplanetary B-B-Q Cook-Off (Perry, OK), 287
 - Standing on the Square (Laurens, SC), 98
 - Swine Days (Natchez, MI), 98
 - Tour de Pig (Lexington, NC), 275
 - Watermelon Thump (Luling, TX), 206
 - W.C. Handy Blues and Barbecue Festival (Henderson, KY), 334
 - When Pigs Fly (McPherson, KS), 98
 - World Championship Barbecue Goat Cook-Off (Brady, TX), 155
- barbecue country food products
 - Aidells' sausages, 94, 181
 - Big Red soft drinks, 461
 - Broken Arrow Ranch meats, 166
 - Char Crust dry rub, 150
 - Corky's barbecue sauces, 352
 - Gebhardt's chile powder, 27
 - Goode Company's Hall of Flame, 106
 - Greenberg's smoked turkeys, 198
 - Hugh Fitzsimmons's Rio Bravo bison, 166
 - Jack Daniel whiskey, 453
 - Jim Beam bourbon, 443, 444
 - Johnsonville bratwurst, 93
 - K.C. Masterpiece sauce, 359
 - Lawry's marinades, 236
 - Maguire Foods sauce, 361
 - Moon Pies, 438
 - New Braunfels Smokehouse meats, 322
 - North of the Border rubs and sauces, 80–81
 - Obiecue Texas Spice mixtures, 180, 455
 - Penzeys seasonings, 29
 - Pickapeppa sauce, 117
 - Pickwick Catfish Farm fish, 224
 - Prairie Pride Farm pork, 89
 - Southside Market sausages, 302
 - Vann's seasonings, 29
 - White Lily flour, 388
 - Wicker's barbecue sauces, 352
 - Yankee Blaster spice mix, 455
- barbecue fuels and tools. *See also* smokers
 - aluminum foil, 129
 - aprons, 17
 - BBQr's Delight wood pellets, 14
 - charcoal fuels, 6, 14–15, 203
 - drip pans, 17
 - fire starters, 15–16
 - gimme caps, 17
 - grilling racks, 221
 - grills, 9–10, 49, 55, 68, 244, 323
 - heat-resistant gloves, 16
 - kitchen syringes, 16
 - metal chimneys, 15–16
 - metal pokers or shovels, 16–17
 - mopping brushes, 16, 45
 - Pitt's & Spitt's mitts, 16
 - portable grates, 17, 221
 - skewers, 17, 340
 - smoke-proof dishes, 17, 206, 337
 - thermometers, 5, 16
 - wire brushes, 17, 269
 - wood chips and chunks, 13–14, 20, 123, 212, 286
 - work table, 17
- Barbecue Industry Association, 211, 323
- barbecue joints and restaurants
 - Abe's (Clarksdale, MS), 264
 - Aleck's Barbecue Heaven (Atlanta), 73
 - Allen & Son Bar-B-Que (Chapel Hill, NC), 94
 - Angelo's (Fort Worth), 293
 - Arthur Bryant's (Kansas City), 174, 176
 - Bar-B-Que Shop (Memphis), 310
 - Beacon drive-in (Spartanburg, SC), 396

Big John's 'Q' (Peoria, IL), 184
 Blue Smoke (New York City), 67
 Bozo's (Mason, TN), 436
 Bubba's (Eureka Springs, AK), 243
 Bumble Bee's Baja Grill (Santa Fe, NM), 236
 C & K Barbecue restaurant (St. Louis), 400
 City Market (Luling, TX), 93, 206
 Clark's Outpost (Tioga, TX), 120
 Cooper's (Llano, TX), 213
 Craig's Bar-B-Q (De Valls Bluff, AK), 421
 D & H Bar-B-Que (Manning, SC), 265
 Daddy Bruce's Bar-B-Q (Denver, CO), 443
 Dinosaur Bar-B-Que (Syracuse, NY), 85
 Dixie Pig (Blytheville, AK), 395
 Dr. Hogly-Wogly's Tyler, Texas Bar-B-Que (Los Angeles), 130
 Dreamland Drive-Inn (Tuscaloosa, AL), 335
 Duchess Drive In (Atkins, AK), 377
 Fresh Air Bar-B-Que (Jackson, GA), 77
 Gates & Son's Bar-B-Que (Kansas City), 315, 347
 George's Bar-B-Q (Owensboro, KY), 373
 Gibson's (Decatur, AL), 186, 362
 Gonzales Food Market (Gonzales, TX), 125
 Goode Company (Houston), 106
 Grand Emporium (Kansas City), 281
 Gridley's (Memphis), 325
 Hayward's (Kansas City), 109
 Hollywood Café (Robinsonville, MS), 377
 Interstate (Memphis), 320
 Jack's Original Barbecue (Tucson, AZ), 258

Jiggs Smoke House (Clinton, OK), 414
 Kreuz Market (Lockhart, TX), 6, 339
 LC's (Kansas City), 440
 Lem's (Chicago), 271
 Leo and Son Barbeque (Oklahoma City), 433
 Leonard's (Memphis), 53, 288
 Lexington Barbecue No. 1 (Lexington, NC), 153
 Lindsey's (Little Rock, AK), 427
 Louie Mueller's (Taylor, TX), 290
 Loveless Motel and Café (Nashville), 79
 Mansion on Turtle Creek (Dallas), 119, 237
 Maurice's Piggie Park (West Columbia, SC), 351
 McClard's Bar-B-Q (Hot Springs, AK), 358
 Moonlite Bar-B-Q (Owensboro, KY), 356, 407
 Mr. Powdrell's Barbeque House (Albuquerque, NM), 266
 Old Hickory Bar-B-Q (Owensboro, KY), 277
 Otto's (Houston, TX), 213
 Payne's (Memphis), 64, 310
 Phillips (Los Angeles), 284
 Pickwick Catfish Farm (Counce, TN), 224
 Pierce's Pitt Bar-B-Que (Lightfoot, VA), 295
 Pig Stand (Dallas), 151
 Rendezvous (Memphis), 66
 Ridgewood (Bluff City, TN), 318
 Rosedale Barbeque (Kansas City), 381
 Roy's (Hutchinson, KS), 411
 Sconyers Bar-B-Que (Augusta, GA), 164
 Shady Rest Pit-Bar-B-Q (Owensboro, KY), 199
 Short Sugar's Pit Bar-B-Q (Reidsville, NC), 445
 Skylight Inn (Ayden, NC), 37, 91
 Smitty's (Lockhart, TX), 93

Smokehouse (Dallas), 260
 Snead's (Kansas City), 132
 Speed Queen (Milwaukee), 192
 Spoon River Charcuterie (Charlotte, NC), 250
 Starnes Bar-B-Q (Paducah, KY), 116
 Stroud's (Kansas City), 178
 Sweatman's (Holly Hill, SC), 331
 Tommy's (Paris, TX), 31
 Uncle Billy's Downeast Barbecue (Portland, ME), 268
 Van's Pig Stand (Shawnee, OK), 399
 Woody's (Los Angeles), 284
 barbecue publications
 Barbecue Today, 428
 Bullsheet newsletter, 430
 National Barbecue News newsletter, 297
 Barbecue Sauce
 Alabama Great White, 362
 Apple City Apple Sauce, 361
 applying to food, 68, 125
 Bar-BQ Ranch Sauce, 353–54
 best breads for, 387
 Black Sauce, 355
 Bour-BQ Sauce, 357
 Boydesque Brew, 348
 Carolina Red, 350
 Cinderella Sauce, 357
 commercial, buying, 80–81, 352, 361
 cook-off contests, 364
 Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce, 358
 Fiery Jamaican Barbecue Sauce (var.), 359
 Golden Mustard Barbecue Sauce, 350
 Green Sauce Olé (var.), 354
 Hoisin BBQ Sauce, 364
 Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce, 360–61
 Jamaican Barbecue Sauce, 359
 Lime-Mint Barbecue Sauce, 363
 Mango-Habanero Hellfire, 365
 Memphis Magic, 353
 Moonlite and Moonshine, 356

Barbecue Sauce, *cont.*

Old-Fashioned High-Cholesterol
Great-Tasting Southern
Sauce, 351

Plum Good Slopping Sauce,
364

Sauce Olé, 354

"signature," creating, 348

Smoked Butter, 352

Smoked Onion Sauce, 360

South Florida Citrus Sauce, 363

Southwestern Great White
(var.), 362

Struttin' Sauce, 347

using as a glaze, 125

Vaunted Vinegar Sauce, 349

West Coast Wonder, 355

barbecue teams

Apple City BBQers, 72, 73,
361

Arkansas Trav'lers, 61

AutoZone, 255

Bop-N-Quers, 380

Great Boars of Fire, 245

Hazardous Waist, 245

Jack Daniel Distillery, 458

Les, Big, and Bud Ugly, 101

Paddlewheel Porkers, 225

Pork, Sweat & Beers, 245

Pork Forkers, 245

Porky Pilots, 227

Rowdy Southern Swine, 183

Sow Luau, 245

Tim & Todd's Most Excellent
Adventure, 287

U.S. Porkmasters, 249

Wild Boars, 415

ZZ Chop, 245

barbecue tips and techniques. *See*

also cooking temperatures

adding water to smokers, 4

adjusting recipe cooking times,
4–6, 66, 218

applying sauce or glaze, 68,
125

avoiding fat or oil drippings, 4

basics of, 3–4

basting foods, 39, 44, 45, 49,
142

checking amount of smoke
flavor, 225

cooking duck, 199

cooking fatty meats, 109, 199

cooking fish, 231

cooking fully-cooked meats,
94, 296

cooking shrimp, 237

cooking skin-on poultry,
172–73

cooking store-bought sausages,
94

cooking tender meats, 4, 119

cooking tough meats, 4, 106

cooking vegetables, 254, 267,
284

cooking venison, 163, 164

flavoring with wood chips,
13–14, 20, 123, 212, 286

food safety issues, 121, 142

keeping foods moist, 4, 10,
129, 163, 168

preparing muffin tins, 337

room temperature food for
smokers, 121

salting foods, 25, 145

smoke curing foods, 4

smoke rings, about, 109

using grilling racks, 17, 221

using injection liquids, 16, 191

weather conditions and

influences, 5, 11, 278

working with marinades, 39,
43

working with mops, 45, 49

working with pastes, 34

working with rubs, 25–26

Bar-B-Que Pits, 8

barrel smokers, 11–12

basil, in herb paste, 36

bastes. *See* Mops

basting tips

tools for, 16, 45

using marinades as bastes, 39,
44, 142

when to baste, 49

BBQr's Delight wood pellets, 14

Beam, Jacob, 444

Beam, Jim, 443

Bean(s)

Arkansas Tamale Spread (var.),
384

Baked, Kansas City, 373–74

Beer, and Bacon Dip, 326

Black-Eyed Pea and Ham
Macaroni Salad, 296

Black-Eyed Pea Cakes, 265–66

Brunswick Stew, 370–71

Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas
Salad, 396–97

Cowpoke Pintos, 374–75

Dip, Just Plain Delicious (var.),
326

Succotash Salad, 403

Wayne's Wonderful \$50 (var.),
375

Beard, James, 40, 198

Beef. *See also* Beef Brisket; Beef
Steak; Veal

Ain't Momma's Meat Loaf,
135–36

Arkansas Tamale Spread (var.),
384

ground, for burgers, 134

Hill Country Links, 92–93

Hot Tamales, 383–84

The Humble Hot Dog, 132

Humdinger Hamburgers,
133–34

Jerk Burger (var.), 134

Kentucky Burgoo, 372

meat loaf, smoking, 136

parsley-based paste for, 36

Pit Pot Roast, 128–29

Short Ribs, Cinderella, 124–25

Short Ribs, Pan-Asian, 126

Standing Tall Prime Rib, 127

stovetop smoking, 282

Tenderloin, Drunk and Dirty,
115–16

tenderloin, searing, 119

Tenderloin, Simply Elegant, 114

Tenderloin, Tamarind, 117

wood flavors for, 123

Beef Brisket

Braggin' Rights, 105–6

Burnt Ends, 108–9

buying, 106

Dallas Dandy, 107–8

Deli-Cured, 110–11

Hash, 137

internal cooking temperatures
for, 106

Salpicón, 138

Texas Terrine, 342
 wood flavors for, 20

Beef Steak
 Bona Fide Fajitas, 112–13
 Carpetbag Steak, 118–19
 Flank Steak–Potato Salad (var.), 290
 Garlic-Scented Sirloin, 119–20
 High Plains Jerky, 131
 marinating, 43
 PJ's Spicy Pinwheel Steak, 122–23
 searing, 119
 Southwest Stew on a Stick, 129–30
 Soy-Glazed Flank Steak, 121
 Spicy Asian Flank Steak Salad, 294–95
 stovetop smoking, 282

Beer
 Bean, and Bacon Dip, 326
 Bloody Bud, 451
 Chicken on a Throne, 171–73
 Ginger, Marinade (var.), 42
 Mop, Basic, 46
 Stout, Marinade, 42
 Texas Pride (var.), 38

'Bello Burger, 262

Berry Lemonade, 461

Bessinger, Maurice, 351

Big Green Egg smokers, 9, 173

Big Pig Jig cook-off (Vienna, GA), 88, 244

Birds of Paradise, 175–76

Biscuits, Buttermilk, 388

Biscuits, Sweet Potato, 389

Bishop, Big Daddy John and Lillie, 335

bison, buying, 166

Black Diamond pits, 8

Black Sauce, 355

Black Walnut Cake, 437–38

Blackberry Cobbler (var.), 431

Black-Eyed Pea(s)
 Burstin' with, Salad, 396–97
 Cakes, 265–66
 and Ham Macaroni Salad, 296

Bloody Bud, 451

Blue Cheese Lamb Burgers (var.), 151

Blue Corn Muffins, 390

Blue Ridge BBQ Festival (Tyron, NC), 57

Bluefish Mousse, 330

Boarding House Macaroni Salad, 399

Bodacious Bread-and-Butter Pickles, 410

Bologna
 Triple Play Tube Steak, 99

Bona Fide Fajitas, 112–13

Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream, 443–44

Bosland, Paul, 403

Bosley, Catherine and Hugh, 356, 407

Boston Bay Jerked Pork, 60–61

Bourbon
 Bour-BQ Sauce, 357
 Candied Sweet Potatoes, 378
 Derby Day Mint Julep, 452
 Drunk and Dirty Tenderloin, 115–16
 -Glazed Ribs, 69–70
 Jim Beam, about, 443, 444
 Kentucky Pride, 38
 in marinades, 233
 Mint Ice Cream, Booker's, 443–44
 Peaches, 417
 Soused Swordfish, 233

Boyd, Otis, 348

Boydesque Brew, 348

Bradley Smoker ovens, 9

Braggin' Rights Brisket, 105–6

Brats, Store-Bought Hot, 93–94

Brazen Rum-Raisin Sauce, 447

Bread Pudding
 Coconut, with Rum (var.), 443
 Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43

Breads
 best, for barbecue sauce, 387
 best, for sandwiches, 65
 Blue Corn Muffins, 390
 Buttermilk Biscuits, 388
 Cracklin' Cornbread, 387
 Peppery 'Pups, 385
 Sweet Potato Biscuits, 389

brick pits, 12

briquettes, 14–15, 203

brisket. *See* Beef Brisket

Brunswick Stew, 370–71

brushes, for cleaning, 17, 269

brushes, for mopping, 16, 45

Bryant, Arthur, 176

Bryant, Sonny, 260, 380

Buffalo Steak, Smoked, 166

Burgers
 'Bello, 262
 Ground Lamb Pita Pockets, 152
 Humdinger Hamburgers, 133–34
 Jerk (var.), 134
 Lamb, Blue Cheese (var.), 151
 Lamb, with Berry Sauce, 150–51

Burnt Ends, 108–9

Bush, George, 213

Bush, George W., 213

butchers, 54, 134, 143, 302

Butter
 Old Bay, 226–27
 Orange-Pecan, 258
 Smoked, 352
 unsalted, in recipes, 352

Buttermilk
 Biscuits, 388
 Onion Rings, 380
 Potato Salad, Hot and Spicy (var.), 400
 Potato Salad, Tangy, 400

C

Cabbage
 Asian Vegetable Slaw, 404
 Carolina Sandwich Slaw, 62–63
 Creamy Coleslaw, 369
 Kentucky Burgoo, 372
 Kraut Salad, 403–4
 Lexington Red Slaw, 370
 Memphis Mustard Slaw, 64–65
 Port-Glazed Duck Salad, 288–89

Cabrito, Southwestern, 154–55

Cactus and Corn Salad, San Antonio, 398–99

Caesar Salad, Southern, 393

Cajun Country Ribs, 76

Cajun' Ragin' Rub, 29

Cajun Tasso, 97

Cake
 Black Walnut, 437–38
 Candy Bar Cheesecake, 439

Cake, *cont.*

Peanut Butter, 434
Pineapple, Becky's, 436
Pound, South Georgia, 435
Cakes, Black-Eyed Pea, 265–66
Cakes, Cracklin' Corn (var.), 387
California Crunch, 394
California Dreamin' Fish Tacos, 235–36
Calzone, Wild Mushroom, 308
Camerons Stovetop Smoker, 18, 282
Campbell, Earl, 43
Canadian International Barbecue Championship (New Westminster, British Columbia), 214
Candied Sweet Potatoes, 378
Candy Bar Cheesecake, 439
canning equipment and techniques, 408
Capirotada, Santa Fe, 442–43
Cardini, Caesar, 393
Ca-Rib-bean Roast, 90–91
Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles, 411
Carolina Red, 350
Carolina Sandwich Slaw, 62–63
Carpetbag Steak, 118–19
Carter, Jimmy, 164
Catfish
 Katzen Dawgs, 250
 Peppered, 223
 Spread, Creamy, 328
Ceviche, Scallop and Snapper, 246
Cha-Cha Chorizo, 96
Cham-gria, 459
charcoal fuel, 6, 14–15, 203
charcoal grills, 9–10, 49, 55
charcoal water smokers, 11
Cheese
 Blue, Lamb Burgers (var.), 151
 Blue Corn Muffins, 390
 Boarding House Macaroni Salad, 399
 Candy Bar Cheesecake, 439
 Can't Wait Queso, 315
 Deep-Dish Smoked Mozzarella Pizza, 309–10
 Easy Mexican Pizza, 311

Easy Mexican Pizza with Mushrooms, Bacon, and Chipotle Chiles (var.), 311
Famous Wet Fries (var.), 381
Fancy Chicken with, 176–77
Grits, Garlic, 275
Heavenly Hearts, 331
Lamb Burgers with Berry Sauce, 150–51
Luscious Leg of Lamb, 146–47
Mayme's Macaroni and, 384–85
Mexican Queso Fundido (var.), 315
Mozzarella Toasts, 333
Nachos Blancos, 317
Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
Sauce, 197–98
Smoked Duck Pizza, 306
Smoked Mushroom Quesadillas, 317–18
Smoked Sausage Pizza, 307
-Stuffed Tomatoes, 273
Swiss, Unholy, 316
White Pizza with Vegetable Confetti, 305
Wild Mushroom Calzone, 308
Cheesecake, Candy Bar, 439
Cherry Cumberland Veal Chops, 160–61
cherry wood, 20
Cheryl's Cider Soak, 44
Chicken
 Alabama Smoked, Sandwich, 186–87
 basil-based paste for, 36
 Birds of Paradise, 175–76
 Brunswick Stew, 370–71
 with Cheese, Fancy, 176–77
 Chicken's Little Livers, 335
 Delectable Drumsticks, 185
 Deviled Quick Chick (var.), 180
 Finger Lickin' Fried Smoked, 178–79
 from Hell, 336
 Kentucky Burgoo, 372
 Mustard 'n' Lemon, 173–74
 Oregano, 182
 Prize Pilau, 382
 Quick Chick, 179–80
 Salad Supreme, 287

Salad with Sizzling Salsa Vinaigrette, 286
skin-on, cooking, 172–73
Smoke Stickers, 300–301
Smoked, Salad with Summer Confetti (var.), 188
Smoked, Sandwich with Summer Confetti, 187–88
Soup, Green Chile, 189–90
stovetop smoking, 282
Tarragon (var.), 182
Texas Terrine, 342
on a Throne, 171–73
Thunder Thighs, 183–84
-Thyme Ravioli, Robust, 298–99
trussing, 176
Wild Wings, 333–34
wood flavors for, 20
-Wrapped Apple Sausage, 181–82
Chile(s)
 Baked Jalapeño Poppers (var.), 386
 Chicken from Hell, 336
 chiltepin, about, 113
 chipotle, canned, 108
 dried ground, types of, 32
 Easy Mexican Pizza, 311
 Firewater, 454
 fresh, roasting and peeling, 134
 Glazed Hot Times Jalapeño Turkey Breast (var.), 193
 Green, Chicken Soup, 189–90
 Green, Potatoes, Scalloped, 260
 Hot Times Jalapeño Turkey Breast, 192–93
 Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce, 360–61
 Jalapeño Poppers, 386
 Jalapeño-Lime Marinade, 42
 Jalapeño-Lime Shrimp, 237
 Lightning Mop, 48
 pequins, about, 114
 Quail from Hell (var.), 336
 safe handling of, 157, 365
chili powder, about, 27
Chocolate
 Candy Bar Cheesecake, 439
 Run for the Roses Pie, 423
 S'more Quesadillas, 428
Chorizo, Cha-Cha, 96

- Chowchow, Green Tomato, 413–14
- cilantro, in herb paste, 36
- Cilantro Sauce, 271
- Cinderella Sauce, 357
- Cinderella Short Ribs, 124–25
- Cinnamon-Scented Acorn Squash, 272
- Citrus Sauce, South Florida, 363
- Citrus-Marinated Pork Butt, 56–57
- Clam, Smoked, Dip, 327
- Clams, Cookin', 247
- Clark, Colonel Meriwether Lewis, 452
- Clinton, Bill, 358
- Cobbler, Blackberry (var.), 431
- Cobbler, Texas Peach, 431
- Coconut
- Bread Pudding with Rum (var.), 443
 - Candy Bar Cheesecake, 439
 - Plumb Loco Coco Punch, 458
- cole slaw. *See* Slaw
- cooking temperatures
- checking, with thermometer, 4–6
 - controlling, in grills, 10
 - controlling, in log-burning pits, 57, 174
 - controlling, in water smokers, 10–11
 - high, when to use, 4, 147
 - low, when to use, 4, 218
 - optimum temperature, 4, 6
 - optimum temperature range, 3, 6, 319
 - preheating time required for, 59, 177
 - weather influences on, 5, 11, 278
- Cookshack smoker ovens, 8–9, 49, 68, 250
- Corn
- and Cactus Salad, San Antonio, 398–99
 - Cakes, Cracklin' (var.), 387
 - Cracklin' Cornbread, 387
 - Kentucky Burgoo, 372
 - Maque Choux Peppers, 268–69
 - Mushroom Salad, Southwestern (var.), 282
 - on-the-Cob, Naked (var.), 266
 - on-the-Cob, Smoky, 266
 - Succotash Salad, 403
 - and Watermelon Pickle-lilli, 416
- Cornbread
- Cracklin', 387
 - Stuffed Chops, 86–87
- Cornish Hens
- Dandy Little Hens, 202–3
- Cornmeal
- Blue Corn Muffins, 390
 - Cracklin' Corn Cakes (var.), 387
 - Cracklin' Cornbread, 387
 - Peppery 'Pups, 385
- country ribs, about, 68, 76
- Cowpoke Pintos, 374–75
- Crab in Garlic Cream, 249
- Cracklin' Corn Cakes (var.), 387
- Cracklin' Cornbread, 387
- Cracklin' Cornbread Sandwich (var.), 65
- Cranberry-Ginger Crumble, 433
- Creole Classic Barbecue Sauce, 358
- Creole Crown Roast, 89–90
- Cuban Snapper, 228–29
- Cubano-Mexicana Sandwich (var.), 84
- Cucumber(s)
- Bodacious Bread-and-Butter Pickles, 410
 - Cilantro Sauce, 152
 - Not Deli Dills, 377
 - Sweet and Sour Cukes, 398
- Curried Goat, 156–57
- Curried Turkey Salad, 285
- Curry Pecans, 318–19
- D**
- Daiquiri, Mango (var.), 458
- Daiquiri, Peachy, 458
- Dallas Dandy Brisket, 107–8
- Davis, Abe, 264
- Davis, Rich, 75, 359
- De Rochemont, Richard, 220
- Deep-Dish Smoked Mozzarella Pizza, 309–10
- Deep-Fried Pies (var.), 428
- Deli-Cured Brisket, 110–11
- Delta Jubilee Barbecue Cooking Contest (Clarksdale, MI), 451
- Dennis, Skilton, 37
- Derby Day Mint Julep, 452
- Desserts
- Becky's Pineapple Cake, 436
 - The Best Cure for a Southern Summer, 447
 - Black Walnut Cake, 437–38
 - Blackberry Cobbler (var.), 431
 - Booker's Bourbon Mint Ice Cream, 443–44
 - Brazen Rum-Raisin Sauce, 447
 - Candy Bar Cheesecake, 439
 - Coconut Bread Pudding with Rum (var.), 443
 - Cranberry-Ginger Crumble, 433
 - Deep-Fried Pies (var.), 428
 - Fruit Pizza, 429
 - Ice-Sicles, 446
 - Key Lime Pie, 425
 - Lemon Pudding Ice Cream Pie, 426
 - Long-on-Strawberries Shortcake, 432
 - Mango-Topped Key Lime Pie (var.), 425
 - Mojito Sorbet, 444
 - Moon Pies, buying, 438
 - 'Nana Pudding, 441
 - Pan-Fried Pies, 427–28
 - Peach Melba Ice Cream, 445
 - Peanut Butter Cake, 434
 - Peanutty Pie, 422
 - Prodigal Pecan Pie, 421
 - Rhubarb Crunch, 430
 - Run for the Roses Pie, 423
 - Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
 - S'more Quesadillas, 428
 - South Georgia Pound Cake, 435
 - Sweet Potato Pudding, 440
 - Texas Peach Cobbler, 431
 - Watermelon Ice-Sicles (var.), 446
 - Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble, 424
- Deviled Eggs, Simply Scrumptious (var.), 408

Deviled Quick Chick (var.), 180
 Devilish Pistachios (var.), 320
 Devil-May-Care Eggs, 408
 Dill Mayonnaise, 248
 Dip. *See also* Salsa; Spread
 Bean, Beer, and Bacon, 326
 Better-Than-Store-Bought
 Bacon-Horseradish, 325
 Can't Wait Queso, 315
 Just Plain Delicious Bean (var.),
 326
 Mexican Queso Fundido (var.),
 315
 Smoked Clam, 327
 Three-Onion, 326–27
 Unholy Swiss Cheese, 316
 dishes, smoke-proof, 17, 206,
 337
 Douglas, Tom, 215
 Drinks
 Apricorita, 456
 Berry Lemonade, 461
 Bloody Bud, 451
 Cham-gria, 459
 Cold Buttered Rum, 459
 Derby Day Mint Julep, 452
 Firewater, 454
 Iced Sunshine, 457
 Lynchburg Cooler, 453
 Mango Daiquiri (var.), 458
 Mango-Lime Spritzer, 460
 Maui Mai Tai, 457
 Peachy Daiquiri, 458
 Plumb Loco Coco Punch, 458
 Sangrita Maria, 456
 Sunny Sweet Tea, 460
 Turquoise Margarita, 454
 V.W., 453
 Yankee Shooter, 455
 drip pans, 17
 Drunk and Dirty Tenderloin,
 115–16
 Drunken Sweet Potatoes, 259
 dry rubs. *See* Rub(s)
 Dubuar, Seva, 142
 Duck
 Quacker 'Q,' 198–99
 Quacker 'Q' with Green
 Peppercorn Rub (var.), 199
 sage-based paste for, 36
 Salad, Port-Glazed, 288–89

Smoked, Pizza, 306
 steaming, before smoking, 199
 Tea-Smoked, 200–201
 Tea-Smoked, with Long-Life
 Chinese Noodles (var.), 201
 Dumplings
 dumpling press for making,
 301
 Smoke Stickers, 300–301
 Dupree, Nathalie, 101, 434

E

East L.A. Pork Tacos, 87–88
 Edge, John T., 234, 377
 Egerton, John, 63, 222
 Eggplant
 Down-Home Ratatouille, 267
 Ratatouille Soup (var.), 267
 Eggs
 BBQ Bacon and, 337
 Deviled, Simply Scrumptious
 (var.), 408
 Devil-May-Care, 408
 Elie, Lolis Eric, 167
 Ellis, Donna, 250

F

Fajitas, Bona Fide, 112–13
 Fearing, Dean, 119, 237
 Fiesta Salsa, 324
 Finger Lickin' Fried Smoked
 Chicken, 178–79
 Fire Ant Festival (Montague, TX),
 98
 fire starters, 15–16
 fireplace poker or shovels, 16–17
 Firewater, 454
 Fish. *See also* Salmon; Trout
 Bluefish Mousse, 330
 cooking in log-burning pits,
 220
 cooking times and
 temperatures, 218
 Creamy Catfish Spread, 328
 Cuban Snapper, 228–29
 Flounder Surprise, 224–25
 grilling racks for, 221
 Jamaican Jerked Snapper (var.),
 218
 Katzen Dawgs, 250
 Kohala Tuna Steaks, 231

North Woods Whitefish Salad,
 291
 North Woods Whitefish Salad
 Platter (var.), 291
 Peppered Catfish, 223
 Rockfish with Old Bay Butter,
 226–27
 Scallop and Snapper Ceviche,
 246
 searing, before smoking, 231
 Sherried Grouper, 234
 Smoked Albacore-Potato Salad,
 289–90
 Smoked Snapper Tostadas with
 Sangrita Sauce, 230
 Soused Swordfish, 233
 Tacos, California Dreamin',
 235–36
 Tuna Caper, 232
 wood flavors for, 20
 Five-Spice Medley, Simple
 Chinese, 33
 five-spice powder, about, 33
 Flank Steak-Potato Salad (var.),
 290
 Flounder Surprise, 224–25
 foil, aluminum, 129
 foil pans, 17, 206
 food safety, 121, 142
 Ford, Henry, 203
 Foreman, Charles "Pappy," 277
 Frey, Allen, 282
 Fruit. *See also specific fruits*
 Fruited Pheasant, 204–6
 Pizza, 429
 Salsa, 83–84
 fuels. *See* barbecue fuels and tools

G

Gambrell, Stan, 88
 Gamy Sausage, 165–66
 Garlic
 Bronzed, 323
 Cheese Grits, 275
 Cream, 249
 -flavored oil, homemade, 192
 Primo Paste, 35
 Roasted, Mash, 36
 -Scented Sirloin, 119–20
 Soup, South-of-the-Border, 263
 gas grills, 9–10, 49

gas water smokers, 10–11
 Gates, George, 315
 Gates, Ollie, 315, 347
 Gibson, Big Bob, 186, 362
 gimme caps, 17
 Ginger Beer Marinade (var.), 42
 ginger “coins,” preparing, 216
 Ginger-Glazed Ham, 77–78
 glaze, applying, 68, 125
 gloves, heat-resistant, 16
 Goat, Curried, 156–57
 Gonzales, Gayther and Susie, 80
 Goode, Jim, 106
 Gore, Al, 259
 grates, portable, 17, 221
 Green Chile Chicken Soup, 189–90
 Green Sauce Olé (var.), 354
 Green Tomato Chowchow,
 413–14
 Greens. *See also* Cabbage; Lettuce;
 Spinach
 Collard, Country, 378–79
 PJ’s Spicy Pinwheel Steak,
 122–23
 -Stuffed Mushrooms, 332
 grilling racks, 17, 221
 grills
 charcoal grills, 9–10, 49, 55
 controlling temperature in, 4
 gas grills, 9–10, 49
 popularity of, 323
 using glazes in, 68
 wood chips for, 244
 grill-style ovens, 9
 Grits, Garlic Cheese, 275
 Grouper, Sherried, 234
 Guin, Roger, 143

H

Hale, C. Clark “Smoky,” 48
 Ham
 Black-Eyed Pea, and Macaroni
 Salad, 296
 Ginger-Glazed, 77–78
 leftover, serving, 79
 Loaf, Monday Night, 100
 Maple-Bourbon, 78–79
 Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions,
 254–55
 Prosciutto-Wrapped Shrimp
 (var.), 340

steaks, smoking, 296
 Texas Terrine, 342
 Wayne’s Wonderful \$50 Beans
 (var.), 375
 wood flavors for, 20
 Hamburgers. *See* Burgers
 Harris, Grace, 281
 Hash, Brisket, 137
 Hash, Smoked Salmon (var.),
 222
 Hash, Smoked Trout, 222
 Hasty-Bake ovens, 9
 Hearth, Patio & Barbecue
 Association, 306
 Hens, Dandy Little, 202–3
 Herb Paste, Name-Your-, 36
 Heuberger, Leonard, 53, 288, 380
 hickory wood, 20
 High Plains Jerky, 131
 Hill Country Links, 92–93
 Hog, Going Whole, 61–62
 Hogtoberfest (Roanoke Rapids,
 NC), 98
 Hoisin
 BBQ Sauce, 364
 West Coast Wonder, 355
 Holmes, Raymond, 338
 Hominy and Summer Squash
 Nuggets, 270
 A Honey of a Lobster Tail,
 243–44
 Hot Browns, 197–98
 Hot Dog, The Humble, 132
 Houston Livestock Show and
 Rodeo, 123, 134
 Hubmer, Roger and Dawn, 89
 Huckleberry, Wild, Pie with
 Coconut Crumble, 424
 Hush puppies
 Katzen Dawgs, 250
 Peppery ‘Pups, 385

I

Ice Cream
 Booker’s Bourbon Mint,
 443–44
 Cold Buttered Rum, 459
 Lemon Pudding Pie, 426
 Peach Melba, 445
 Ice-Sicles, 446
 Ice-Sicles, Watermelon (var.), 446

injection liquids, about, 16, 191
 International Barbecue Cookers
 Association, 238, 455
 International Barbecue Cook-off
 (Taylor, TX), 129
 International Bar-B-Q Festival
 (Owensboro, KY), 141, 229,
 422
 Italian Sausage Torpedos, 95

J

Jack Daniel Invitational
 (Lynchburg, TN), 413, 453
 Jalapeño(s)
 Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce,
 360–61
 Lightning Mop, 48
 -Lime Marinade, 42
 -Lime Shrimp, 237
 Poppers, 386
 Poppers, Baked (var.), 386
 Turkey Breast, Hot Times,
 192–93
 Jamaican Barbecue Sauce, 359
 Jamaican Jerk Rub, 33
 Jamaican Jerked Salmon,
 217–18
 Jamaican Jerked Snapper (var.),
 218
 James Beard’s Basic Barbecue
 Marinade, 40
 James Bond’s Basic Barbecue
 Marinade, 41
 Jarvey, Jo, 260
 Java-Chile Butt (var.), 55
 Java-Chile Rub, 31
 Jerk Burger (var.), 134
 Jerk Rub, Jamaican, 33
 Jerked Pork, Boston Bay, 60–61
 Jerked Salmon, Jamaican,
 217–18
 Jerked Snapper, Jamaican (var.),
 218
 Jerky, High Plains, 131
 Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles,
 Carolina, 411
 Jetton, Walter, 177
 Johnson, Greg, 435
 Johnson, Lyndon, 177, 179
 Jones, Pete, 91
 JR Enterprises log pits, 7–8

K

kamado smokers, 9, 173
Kansas City Baked Beans, 373–74
Kansas City Barbeque Society,
158, 299, 340, 430
Kansas City Sloppy Ribs, 67–68
Karlovitz, Patty, 95
Katzen Dawgs, 250
Kentucky Burgoo, 372
Kentucky Derby, 452
Kentucky Pride, 38
Kerrey, Bob, 259
Key Lime Pie, 425
Key Lime Pie, Mango-Topped
(var.), 425
Killed Salad, 394–95
King, Martin Luther, Jr., 73
Kingsford, E.G., 203
Kirk, Paul, 154, 413
kitchen syringe, 16
Knussmann, Betty and Quentin,
224
Kohala Tuna Steaks, 231
Kramer, Matt, 405
Kraut Salad, 403–4

L

Lamb
Almost Owensboro Mutton,
141–42
Burgers, Blue Cheese (var.), 151
Burgers with Berry Sauce,
150–51
Chops à la Greek Town,
149–50
Curried Goat, 156–57
Ground, Pita Pockets, 152
Kentucky Burgoo, 372
Leg of, Luscious, 146–47
Leg of, Martini, 144–45
leg of, smoking, 145
mint-based paste for, 36
Minted Chops, 148
Ribs, Seva's Sassy, 142–43
Sausage, Up and At 'Em,
153–54
Southwestern Cabrito, 154–55
Lasagna, Salmon and Basil,
303–4
Lemon 'n' Mustard Chicken,
173–74

Lemon Pudding Ice Cream Pie,
426
Lemon Splash, 47
lemon zest, drying, 28
Lemonade, Berry, 461
Lemon-Saffron Mayo, 239–40
Lettuce
A Blast of a BLT Salad, 293–94
California Crunch, 394
Killed Salad, 394–95
Southern Caesar Salad, 393
Lexington Red Slaw, 370
Lightning Mop, 48
Lime
-Jalapeño Marinade (var.), 42
Key, Pie, 425
Key, Pie, Mango-Topped (var.),
425
-Mint Barbecue Sauce, 363
Little Devils, 320
Livers, Chicken's Little, 335
Lobster Tail, A Honey of a,
243–44
log-burning pits
advantages of, 6–7
Bandera pits, 8
Bar-B-Que Pits, 8
basting foods in, 49, 68
Black Diamond pits, 8
buying logs for, 131
controlling temperature in, 57,
174
features of, 6–8
JR Enterprises log pits, 7–8
Longhorn pits, 8
New Braunfels Smoker
Company pits, 8
Pitt's & Spitt's pits, 7, 122,
213
prime log pits, 7–8
Smokemaster log pits, 7
smoking fish in, 220
Texas Pit Masters log pits, 8
using sauce or glaze in, 68
value pits, 8
loin ribs, about, 68
Lone Star Spareribs, 65–66
Longhorn pits, 8
Looney, James T., 372
Lopez, Ray, 125
Lynchburg Cooler, 453

M

Maguire, Mike, 361
Mai Tai, Maui, 457
Mango(s)
and Avocado Salad, 406
Daiquiri (var.), 458
-Habanero Hellfire, 365
-Lime Spritzer, 460
Sauce, 90–91
-Topped Key Lime Pie (var.), 425
Maple Sweet Sensation (var.), 30
maple wood, 20
Maple-Bourbon Ham, 78–79
Maque Choux Peppers, 268–69
Margarita, Turquoise, 454
Marinade(s)
acid ingredients in, 39, 44
bourbon used in, 233
Cheryl's Cider Soak, 44
commercial, buying, 236
Ginger Beer (var.), 42
Jalapeño-Lime, 42
James Beard's Basic Barbecue,
40
James Bond's Basic Barbecue, 41
Lime-Jalapeño (var.), 42
Mojo, 44
oils in, 39
Red Wine, 41
Red-Eye, 43
Spiked Mojo (var.), 44
Stout Beer, 42
using as mop or sauce, 39, 44,
142
wines for, 41
working with, 39, 43
Martini Leg of Lamb, 144–45
Massachusetts State BBQ & Blues
Festival (Hanover, MA), 240
Maui Mai Tai, 457
Mayme's Macaroni and Cheese,
384–85
Mayo, Lemon-Saffron, 239–40
Mayonnaise, Dill, 248
McLaughlin, Michael, 138
McMahan, Jacqueline Higuera,
113
Meat Loaf
Ain't Momma's, 135–36
cooking tips for, 136
Texas Terrine, 342

Melon. *See also* Watermelon
 Chicken Salad Supreme, 287
 Memphis in May cook-off, 61, 183, 225, 255, 259
 Memphis Magic, 353
 Memphis Mustard Pork Sandwich, 64–65
 mesquite wood, 20, 286
 metal chimneys, 15–16
 Mexican Queso Fundido (var.), 315
 Meyer, Danny, 67
 Miller, Mark, 454
 Mint
 Berry Sauce, 150–51
 Bourbon Ice Cream, Booker's, 443–44
 in herb paste, 36
 Julep, Derby Day, 452
 Minted Chops, 148
 Mojito Sorbet, 444
 Trout, 221
 Miss White's Delights, 62–63
 Mojito Sorbet, 444
 Mojo Marinade, 44
 Monday Night Ham Loaf, 100
 Monk, "Honey," 153
 Moonlite and Moonshine, 356
 Mops
 Asian Lightning Mop (var.), 48
 Basic Beer Mop, 46
 cook-off contests for, 364
 extending, with extra liquid, 84
 ingredients in, 45, 90
 Lemon Splash, 47
 Lightning Mop, 48
 mopping brushes for, 16, 45
 Pop Mop, 48
 Southern Sop, 46
 Tarragon Vinegar Splash (var.), 47
 using marinades as, 39, 44, 142
 working with, 45, 49
 Morgan, Jinx and Jefferson, 144
 Morris, Roger, 422
 Mousse, Bluefish, 330
 Mozzarella Toasts, 333
 Mr. Brown, The Renowned, 53–54
 muffin tins, cleaning, 337

Muffins, Blue Corn, 390
 Mushroom(s)
 Bacon, and Chipotle Chiles, Easy Mexican Pizza with (var.), 311
 'Bello Burger, 262
 -Corn Salad, Southwestern (var.), 282
 Greens-Stuffed, 332
 Salad, Warm, 282
 Simple 'Shrooms, 261–62
 Smoked, Quesadillas, 317–18
 -Stuffed Quail, 203–4
 Mussels, Smoked, with Dill Mayonnaise, 248
 Mustard Barbecue Sauce, Golden, 350
 Mustard 'n' Lemon Chicken, 173–74
 Mutton, Almost Owensboro, 141–42

N

Nachos Blancos, 317
 'Nana Nut Salad, 407
 'Nana Pudding, 441
 National Barbecue Association, 428
 National Championship Barbecue Cook-Off (Meridian, TX), 283, 328
 Neely, Jim, 320
 New Braunfels Smoker Company pits, 8
 New England Barbecue Society, 240
 Noe, Booker, 443, 444
 Noodles, Long-Life Chinese, Tea-Smoked Duck with (var.), 201
 Noom, Pete, 316
 North Woods Whitefish Salad, 291
 North Woods Whitefish Salad Platter (var.), 291
 Nuts. *See also* Pecan(s)
 Black Walnut Cake, 437–38
 Devilish Pistachios (var.), 320
 Little Devils, 320
 'Nana Nut Salad, 407
 Peanutty Pic, 422

Run for the Roses Pie, 423
 Smoked Rosemary Walnuts, 319
 Smokin' Waldorf, 276–77

O

oak wood, 20, 123
 Obermark, Obie, 180, 455
 O'Daniel, W. Lee "Pappy," 111
 oil, garlic-flavored, 192
 oil-based pastes, about, 35
 Oklahoma Joe's Interplanetary B-B-Q Cook-Off (Perry, OK), 287
 Okra
 Flash-Fried, 376
 Kentucky Burgoo, 372
 Pickles, 409
 Old Bay Butter, 226–27
 Old Bay Seasoning, about, 227
 Olives, Smoked, 321
 O'Neill, Molly, 423
 Onion(s)
 Pop-Top Vidalias (var.), 253
 Rings, Buttermilk, 380
 Rings, Smoked, 257
 smoked, in recipes, 329
 Smoked, Sauce, 360
 Soup, Better-Than-French, 256
 Stuffed, Peabody-Style, 254–55
 Three-, Dip, 326–27
 Vidalias 'n' Georgia BBQ Sauce, 253
 Orange-Pecan Butter, 258
 Oregano, Chicken, 182
 ovens, grill-style, 9
 ovens, smoker, 8–9, 49
 Oysters
 Brined Bluepoints, 242–43
 Eye-Popping, 241

P

Pan-Asian Pandemonium, 37
 Pan-Asian Short Ribs, 126
 Pan-Fried Pies, 427–28
 pans, drip, 17
 pans, foil, 17, 206
 parsley, in herb paste, 36
 Pasta
 Barbecue Spaghetti, 102
 Black-Eyed Pea and Ham Macaroni Salad, 296

Pasta, *cont.*

Boarding House Macaroni Salad, 399
Faux Bolognese Spaghetti (var.), 297
Mayme's Macaroni and Cheese, 384–85
Priest Stranglers with Sausage, Sage, Tomatoes, and Cream (var.), 302
Priest Stranglers with Sausage and Sage, 301–2
Robust Chicken-Thyme Ravioli, 298–99
Salmon and Basil Lasagna, 303–4
Smoky Summer Spaghetti, 297
Smoldering Vegetable (var.), 284
Tea-Smoked Duck with Long-Life Chinese Noodles (var.), 201

Paste(s)

Kentucky Pride, 38
Name-Your-Herb, 36
oil-based, about, 35
Pan-Asian Pandemonium, 37
Primo, 35
Roasted Garlic Mash, 36
storing, 34
Texas Pride (var.), 38
Thunder, 38
working with, 34
Yucatecan Seasoning, 37
Payne, Emily and Flora, 310
Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions, 254–55

Peach(es)

Bourbon, 417
Cobbler, Texas, 431
Deep-Fried Pies (var.), 428
Jalapeach Barbecue Sauce, 360–61
Keen, 276
Melba Ice Cream, 445
Pan-Fried Pies, 427–28
Peachy Daiquiri, 458
Peanut Butter Cake, 434

Peanuts

Little Devils, 320
'Nana Nut Salad, 407
Peanutty Pie, 422

peas. *See* Black-Eyed Pea(s)

pecan wood, 20, 286

Pecan(s)

Coconut Bread Pudding with Rum (var.), 443
Curry Pecans, 318–19
Pie, Prodigal, 421
Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
Sweet Potato Pudding, 440
Wildly Stuffed Turkey Breast, 194–95

pellets, wood, 14

Peppered Catfish, 223

Pepper(s). *See also* Chile(s)

Maque Choux, 268–69
Salad, Calico, 281
Smoky Summer Spaghetti, 297
Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter, 283–84
White Pizza with Vegetable Confetti, 305

Perry, Henry, 174

Perry, Sara, 340

Pheasant, Fruited, 204–6

Phillips, Foster and Woody, 284

Pickle-lilli, Corn and Watermelon, 416

Pickles

Bodacious Bread-and-Butter, 410
Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke, 411
Not Deli Dills, 377
Okra, 409
Wonderful Watermelon, 412–13

Pico de Gallo, 112–13

Pie(s)

Deep-Fried (var.), 428
Key Lime, 425
Key Lime, Mango-Topped (var.), 425
Lemon Pudding Ice Cream, 426
Pan-Fried, 427–28
Peanutty, 422
Pecan, Prodigal, 421
Run for the Roses, 423
Wild Huckleberry, with Coconut Crumble, 424

Pilau, Prize, 382

Pineapple

Cake, Becky's, 436
Relish, Perky, 277–78
Thai-phoon Dipping Sauce, 74–75
Pistachios, Devilish (var.), 320
pits, brick, 12
pits, log-burning. *See* log-burning pits
Pitt's & Spitt's mitts, 16
Pitt's & Spitt's pits, 7, 122, 213
Pizza
Crust, Just About Perfect, 304
Deep-Dish Smoked Mozzarella, 309–10
Easy Mexican, 311
Easy Mexican, with Mushrooms, Bacon, and Chipotle Chiles (var.), 311
Fruit, 429
parties, hosting, 308–9
Smoked Duck, 306
Smoked Sausage, 307
White, with Vegetable Confetti, 305
Wild Mushroom Calzone, 308
Plum Good Slopping Sauce, 364
Plumb Loco Coco Punch, 458
pokers, fireplace, 16–17
Pop Chops (var.), 85
Pop Mop, 48
popsicles, homemade, 446
Pop-Top Vidalias (var.), 253
Pork. *See also* Bacon; Ham; *specific pork cuts below*
Ain't Momma's Meat Loaf, 135–36
Ca-Rib-bean Roast, 90–91
cooking on charcoal grills, 55
Creole Crown Roast, 89–90
Faux Bolognese Spaghetti (var.), 297
Gamy Sausage, 165–66
Going Whole Hog, 61–62
Hot Tamales, 383–84
internal cooking temperature for, 3, 88, 106
Rub, Southern Succor, 27
sage-based paste for, 36
Tenderloin, Sweet and Fruity, 81–82

- Tenderloin, Weeknight, 80
 - Tenderloin, Yucatecan (var.), 80
 - Triple Play Tube Steak, 99
 - whole shoulder, buying, 54
 - Pork Butt
 - average size of, 54
 - Barbecue Spaghetti, 102
 - Cajun Tasso, 97
 - Cha-Cha Chorizo, 96
 - Citrus-Marinaded, 56–57
 - Hill Country Links, 92–93
 - internal cooking temperature for, 106
 - Java-Chile Butt (var.), 55
 - Miss White's Delights, 62–63
 - Red-Eye Butt, 54–55
 - The Renowned Mr. Brown, 53–54
 - Sandwich, Memphis Mustard, 64–65
 - shredding, 63
 - Supper Spread, 101
 - Texas Terrine, 342
 - wood flavors for, 20
 - Pork Chops
 - East L.A. Pork Tacos, 87–88
 - Pop Chops (var.), 85
 - Purely, 84–85
 - Stuffed, 86–87
 - Pork Loin
 - Brunswick Stew, 370–71
 - Cubano-Mexicana Sandwich (var.), 84
 - Mexicana, 83–84
 - Pork Picnic
 - average size of, 54
 - Barbecue Spaghetti, 102
 - Boston Bay Jerked, 60–61
 - internal cooking temperature for, 106
 - Miss White's Delights, 62–63
 - Perfect, 58–59
 - Sandwich, Memphis Mustard, 64–65
 - Supper Spread, 101
 - Texas Terrine, 342
 - wood flavors for, 20
 - Pork Sausage(s)
 - buying, 93, 94, 302
 - casings for, 92, 93
 - Cha-Cha Chorizo, 96
 - Easy Mexican Pizza, 311
 - Gamy, 165–66
 - Hill Country Links, 92–93
 - Italian, Torpedos, 95
 - PJ's Spicy Pinwheel Steak, 122–23
 - Pork Loin Mexicana, 83–84
 - Sage, Tomatoes, and Cream, Priest Stranglers with (var.), 302
 - and Sage, Priest Stranglers with, 301–2
 - Smoked, Pizza, 307
 - store-bought, barbecuing, 94
 - Store-Bought Hot Brats, 93–94
 - and Wild Rice Butternut Squash, 272–73
 - Pork Spareribs
 - Apple City Baby Back Ribs, 72–73
 - best sizes of, 70
 - Bourbon-Glazed Ribs, 69–70
 - Cajun Country Ribs, 76
 - cooking times for, 66
 - cuts of, 68, 76
 - internal cooking temperature for, 106
 - Kansas City Sloppy Ribs, 67–68
 - Lone Star Spareribs, 65–66
 - Southern Rib Sandwich, 71
 - stripping membrane from, 74
 - Thai-phoon Baby Backs, 74–75
 - West Coast Baby Backs, 73–74
 - "wet" compared with "dry" style, 65, 66
 - wood flavors for, 20
 - Port-Glazed Duck Salad, 288–89
 - Potato(es)
 - Brisket Hash, 137
 - Brunswick Stew, 370–71
 - Chips, Bar-B-Q-ed, 321
 - Famous French Fries, 381
 - Famous Wet Fries (var.), 381
 - Flank Steak Salad (var.), 290
 - Kentucky Burgoo, 372
 - Salad, Hot and Spicy Buttermilk (var.), 400
 - Salad, Hot German, 401
 - Salad, Tangy Buttermilk, 400
 - Scalloped Green Chile, 260
 - Smashed, Bake, 379
 - Smoked Albacore Salad, 289–90
 - Smoked Salmon Hash (var.), 222
 - Smoked Spud Skins, 261
 - Smoked Trout Hash, 222
 - Unholy Swiss Cheese, 316
 - Poultry. *See also* Chicken; Duck; Turkey
 - Dandy Little Hens, 202–3
 - Fruited Pheasant, 204–6
 - Mushroom-Stuffed Quail, 203–4
 - Perfect Rub, 28
 - Quail from Hell (var.), 336
 - Rosy Rosemary Quail, 206–7
 - skin-on, cooking, 172–73
 - wood flavors for, 20
 - Pound Cake, South Georgia, 435
 - Powers, Remus, 364
 - Priest Stranglers with Sausage, Sage, Tomatoes, and Cream (var.), 302
 - Priest Stranglers with Sausage and Sage, 301–2
 - prime log pits, 7–8
 - Prosciutto-Wrapped Shrimp (var.), 340
 - Prudhomme, Paul, 25, 454
 - Pudding
 - Coconut Bread, with Rum (var.), 443
 - 'Nana, 441
 - Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
 - Sweet Potato, 440
 - Pyles, Stephan, 108
- Q**
- Quacker 'Q' 198–99
 - Quacker 'Q' with Green Peppercorn Rub (var.), 199
 - Quail
 - butterflying, 207
 - from Hell (var.), 336
 - Mushroom-Stuffed, 203–4
 - Rosy Rosemary, 206–7
 - Quesadillas, Smoked Mushroom, 317–18
 - Quesadillas, S'more, 428
 - Quessenberry, Jim, 27, 61
 - Quick Chick, 179–80

R

Rabbit, Ragin', 167–68
Raisin(s)
 Black Walnut Cake, 437–38
 -Rum Sauce, Brazen, 447
 Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
 Smokin' Waldorf, 276–77
Randolph, Bruce, 443
Raspberries
 Berry Lemonade, 461
 Peach Melba Ice Cream, 445
Ratatouille, Down-Home, 267
Ratatouille Soup (var.), 267
Ravioli, Robust Chicken-Thyme, 298–99
Reagan, Ronald, 153
Red Wine Marinade, 41
Red-Eye Butt, 54–55
Red-Eye Marinade, 43
Relish. *See also* Pickles
 Corn and Watermelon Pickle-lilli, 416
 Green Tomato Chowchow, 413–14
 origins of, 416
 Perky Pineapple, 277–78
 Squash, 415
 types of, 416
 Vegetable, 235–36
Rémoulade Sauce, 238–39
The Renowned Mr. Brown, 53–54
Rhubarb Crunch, 430
ribs, beef. *See under* Beef
ribs, pork. *See* Pork Spareribs
Rice
 Barbecued, 274
 Fruited Pheasant, 204–6
 Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions, 254–55
 Prize Pilau, 382
 Salad, Arty, 405
 Wild, and Sausage Butternut Squash, 272–73
 Wildly Stuffed Turkey Breast, 194–95
Rieke, Anthony, 381
Robinson, Big John, 184
Rockfish with Old Bay Butter, 226–27
Root, Waverly, 220
Rosemary Quail, Rosy, 206–7

Rosemary Walnuts, Smoked, 319

Rub(s)

 Basic Black, 31
 Cajun' Ragin', 29
 chiles for, 32
 commercial, buying, 26, 80–81, 150
 cook-off contests for, 364
 Jamaican Jerk, 33
 Java-Chile, 31
 leftover, storing, 30
 Maple Sweet Sensation (var.), 30
 Poultry Perfect, 28
 Seafaring Seafood, 28
 Simple Chinese Five-Spice Medley, 33
 Smoky Salt, 30
 Southern Succor Pork, 27
 South-of-the-Border Heat (var.), 32
 Southwest Heat, 32
 Sweet Sensation, 30
 turbinado sugar for, 27
 Wild Willy's Number One-derful, 26
 working with, 25–26

Rum

 Ca-Rib-bean Roast, 90–91
 Cold Buttered, 459
 Lynchburg Cooler, 453
 Mango Daiquiri (var.), 458
 Maui Mai Tai, 457
 Mojito Sorbet, 444
 Peachy Daiquiri, 458
 Plumb Loco Coco Punch, 458
 -Raisin Sauce, Brazen, 447
 Spiked Mojo Marinade (var.), 44

S

sage, in herb paste, 36
Sake-Cured Hot-Smoked Salmon, Tom Douglas's, 215–16
Salad, main-dish
 Black-Eyed Pea and Ham Macaroni, 296
 A Blast of a BET, 293–94
 Chicken, Supreme, 287
 Chicken, with Sizzling Salsa Vinaigrette, 286

Chunky Trout, 292
Curried Turkey, 285
Flank Steak-Potato (var.), 290
North Woods Whitefish, 291
Port-Glazed Duck, 288–89
Salpicón, 138
Smoked Albacore-Potato, 289–90
Smoked Chicken, with Summer Confetti (var.), 188
Spicy Asian Flank Steak, 294–95
Salad, side-dish
 Asian Vegetable Slaw, 404
 Burstin' with Black-Eyed Peas, 396–97
 Cactus and Corn, San Antonio, 398–99
 Calico Pepper, 281
 California Crunch, 394
 Carolina Sandwich Slaw, 62–63
 Creamy Coleslaw, 369
 Hand, 397
 Killed, 394–95
 Kraut, 403–4
 Lexington Red Slaw, 370
 Macaroni, Boarding House, 399
 Mango and Avocado, 406
 Memphis Mustard Slaw, 64–65
 Mushroom, Warm, 282
 Mushroom-Corn, Southwestern (var.), 282
 'Nana Nut, 407
 Potato, Hot and Spicy Buttermilk (var.), 400
 Potato, Hot German, 401
 Potato, Tangy Buttermilk, 400
 Rice, Arty, 405
 Smokin' Waldorf, 276–77
 Southern Caesar, 393
 Succotash, 403
 Sweet and Sour Cukes, 398
 Sweet Potato, Sweet Sally's, 402
Salmon
 and Basil Lasagna, 303–4
 cilantro-based paste for, 36
 cold-smoked, about, 213
 Flounder Surprise, 224–25
 hot-smoked, about, 213
 Jamaican Jerked, 217–18

- Kingly, 211–12
 Sake-Cured Hot-Smoked, Tom Douglas's, 215–16
 Simply Superb, 212–13
 Smoked, Hash (var.), 222
 Sugar-and-Spice Brined, 214–15
 wood flavors for, 20, 212
 Salpicón, 138
 Salsa
 Fiesta, 324
 Fruit, 83–84
 Pico de Gallo, 112–13
 smoked, tips for making, 324
 Tomatillo, 235–36
 Verde, 283–84
 salt, for barbecued foods, 145
 Salt, Smoky, 30
 San Antonio Cactus and Corn Salad, 398–99
 Sandwiches. *See also* Burgers
 Alabama Smoked Chicken, 186–87
 BBQ Bacon and Eggs, 337
 bread for, 65
 with citrus-marinated pork, 56
 Cracklin' Cornbread (var.), 65
 Cubano-Mexicana (var.), 84
 Hot Browns, 197–98
 Italian Sausage Torpedos, 95
 with leftover ham, 79
 Memphis Mustard Pork, 64–65
 Miss White's Delights, 62–63
 Smoked Chicken, with Summer Confetti, 187–88
 Southern Rib, 71
 Sangrita Maria, 456
 Sangrita Sauce, 230
 Santa Fe Capirotada, 442–43
 Santa Fe School of Cooking, 442
 Sauce. *See also* Barbecue Sauce
 applying to food, 68
 Avocado, 228–29
 Berry, 150–51
 Cheese, 197–98
 Cilantro, 271
 Cucumber-Cilantro, 152
 Cumberland, 161
 Dill Mayonnaise, 248
 Fiesta Salsa, 324
 Fruit Salsa, 83–84
 Garlic Cream, 249
 Lemon-Saffron Mayo, 239–40
 Mango, 90–91
 Minted, 148
 Old Bay Butter, 226–27
 Orange-Pecan Butter, 258
 Pico de Gallo, 112–13
 Pizza, 309–10
 Port, 288–89
 Rémoulade, 238–39
 Rum-Raisin, Brazen, 447
 Salsa Verde, 283–84
 Sangrita, 230
 Sherry, 234
 Smoke Sticker, 300–301
 Sopped, 163–64
 Spiked Mojo Marinade (var.), 44
 Tamarind, 117
 Thai-phoon Dipping, 74–75
 Tomatillo Salsa, 235–36
 used as a glaze, 125
 using marinades as, 142
 Wild Wings, 333–34
 Sausage(s). *See also* Pork Sausage(s)
 buying, 94, 181, 302
 Chicken-Wrapped Apple, 181–82
 Crab in Garlic Cream, 249
 Gamy, 165–66
 Lamb, Up and At 'Em, 153–54
 Scalloped Green Chile Potatoes, 260
 Scallop(s)
 Jungle Prince, 245
 and Shrimp Platter, Smoked, 239–40
 and Snapper Ceviche, 246
 on a Stick, 341
 Schlesinger, Chris, 416, 417
 Sconyer, Larry, 164
 Seafood. *See also* Fish; Shellfish
 Rub, Seafaring, 28
 Seale, Bobby, 178, 179
 Shellfish. *See also* Shrimp
 Brined Bluepoints, 242–43
 Cookin' Clams, 247
 Crab in Garlic Cream, 249
 Eye-Popping Oysters, 241
 A Honey of a Lobster Tail, 243–44
 Jungle Prince Scallops, 245
 Scallop and Snapper Ceviche, 246
 Scallops on a Stick, 341
 Smoked Clam Dip, 327
 Smoked Mussels with Dill Mayonnaise, 248
 Smoked Shrimp and Scallop Platter, Smoked, 239–40
 Sheppard, Roger, 405
 Sherried Grouper, 234
 short ribs. *See under* Beef
 Shortcake, Long-on-Strawberries, 432
 shovels, fireplace, 16–17
 Shrimp
 cilantro-based paste for, 36
 cooking, in stovetop smokers, 237
 007, 339
 Jalapeño-Lime, 237
 Prosciutto-Wrapped (var.), 340
 Rémoulade, 238–39
 Rémoulade, Zydeco (var.), 239
 Smoked, and Scallop Platter, 239–40
 Succulent Bacon-Wrapped, 340
 Side dishes. *See also* Breads; Salad, side-dish
 Arkansas Tamale Spread (var.), 384
 Baked Jalapeño Poppers (var.), 386
 Bodacious Bread-and-Butter Pickles, 410
 Brunswick Stew, 370–71
 Buttermilk Onion Rings, 380
 Candied Sweet Potatoes, 378
 Carolina Jerusalem Artichoke Pickles, 411
 Corn and Watermelon Pickle-lilli, 416
 Country Collard Greens, 378–79
 Cowpoke Pintos, 374–75
 Cracklin' Corn Cakes (var.), 387
 Famous French Fries, 381
 Famous Wet Fries (var.), 381
 Flash-Fried Okra, 376
 Green Tomato Chowchow, 413–14

Side dishes, *cont.*

Hot Tamales, 383–84
Jalapeño Poppers, 386
Kansas City Baked Beans, 373–74
Kentucky Burgoo, 372
Mayme's Macaroni and Cheese, 384–85
Not Deli Dills, 377
Okra Pickles, 409
Perky Pineapple Relish, 277–78
Prize Pilau, 382
Smashed Potato Bake, 379
Squash Relish, 415
Vegetable Relish, 235–36
Wayne's Wonderful \$50 Beans (var.), 375
Wonderful Watermelon Pickles, 412–13
Sikes, Toni, 390
simple syrup, preparing, 457
skewers, 17, 340
Slaw
Asian Vegetable, 404
Carolina Sandwich, 62–63
Creamy Coleslaw, 369
Lexington Red, 370
Memphis Mustard, 64–65
Smashed Potato Bake, 379
smoke curing, 4
smoke flavor
from burning fat, avoiding, 4
checking amount of, 225
from stovetop smokers, 286
from wood chips and chunks, 13–14, 20, 123, 212, 286
Smoke Stickers, 300–301
Smokemaster log pits, 7
smoke-proof dishes, 17, 206, 337
smokers. *See also* log-burning pits
barrel smokers, 11–12
Big Green Egg smokers, 9, 173
Bradley Smoker ovens, 9
Camerons Stovetop Smoker, 18, 282
cleaning, 17, 269, 270
Cookshack smoker ovens, 8–9, 49, 68, 250
drip pans for, 17
Hasty-Bake ovens, 9
homemade, 11–12

kamado smokers, 9, 173
metal poker or shovels for, 16–17
smoke ring from, 109
smoke-proof dishes and pans for, 17, 206
smoker ovens, 8–9, 49, 68, 173, 250
soaking bamboo skewers for, 340
stovetop smokers, 18–19, 237, 282, 286
thermometers for, 4–6
Traeger Industries ovens, 9
using glaze or sauce in, 68
warm-up times for, 59, 177
water reservoirs in, 8, 184, 270
water smokers, 10–11, 49, 68, 177, 184
Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter, 283–84
Smoldering Vegetable Pasta (var.), 284
S'more Quesadillas, 428
Snapper
Cuban, 228–29
Jamaican Jerked (var.), 218
and Scallop Ceviche, 246
Smoked, Tostadas with Sangrita Sauce, 230
Sokolov, Raymond, 371
Sorbet, Mojito, 444
Soup
Better-Than-French Onion, 256
Garlic, South-of-the-Border, 263
Green Chile Chicken, 189–90
Ratatouille (var.), 267
Soused Swordfish, 233
South Florida Citrus Sauce, 363
South Georgia Pound Cake, 435
Southern Caesar Salad, 393
Southern Rib Sandwich, 71
Southern Sop, 46
Southern Succor Pork Rub, 27
South-of-the-Border Garlic Soup, 263
South-of-the-Border Heat (var.), 32
Southwest Heat, 32
Southwest Stew on a Stick, 129–30

Southwestern Cabrito, 154–55
Southwestern Great White (var.), 362
Southwestern Mushroom-Corn Salad (var.), 282
Soy-Glazed Flank Steak, 121
spareribs, pork. *See* Pork Spareribs
Spears, Hayward, 109
spices, bruising, 215
spices, buying, 29, 33
spices, in rubs, 25
Spicy Asian Flank Steak Salad, 294–95
Spiked Mojo Marinade (var.), 44
Spinach
Luscious Leg of Lamb, 146–47
Peabody-Style Stuffed Onions, 254–55
Spread
Bluefish Mousse, 330
Bronzed Garlic, 323
Creamy Catfish, 328
Drop-Dead Trout, 329
Heavenly Hearts, 331
Supper, 101
Texas Terrine, 342
Sprengelmeyer, John, 75
Squash
Acorn, Cinnamon-Scented, 272
Butternut, Sausage and Wild Rice, 272–73
Relish, 415
Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter, 283–84
Summer, and Hominy Nuggets, 270
Zooks and Cilantro Sauce, 271
St. Laurent, Jonathan, 268
Stage, John, 85
Standing on the Square cook-off (Laurens, SC), 98
Standing Tall Prime Rib, 127
Staten, Vince, 435
Stein, Shifra, 359
Stern, Jane and Michael, 265, 318
Stew
Brunswick, 370–71
Kentucky Burgoo, 372
Stewart, Frank, 167
Stobel, J.C., 396

stock, homemade, 256–57
 Stout Beer Marinade, 42
 stovetop smokers, 18–19, 237, 282, 286
 Strawberries
 Ice-Sicles, 446
 Long-on-, Shortcake, 432
 Struttin' Sauce, 347
 Stubblefield, "Stubbs," 260
 Stuffed Chops, 86–87
 Stuffed Mountain Trout, 219–20
 Stuffed Veal Roast, 158–59
 stuffing, extra, cooking, 195
 Succotash Salad, 403
 Sugar-and-Spice Brined Salmon, 214–15
 Sunny Sweet Tea, 460
 Supper Spread, 101
 Sweatman, Bob, 331
 Sweet and Fruity Pork Tenderloin, 81–82
 Sweet and Sour Cukes, 398
 Sweet Potato(es)
 Biscuits, 389
 Candied, 378
 Drunken, 259
 with Orange-Pecan Butter, 258
 Pudding, 440
 Salad, Sweet Sally's, 402
 Sweet Sally's Sweet Potato Salad, 402
 Sweet Sensation, 30
 Swine Days cook-off (Natchez, MI), 98
 Swordfish, Soused, 233
 syringes, 16

T

Tacos, California Dreamin' Fish, 235–36
 Tacos, East L.A. Pork, 87–88
 Tamale Spread, Arkansas (var.), 384
 Tamales, Hot, 383–84
 Tamarind Tenderloin, 117
 Tarragon, Chicken (var.), 182
 Tarragon Vinegar Splash (var.), 47
 Tartan, Beth, 437
 Tasso, Cajun, 97
 Tea, Sunny Sweet, 460

Tea-Smoked Duck, 200–201
 Tea-Smoked Duck with Long-Life Chinese Noodles (var.), 201
 Tequila
 Apricorita, 456
 Dandy Little Hens, 202–3
 Drunken Sweet Potatoes, 259
 East L.A. Pork Tacos, 87–88
 Iced Sunshine, 457
 Sangrita Maria, 456
 Texas Pride (var.), 38
 Turquoise Margarita, 454
 Yankee Shooter, 455
 Texas Peach Cobbler, 431
 Texas Pit Masters log pits, 8
 Texas Pride (var.), 38
 Texas Terrine, 342
 Thai-phoon Baby Backs, 74–75
 Thai-phoon Dipping Sauce, 74–75
 thermometers, 5, 16
 Thomas, Mary, 421
 Thorne, John, 104, 346, 421
 Thunder Paste, 38
 Thunder Thighs, 183–84
 Tomatillo(s)
 Green Sauce Olé (var.), 354
 Salsa, 235–36
 Tomato juice
 Bloody Bud, 451
 Sangrita Maria, 456
 Sangrita Sauce, 230
 Tomato(es)
 -based sauces, applying to foods, 125
 A Blast of a BLT Salad, 293–94
 Cheese-Stuffed, 273
 Deep-Dish Smoked Mozzarella Pizza, 309–10
 Fiesta Salsa, 324
 Green, Chowchow, 413–14
 Pico de Gallo, 112–13
 Sauce Olé, 354
 Sausage, Sage, and Cream, Priest Stranglers with (var.), 302
 Smoky Summer Spaghetti, 297
 Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter, 283–84
 tools. *See* barbecue fuels and tools
 Tostadas, Smoked Snapper, with Sangrita Sauce, 230

Tour de Pig festival (Lexington, NC), 275
 Traeger Industries ovens, 9
 Trillin, Calvin, 176, 253
 Trout
 Elemental, 218–19
 Mint, 221
 mint-based paste for, 36
 Mountain, Stuffed, 219–20
 Salad, Chunky, 292
 Smoked, Hash, 222
 Smoked, on Apple Slices, 338
 smoking, in log-burning pit, 220
 Spread, Drop-Dead, 329
 Tuna
 basil-based paste for, 36
 Caper, 232
 Smoked Albacore-Potato Salad, 289–90
 Steaks, Kohala, 231
 turbinado sugar, about, 27
 Turkey
 Breast, Glazed Hot Times Jalapeño (var.), 193
 Breast, Hot Times Jalapeño, 192–93
 Breast, Wildly Stuffed, 194–95
 Hot Browns, 197–98
 Legs, Two-Steppin', 196–97
 Salad, Curried, 285
 smoked, buying, 198
 Texas Terrine, 342
 wood flavors for, 20
 Worth-the-Wait, 190–91
 Turquoise Margarita, 454
 Two-Steppin' Turkey Legs, 196–97

U

Unholy Swiss Cheese, 316
 Up and At 'Em Lamb Sausage, 153–54

V

value pits, 8
 Vandergrift, Jerry, 399
 Vaunted Vinegar Sauce, 349
 Veal
 Chops, Cherry Cumberland, 160–61

Veal, *cont.*

Kentucky Burgoon, 372

Roast, Stuffed, 158–59

Top Chops, 159–60

Vegetable(s). *See also specific vegetables*

Antipasto Platter, Smoldering, 283–84

Asian, Slaw, 404

barbecuing, 254, 267, 284

Green Tomato Chowchow, 413–14

Hand Salad, 397

Pasta, Smoldering (var.), 284

Relish, 235–36

wood flavors for, 20

Venison

barbecuing, 163, 164

buying, 166

Gamy Sausage, 165–66

Pot Roast, Down-on-the-Ranch, 162–63

Scallops, Wine-Sopped, 163–64

Vernon, Frank, 310

vertical smokers, 10–11, 49, 68, 177, 184

Vidalias 'n' Georgia BBQ Sauce, 253

Villas, James, 196

Vinegar Sauce, Vaunted, 349

Vodka

Firewater, 454

James Bond's Basic Barbecue Marinade, 41

Moonlite and Moonshine, 356

Sugar-and-Spice Brined

Salmon, 214–15

V.W., 453

V.W., 453

W

Waldorf, Smokin', 276–77

Walnut(s)

Black, Cake, 437–38

Run for the Roses Pie, 423

Smoked Rosemary, 319

Smokin' Waldorf, 276–77

Walsh, Robb, 188

Ward, Jim, 227

water reservoirs, 8, 184, 270

water smokers, 10–11, 49, 177, 184

Watermelon

The Best Cure for a Southern Summer, 447

and Corn Pickle-lilli, 416

Ice-Sicles (var.), 446

Morsels, Mouthwatering, 322

Pickles, Wonderful, 412–13

V.W., 453

Watermelon Thump festival (Luling, TX), 206

Wayne's Wonderful \$50 Beans (var.), 375

W.C. Handy Blues and Barbecue Festival (Henderson, KY), 334

weather conditions, 5, 11, 278

Weeknight Pork Tenderloin, 80

Weil, Bumble Bee Bob, 236

Wells, Gary, 299

West Coast Baby Backs, 73–74

West Coast Wonder, 355

When Pigs Fly cook-off (McPherson, KS), 98

Whiskey

Drunk and Dirty Tenderloin, 115–16

Jack Daniel, about, 453

Lynchburg Cooler, 453

Soused Swordfish, 233

White Pizza with Vegetable Confetti, 305

Whitefish Salad, North Woods, 291

Whitefish Salad Platter, North Woods (var.), 291

Whitworth, PJ, 122, 123

Whitworth, Wayne, 97, 122, 123, 337, 375

Wild Huckleberry Pie with Coconut Crumble, 424

Wild Mushroom Calzone, 308

Wild Willy's Number One-derful Rub, 26

Wild Wings, 333–34

Wildly Stuffed Turkey Breast, 194–95

Williams, Thomas J. "Bozo," 436

Willoughby, John, 416, 417

Wilson, Pat, 282

Wine

Cham-gria, 459

Mango-Lime Spritzer, 460

in marinades, 41

Red, Marinade, 41

-Sopped Venison Scallops, 163–64

wire brushes, 17, 269

wood chunks and chips

alder wood, 20, 212, 286

apple wood, 20, 73

buying and using, 13–14

cherry wood, 20

for covered grills, 244

flavoring chart, 20

hickory wood, 20

maple wood, 20

mesquite wood, 20, 286

oak wood, 20, 123

pecan wood, 20, 286

wood-burning pits. *See* log-burning pits

World Championship Barbecue Goat Cook-Off (Brady, TX), 155

Worth-the-Wait Turkey, 190–91

Wysor, John, 250

Y

Yankee Shooter, 455

Yucatecan Pork Tenderloin (var.), 80

Yucatecan Seasoning Paste, 37

Z

zatar, about, 152

Zucchini

Smoldering Vegetable Antipasto Platter, 283–84

Zooks and Cilantro Sauce, 271

Zydeco Shrimp Remoulade (var.), 239

To spice things up even more, the Jamisons offer plenty of stories of barbecue legends and pit-side antics. Find out how hot tamales became a barbecue side dish in Mississippi who fries dill pickles to accompany 'Q,' which barbecue joints have been favored by presidents and the story behind Wayne's Wonderful \$50 Beans.

In *Smoke & Spice* Cheryl and Bill Jamison celebrate a true American folk art and remind us that, like love, barbecue is a many-splendored thing.

Cheryl and Bill Jamison are the nation's most respected authorities on regional American cooking. They are the authors of 15 cookbooks and travel guides, including *A Real American Breakfast*, *American Home Cooking* (winner of a James Beard Book Award and an IACP Cookbook Award), *Born to Grill* (winner of a Food & Wine Best of the Best Award), *Sublime Smoke*, *The Border Cookbook* (winner of a James Beard Book Award), and *Texas Home Cooking*. The first edition of *Smoke & Spice* won a James Beard Book Award. The Jamisons live in Santa Fe, New Mexico.

Jacket design by Night & Day Design

Jacket photograph © Food Image Source/Peter Harasty

Author photographs on front jacket by Kitty Leaken

The Harvard Common Press

535 Albany Street

Boston, Massachusetts 02118

www.harvardcommonpress.com

Distributed by National Book Network

4720 Boston Way

Lanham, Maryland 20706

Smoke & Spice revolutionized backyard home cooking,
and now it's even bigger and better than before!

"Look up *barbecue* in the dictionary,
and you're sure to find a picture of the
Jamisons."

—*Bon Appétit*

"Stimulating...the Jamisons don't
just cook these dishes; they know every-
thing about them."

—*New York Times Book Review*

"Cheryl and Bill Jamison—indefatigable
investigators, talented cooks, and
unswerving *aficionados*."

—Rick Bayless,
author of *Mexico One Plate at a Time*

"I know, from experience, that their food
tastes *exuberant*."

—Deborah Madison, author of *Local
Flavors: Cooking and Eating from
America's Farmers' Markets*

"Bill and Cheryl Jamison, *masters* of
the art of outdoor cooking."

—William Rice, food and wine
columnist for the *Chicago Tribune* and
author of *The Steak Lover's Cookbook*

"The Jamisons, once again, are
sssmokin'!"

—Michael McLaughlin,
author of *The Southwestern Grill*

"When the Jamisons light their fires,
mouths all around America will be
salivating for smoke, spice, and
everything nice."

—Bobby Flay, author of *Bobby Flay
Cooks American* and chef/owner of
Mesa Grill and Bolo

"It's impossible to thumb through *Smoke
& Spice* without salivating and dreaming
about 'cue. This edition will have a
permanent place on my bookshelf,
both at home and at work."

—Danny Meyer, co-owner of
Blue Smoke and Union Square Café

"*Smoke & Spice* is a real ode to barbecue.
It's a *great* addition to any barbecue
lover's bookshelf!"

—Al Roker, author of *Al Roker's Big Bad
Book of Barbecue* and *Today*
show weatherman

